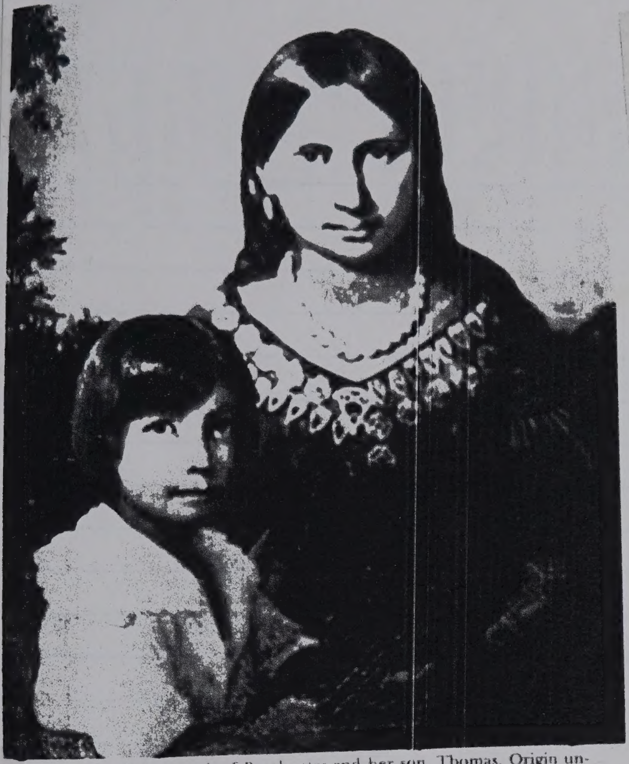
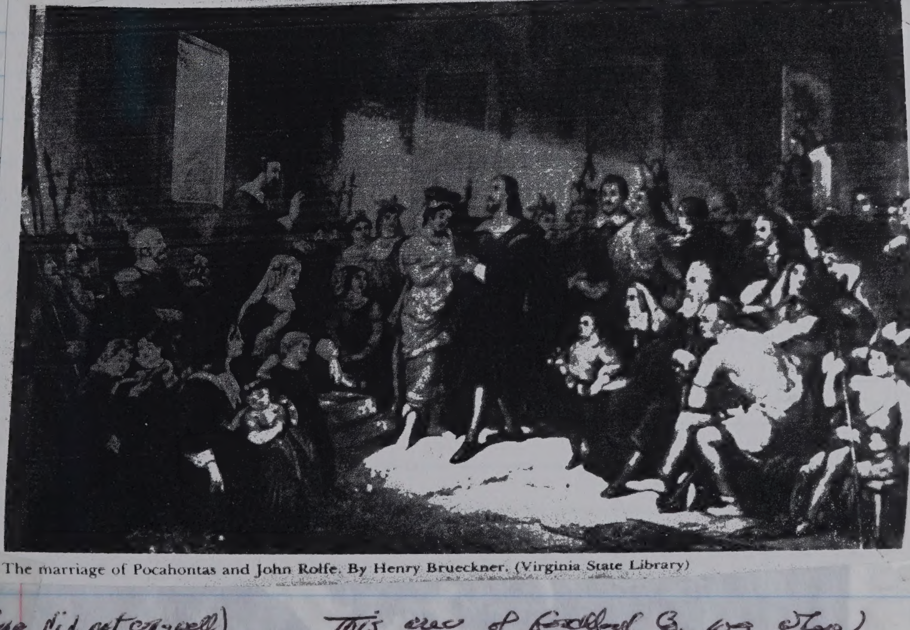


The Sedgeford Hall portrait of Pocahontas and her son, Thomas. Origin unknown. (Virginia State Library)



The marriage of Pocahontas and John Rolfe. By Henry Brueckner. (Virginia State Library)

(The machine did not copy well)   This area of Goochland Co. was where) Pocahontas grew up - the Bolling family grandchildren were very prominent & mentioned often in the land patent records.

F 232 G 65 688

GOOCHLAND COUNTY

This section on land patents in Goochland County covers a period of increased settlement in the James River Valley. The large number of patents in the years before 1745 cover the entire region. Goochland lost most of its territory after January 1, 1744/45 when Albemarle County was formed and again after May 20, 1749 when Cumberland County's creation reduced Goochland essentially to its present size. The number of patents for Goochland, therefore, naturally decreases after these losses of territory. There were several, small boundary adjustments in later years.

The abstracts on the following pages begin with Patent Book 16 in 1735. Goochland was formed, of course, from Henrico County on May 1, 1728, and there were many patents issued in the territory of Goochland while it was still a part of Henrico. After the erection of the new county, the number of patents continued to be large. Published abstracts of these patents are, fortunately, readily available in several sources:

Nell M. Nugent. *Cavaliers and Pioneers: Abstracts of Virginia Land Patents and Grants (1623-1732).* 3 volumes. Richmond: Virginia State Library, 1934, 1977, 1979.

Dennis Ray Hudgins, editor. *Cavaliers and Pioneers: Abstracts of Virginia Land Patents and Grants, Volume Four (1732-1741), Volume Five (1741-1749), Volume Six (1749-1762), and Volume Seven (1762-1774).* Richmond: Virginia Genealogical Society, 1994-1999. [Previously serialized in The Magazine of Virginia Genealogy.

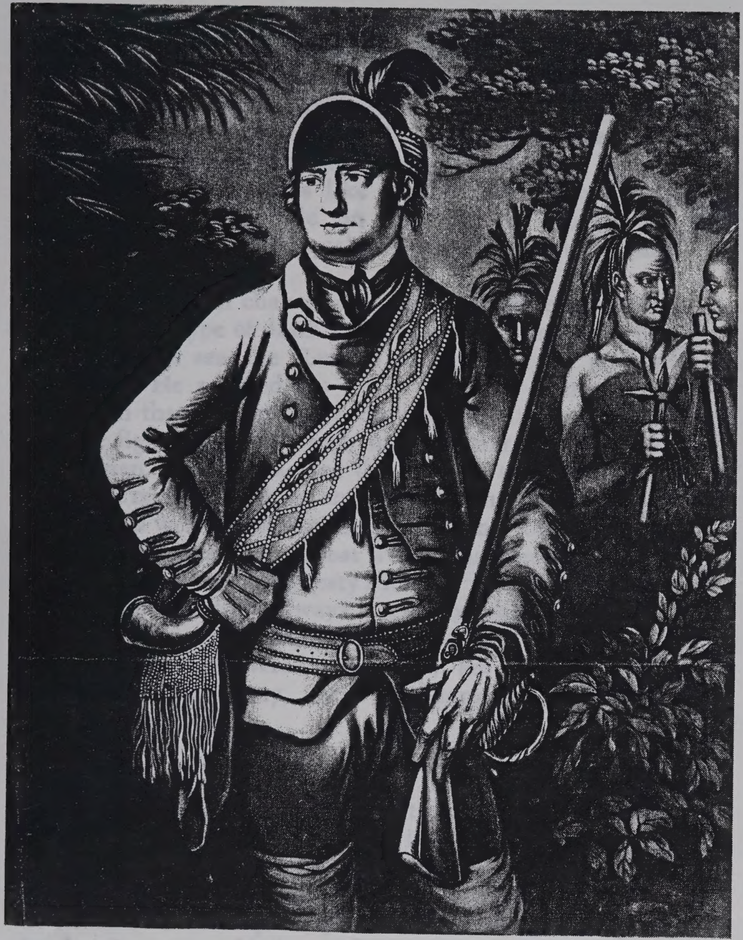
Louise Pledge Heath Foley. *Early Virginia Families Along the James River: Their Deep Roots and Tangled Branches*: Henrico County - Goochland Country, Virginia. Richmond, 1974; reprint, Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Company, 1979, 1983. This book is a digest of the patents for the two counties mentioned taken with permission directly from Nugent's then unpublished abstracts for volumes 2 and 3 of *Cavaliers and Pioneers* and the published ones in volume 2. It is very useful for researchers concentrating on the central James River Valley because it brings together the patents for the eastern areas in one volume.

Researchers will find detailed maps of the formation of the counties of Central Virginia in:

Eric G. Grundset. *Historical Boundary Atlas of Central Virginia.* Fairfax, Va.: Blue Ridge Bay Books, 1999

In all, Goochland covered all or portions of the modern counties of Goodland, Powhatan, Cumberland, Fluvanna, Albemarle, Buckingham, Amherst, Nelson, and Appomattox, and the independent city of Charlottesville. A small strip of present northern Campbell and Bedford counties including the independent city of Lynchburg was also in Goochland's territory. Uncertain boundaries with the counties to the south during the years before the 1730s may also mean confusion in locating certain patents in the areas of the modern counties of Appomattox, Campbell, and Bedford.

The land patents are, of course, the first step in the distribution of land from the crown to an individual (or individuals). Subsequent transfers of land are in the county court records. Goochland's deeds and other records are largely intact. Researchers may borrow microfilm of these from the Library of Virginia on inter-library loan through their local public library or through the LDS Family History Library's system of Family History Centers. In addition, the late Dr. Benjamin B. Weisiger III of Richmond published *Goochland County, Virginia Wills and Deeds 1728-1736; Goochland County, Virginia Wills and Deeds 1736-1742,* and *Goochland County, Virginia Wills and Deeds 1742-1749.* These volumes along with his abstracts of earlier Henrico County records provide quick reference to activites dealing with lands subsequent to the patents. Another recent publication is *Goochland County, Virginia Deeds 1741-1745.* Miami : TLC Genealogy, 1990.


MAJOR ROBERT ROGERS,
Commander in Chief of the INDIANS in the Back Settlements of AMERICA

Major Robert Rogers. *Fort Ticonderoga Museum.*

Chapter Sixteen

HIS MAJESTY'S INDEPENDENT COMPANY OF RANGERS

Probably no single military organization has received more attention than His Majesty's Independent Company of Rangers, better known as Rogers' Rangers. This group of men has, over the years, inspired books, short stories, a television series, movies, plays, reenactment groups and during World War II the resurrection of the unit under the name "Darby's Rangers" and later the Rangers of the U. S. Army. Their exploits are known throughout the modern world. Indeed it would be safe to say that every elite fighting force in the modern world can point to Rogers' Rangers as their ancestor unit.

The Rangers were the basis of the "Explorer" program of the Boy Scouts of America and Robert Rogers' exploits formed the basis for James Fenimore Cooper's *Leatherstocking Tales.* John R. Cuneo in his book, *Robert Rogers of the Rangers* did an outstanding job of detailing Rogers' life. Kenneth Roberts in his book, *Northwest Passage,* provided us with a semi-fictional account of Rogers' raid on the Abenaki Village of St. Francis, Canada. For those of us who have seen the movie, Spencer Tracy will forever by Robert Rogers. In truth, what few paintings are available of Rogers, show a marked resemblance between the two men.

The Rangers evolved from what were called scouting companies. The companies varied in size, but usually never exceeded 50 members serving under a designated captain. Their function was what the name implied. Eventually, they would become known as Ranging companies and from

that simply Rangers. They had no designated uniform and usually wore homespun or deerskin clothing or a combination thereof. They carried a firelock, hatchet, knife and the officers a compass. Their pack was a rolled blanket and sometimes a bearskin. They were all volunteers and were, with rare exception, expert shots and could live off the land, read trail signs like others read a book, were extremely knowledgeable in the art of cover and concealment and had no qualms about fighting the Indian on his own terms.

They knew their chances and knew if captured faced the most horrible type of death the Indian could devise. Robert Rogers would see the Rangers brought to the peak of perfection. He selected his initial company commanders from men that he personally knew from a lifetime on the frontier fighting Hurons and, in particular, the Abenaki. These men, in turn, selected the men for their companies from the men they knew and trusted. The junior officers and NCO's were elected by the men in the companies and the result was one of the most well-disciplined and highly-motivated units in His Majesty's forces.

Ranger tactics have always been very simple and direct. To put them in the simplest form possible; get in quietly without being discovered, do the job, get out fast and, if engaged by the enemy, use a predetermined cutout and meeting place.

The Rangers had an all-Indian detachment of Stockbridge Mohigans. Rogers trusted them implicitly as they had taught him the skills that made him so successful. The leaders were Checkaunkum and his son Naunauptaunk, better known as Captain Jacobs The Elder and Captain Jacobs. Cooper would change their names to Chingachgook and Uncas. There was, in reality, an Uncas, but he was a Pequot born in 1588. The real Uncas was trouble for both Indian and English alike. He was brother-in-law to Sassacus, the great Sachem of the Pequot. He sold out the Pequot and lived out his life with the Mohawks, dying in 1683. In real

life Captain Jacobs The Elder lived to a fairly advanced age and Naunauptaunk was captured by the Huron and killed.

The Rangers were highly regarded by the regular army and militia, but from something of a stand-off distance. At Fort Edward, their quarters were on an island on the Hudson, which is now known as Ranger or Rogers Island. At Fort William Henry, they had their own picquetted camp to the west of the fort proper. They would, as history has shown, have to fight two withdrawal actions from that camp and by the time the second was over, they were less than happy campers.

Lieutenant Colonel Gage of the 80th Light Infantry would have his unit trained in Ranger tactics, but never gaining the assignments or recognition that the Rangers did, he would become Rogers' nemesis for the rest of Rogers' life, trying both successfully and unsuccessfully to besmirch Rogers in any form he could.

A great many regular army types would volunteer for the Rangers, giving up the red uniform for deerskin or homespun and later the forest green uniform of the Rangers.

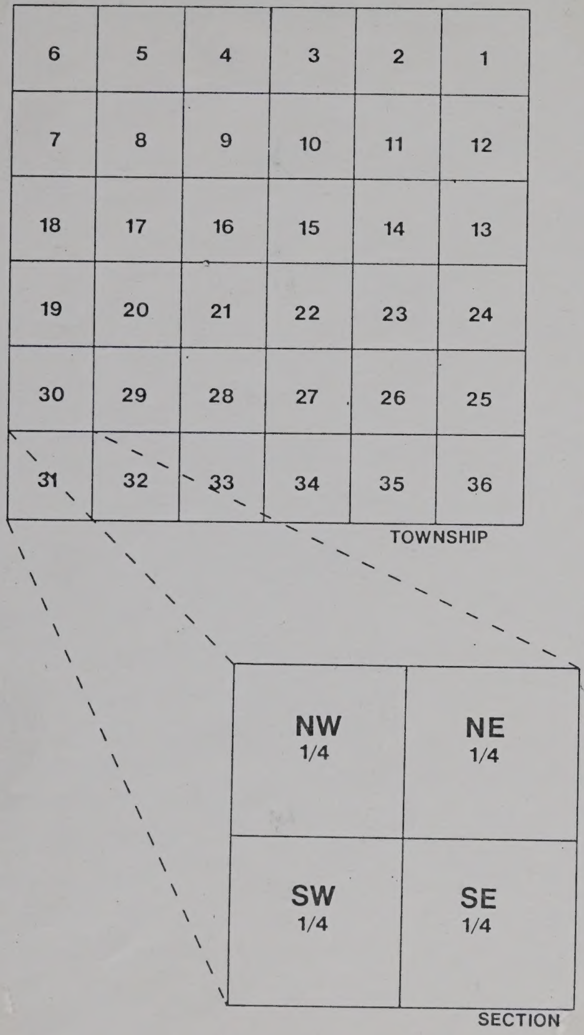
There were changes in personnel due to death and wounds, and end of enlistment. Many names do not show on the various rosters I have seen. Three names that did not appear as enlisted were Sergeant Caleb Dodge, and Privates Josiah and Jonathan Dodge. Three officers show up only in after-action reports or dispatches. One of them, Captain McGinnis; is truly a mystery as it is not known if he was a captain from the Hampshire militia or, as alleged by Kenneth Roberts, an officer from the regular army. Captain Jacob Abbott was militia and Captain William Symer was probably militia.

The Rangers saw action where they were needed. Their primary locale was around Lakes George and Champlain

White Family Wite Famil Whit Famil

xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx
XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXShita.XXanukt
White Family,,,,,White Family. white Family. White White White
xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxWhite Family,White Family. WHITE
White White. White White Family

cccccccxxxxxxxx xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxWhiWhitenFamily.xWhitexFamilyxxxxxx
White Familyxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx
xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx



War of 1812 Bounty Land in IL

977.3 W253

THE ILLINOIS MILITARY TRACT

Over two million acres were reserved to be given as bounty land grants to the veterans of the War of 1812 in the Illinois Military Tract. After the Michigan Tract was found to be unsuitable for settlement, the Illinois Tract was increased to 3,500,000 acres.

Though the Act of 1812 set aside the Illinois Military Tract, money to pay for surveying was not provided until 1815. The surveyors were to divide the land into townships, sections and quarter-sections. Only land fit for cultivation was to be designated for bounty lands. Salt springs, lead mines and Section 16 of each township were to be reserved for government use.

The surveyors immediately ran into problems with the Potawatomi Indians. They claimed part of the tract as their hunting grounds, charging that the U.S. Treaty of 1804 with the Sac and Fox tribes was invalid. It was necessary to send soldiers from St. Louis to protect the few surveyors who would venture in the Military Tract. A treaty was finally agreed to with the Potawatomi tribe on August 24, 1816, in which they transferred to the United States the land lying south of a line running from the southern tip of Lake Michigan due west to the Mississippi River.

Enough land had been surveyed by 1817 for the government to start issuing patents. This book contains the 17,000 patents issued between October 1817, and January 1819, for over 2,800,000 acres of land in the Illinois Military Tract.

Probably few of the veterans actually settled on their land in the military tract. For the most part the titles passed into hands of Eastern speculators. By 1818 five settlements had been located in the southern half of Calhoun County, but it is doubtful whether these settlers had secured title to their holdings. The election returns for 1824 show only 179 votes cast for two-thirds of the military tract. By 1830 only 13,000 people were living in the tract, much less than the 17,000 soldiers who had received the patents.

The dreams of land speculators to make a killing in the bounty lands was not to come true. When Illinois became a state in 1818, the taxing provisions included:

1) Land purchased from the government was not to be taxed for five years. If the land was purchased under the credit system, the five-year period did not begin until the full payment had been made.

2) The bounty lands were not taxable for three years while held by the patentee. When the speculator purchased the land from the veteran, the land became taxable from the date of transfer.

The tax laws made the government land a more attractive purchase lowering the price of the bounty lands.

Confusion about the tax laws and distance of the owners from their property caused much of the land to become tax delinquent. Nine thousand quarter-sections of land was advertised for sale in 1823 because of nonpayment of taxes. This was almost half of the original 17,000 patents issued.

The quick profits hoped by the speculators turned into losses. The soldiers selling their holdings before 1825 average $100.00 per quarter-section. From 1827 to 1833 the average price of a quarter-section was only $50.00.

The pioneers wishing to settle in the military tract had difficulty in securing title to the land. If he purchased land under a tax title, he feared that someone with a better title might claim the land. He didn't know which land had been taken as bounty land and which was available for sale from the government at the Quincy Land Office.

Up to 1830 settlers only trickled into the Military Tract. After 1830 migration into the tract boomed. The population increased over 600 percent between 1830 and 1840 to about 100,000 people, or 20 percent of the total population of the state.

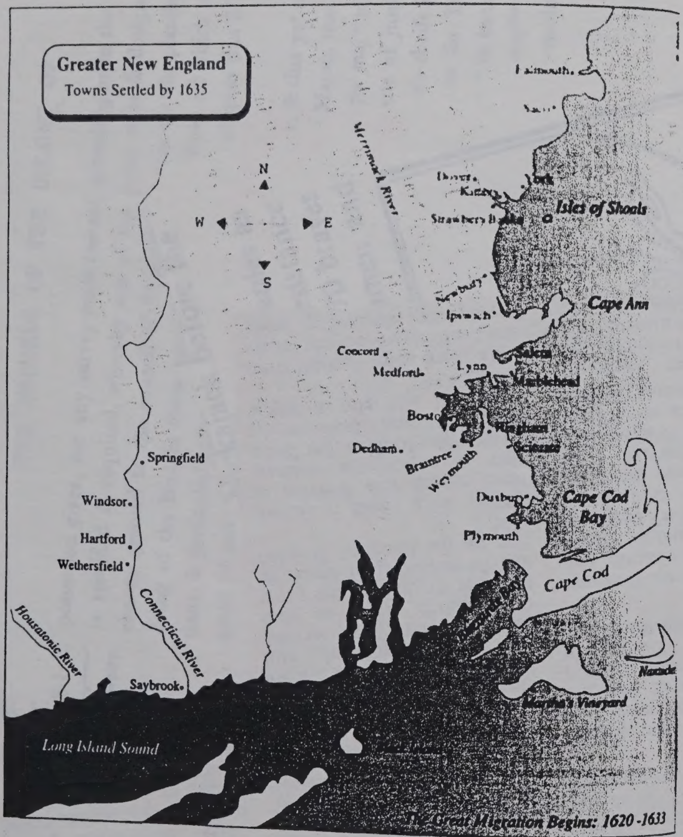
RESEARCH STEPS

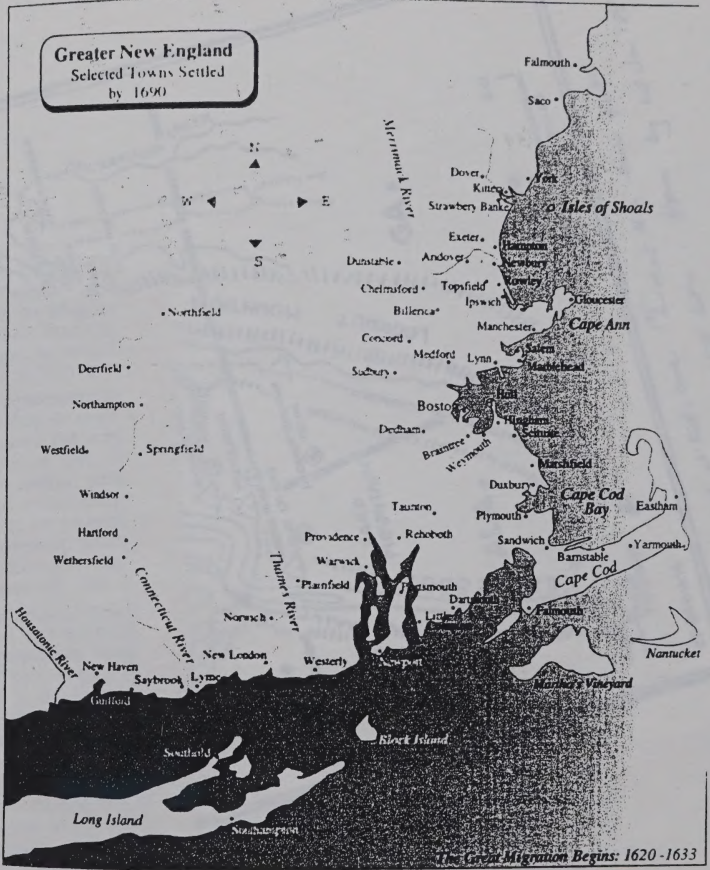
A. Write the National Archives

Using Form GSA Form 6751, Order for Copies of Veterans Records, send to the National Archives for the veteran's military record, bounty land warrant application, and possible a pension record. See pages iii-ix for detailed information.

B. Locate the Veteran's Land in Illinois

By using the following maps and the Description of Tract column in this book, it is possible to pinpoint the location of a veteran's bounty land claim. The first map shows the Illinois Military Tract with the present counties. The small squares show each six-mile square township. On the second map is an enlarged township showing the section lines and the section numbers. Each one-mile square section is shown in the lower right hand corner with the quarter-sections marked.


Greater New England
Towns Settled by 1635
N
W
E
S
Merrimack River
Falmouth
Saco
Dover
York
Kittery
Strawbery Banke
Isles of Shoals
Newbury
Ipswich
Cape Ann
Concord
Medford
Lynn
Salem
Marblehead
Boston
Hingham
Scituate
Dedham
Braintree
Weymouth
Duxbury
Cape Cod Bay
Plymouth
Springfield
Windsor
Hartford
Wethersfield
Connecticut River
Housatonic River
Saybrook
Cape Cod
Narragansett Bay
Martha's Vineyard
Nantucket
Long Island Sound
The Great Migration Begins: 1620 -1633


Greater New England
Selected Towns Settled
by 1690
N
W
E
S
Merrimack River
Falmouth
Saco
Dover
York
Kittery
Strawbery Banke
Isles of Shoals
Exeter
Hampton
Andover
Newbury
Dunstable
Rowley
Chelmsford
Topsfield
Ipswich
Gloucester
Billerica
Northfield
Manchester
Cape Ann
Concord
Salem
Medford
Lynn
Marblehead
Deerfield
Sudbury
Hull
Boston
Northampton
Hingham
Dedham
Scituate
Westfield
Springfield
Braintree
Weymouth
Marshfield
Duxbury
Windsor
Taunton
Cape Cod Bay
Plymouth
Eastham
Hartford
Providence
Rehoboth
Sandwich
Yarmouth
Wethersfield
Warwick
Barnstable
Thames River
Plainfield
Portsmouth
Cape Cod
Connecticut River
Dartmouth
Norwich
Little Compton
Falmouth
Housatonic River
New London
Westerly
Newport
Nantucket
New Haven
Saybrook
Lyme
Martha's Vineyard
Guilford
Block Island
Southold
Long Island
Southampton
The Great Migration Begins: 1620 -1633

force was able to cross the River by daybreak. The leaders decided to march against Nickajack before the Indians could learn of their nearness.

The element of complete surprise was aided by a foggy atmosphere which hid the three companies as they maneuvered around the log cabins to their positions. The bewildered warriors offered little resistance as the companies charged from all sides. Some tried to escape to the river, but were shot down. 70 braves were killed as the attack became a massacre. Chief Breath was among the casualties. 20 women and children were taken captive to be used as hostages in a prisoner exchange.

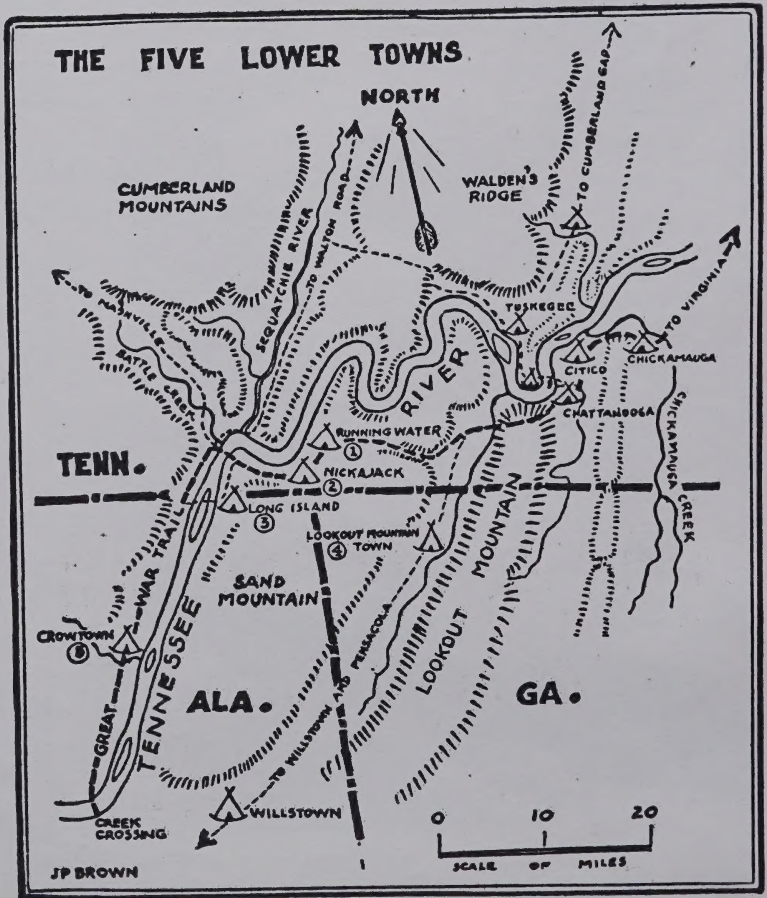
The Town of Nickajack was completely destroyed by fire. Major Ore immediately marched his men toward Running Water three miles away. Encoute, they met a force of braves coming to the aid of their brothers at Nickajack. A short, desperate struggle took place at the Narrows. The Indians, unable to compete with the mounted riflemen fled into the hills. They did not inflict much damage on the white force, but delayed it long enough for their women and children to escape into the forest. The Running Water Town was also burned to the ground.

See Pg 100 pub. ETn Hx Soc Vol 11 (Book) "J Hartsell Memoir"

chief John Ross was at town South of Chattanooga River,

Having accomplished this mission, Major Ore led his men back across the River to rejoin their comrades. The return march was begun immediately. Before reaching Nashville they met a friendly band of Chickasaws who told them about General Wayne's victory in the Northwest. The trip to Nickajack and return took ten days. Joshua Thomas was the only casualty.

This depicts the area (in GA?) where Captain Hartsell's Company, including our part [illegible] Vest fought enemy Indians in the War of 1812.


THE FIVE LOWER TOWNS
NORTH
CUMBERLAND MOUNTAINS
WALDEN'S RIDGE
TO CUMBERLAND GAP
TO WALTON ROAD
SEQUATCHIE RIVER
TO NASHVILLE
BATTLE CREEK
TUSKEGEE
TO VIRGINIA
CITICO
CHICKAMAUGA
RIVER
CHATTANOOGA
RUNNING WATER ①
NICKAJACK ②
LONG ISLAND ③
LOOKOUT MOUNTAIN TOWN ④
CROWTOWN ⑤
TENN.
GREAT WAR TRAIL
TENNESSEE
SAND MOUNTAIN
TO WILLSTOWN AND PENSACOLA
LOOKOUT MOUNTAIN
CHICKAMAUGA CREEK
ALA.
GA.
CREEK CROSSING
WILLSTOWN
0 10 20
SCALE OF MILES
JP BROWN

Jan 18th on the way home Tues 11th at Will's Creek 12th Lookout Mtn lower part
Thurs Jan 20 crossed TN River. Home by 28 Jan 1814

Vest

Vest

Copper bits link Indian village to Jamestown

Associated Press

Yorktown, Va. — Tiny squares of copper excavated from a trash heap link a 17th-century Indian village and the historic Jamestown settlement and offer rare insight into how the English colonists survived, researchers said recently.

The two pieces, each smaller than a fingertip, were the same kind of copper that the colonists used to trade for food with the Indians who lived in Kiskiak and prized the metal, researchers said.

The discovery at Yorktown Naval Weapons Station confirms the suspected location of Kiskiak on the York River and illuminates the critical role that copper — and the village — had in the survival of the first permanent English settlement in America, according to archaeologist Dennis Blanton.

Archaeologists were surprised to find the copper, said Blanton, former director of the College of William and Mary Center for Archaeological Research.

The copper was found by William and Mary archaeologists examining Indian sites on the military station.

"Tangible links to Jamestown had been a rare occurrence on Indian sites," said Blanton, now head of archaeology at Virginia's Shirley Plantation.

"Copper is especially rare in the general debris."

Copper was scarce before the English arrived, and "some scholars have written that English copper is what kept the English in the game and forestalled their annihilation by the Indians," Blanton said.

Capt. John Smith of Jamestown, which was founded in 1607 as a business venture, wrote of the Indians that "for a coper kettle and a few toyes . . . they will sell you a whole Country."

As more ships arrived from England, they brought more copper and stepped-up trade diminished its value, scholars have said.

As a result, the Indians demanded other goods with a greater value, such as weapons, in exchange for corn and security.

The devaluation of copper explains why pieces would be found in a trash pit among broken pottery and other debris, Blanton said.

pennies — but nobody will cash him out without charging a premium.

"I've been working seriously for the past two weeks to get rid of these pennies," said England, 60, a Paramount Studios, Hollywood, projectionist about to retire with his wife to a country spread in Oregon.

"It's kind of frustrating. Nobody will take them without charging me."

The U.S. Office of the Comptroller of the Currency doesn't want them.

> **Nobody will take them without charging me."**
>
> **Ron England**, on his $10,000 worth of pennies

worth branch will take 200 rolls, or $100 per week. That's 20 months of deposits.

"This is a very rare case," said Tim McGarry, spokesman for Washington Mutual. "Some of the practicalities are daunting — 3.6 tons is more than most vaults can handle."

Hauling pennies

England is undeterred.

"I'm stubborn," he said. "I refuse to pay money to turn them in. If I have to haul all these pennies to Oregon, I will, 'cause I'm not gonna pay."

It was in March 1974 that Ron England and his brother, Russ, fell into debate about the

early July 1994

• Free Pickup
Tax Write-Off "Fair market value" per IRS
e Handle Paperwork
ing or Not (Restrictions apply)

He rolled pennies at work between rolling films.

The coins rolled in. Friends fed him pennies. Relatives tossed him Lincoln heads.

Toward the end of the 1970s, when England sported a Fu Manchu mustache, purple platforms and a buffalo duster, he was buying $250 in coppers a week for his collection.

$11,000 in coppers

Finally, in March 1979, he was done. In all, he'd collected $11,000 in 95%-copper coins, including 6,002 rolls of 1977Ds.

Friends suggested that he melt them into the world's biggest BB. England considered a 3.6-ton coffin with his enemies as pallbearers. Or, if the price was right, melting them for scrap.

And the bet?

He never collected his Parisian meal.

"I don't remember making the wager," said Russ England, 55. "Am I still good for it? I'm not going to answer that question."

Pennies: They're a nuisance, said the collector, who'd like to buy a John Deere tractor with his money.

"I did enjoy proving my

1681-2. 16 February. possession given, nor any survey made thereof, according as in the sajd grant is specified & required, whereby one of the great ends & designes of the charter granted to the council of Pljmouth, w^{ch} was for the planting & subduing of the land in these parts, is evaccuated. Vpon all which considerations, & particularly that of the nonvses, wee humbly suppose that M^{r} Masons grant (if any) is forfeited, & his title voyd in law.

Wherefore, wee humbly implore your maj^{tjes} favour, & that yo^{r} maj^{tje} uill gratiously please to interpose yo^{r} royall authority wth M^{r} Mason, that he may cease to molest & disturbe vs in our lawfull rights, or that yo^{r} maj^{ty} uill direct the sajd M^{r} Mason to make his clajme in yo^{r} maj^{tjes} Courts of justice here established, according to the judgment (in that case) of the lords cheife justices, approoved by the right honno^{r}ble the lords of the Com̃ittee for Trade & Forreigne Plantations, and confirmed by yo^{r} sacred *sacred* maj^{tje} in council, on the 20th day of July, 1677, while the former agents of y^{s} your maj^{tjes} colony were attending your royall pleasure in the affaires then vnder consideration. & your humble supplyants shall euer pray, &c̃.

Signd & subscribed by

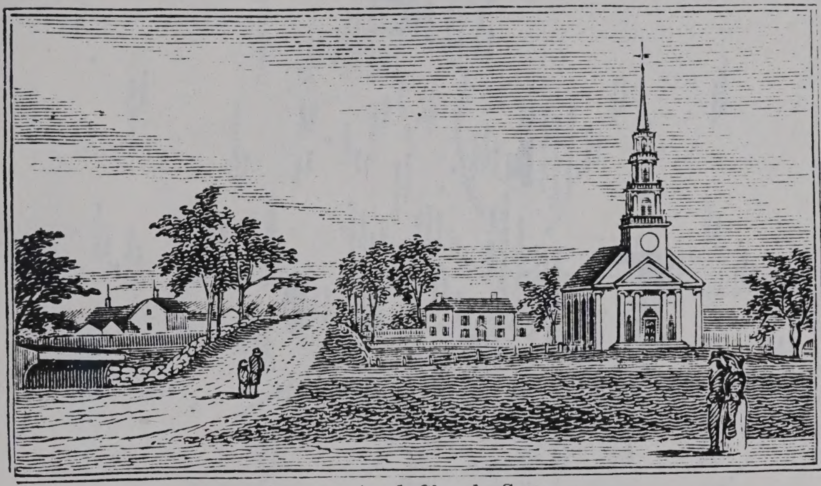
JN^{O} PICKARD,
JN^{O} PERKINS,
DANI: EPPS,
JONATH: WADE, Señ,
WILLJAM GOODHUE,
SAMUEL ROGERS,
SYMON STACJE,
THO: KNOULTON,
CALEB MOODY,
THO: FISKE,
PHILLIP NELSON,
THO: BURNAM,
EZEK: NORTHEN,
DANI: WARNER,
TRISTRAM COFFYN,
JOSEPH PIKE,
JN^{O} PLUMER,
THO: FISKE,
THO: PATCH,
WILLJAM COGSWELL,
WALTER FAIREFEILD,
MOSES PENGREY, Señ,
HENRY SEWALL,

DANIEL PEARCE,
SAMUEL CORNING,
GEORG RAYMENT,
WILLJAM DODGE,
NICHO: NOYCE,
RICHARD DUMER,
SAMUEL PLATTS,
JN^{O} WHIPLE,
JAMES STEEPHENS,
WILLJAM SERJANT,
WILLJAM HASKALL,
THOMAS MILLET,
JOHN HILL,
THOMAS RIGGS,
SAMUEL APLETON,
THO: COBBET, Señ,
JN^{O} WOODBRIDGE,
WILLJAM HUBBARD,
JOHN ROGERS,
JN^{O} HALE,
JN^{O} APLETON,
HENRY WALKER.

SUTTON.

This town was originally purchased by a number of persons of John Wampus, a sachem, and his company of Indians, who claimed it, and was confirmed to the purchasers by the general court in 1704. It was formed into a township and called Sutton by an act of the legislature in 1715. The settling of the town was retarded for some time by reason of the wars with the Indians.

In the year 1716, three families were seated in the place, and spent the succeeding winter there, which was that of the great snow. This snow fell on some of the last days of February, (O. S.) and came so deep that it wholly covered over the hut in which one of the families lived. The man being from home, the family would probably have suffered much, had not an Indian, who knew the circumstances, come to their relief. He found the cottage only by the hole which the smoke from the fireplace had made through the snow. In September, 1717, the first child was born in the town, named Abigail Marsh, daughter of Mr. Benjamin Marsh.



Congregational Church, Sutton.

The above is a western view of the Congregational church in Sutton, which is situated on an elevated hill, commanding an extensive prospect in various directions. At present there are but few houses in the immediate vicinity of the church.

This is a pleasant town, and extensively engaged in manufacturing. It is watered by the Blackstone river, and the Blackstone canal passes on the northern border. The township is generally hilly, though of good soil. It contains soap-stone, and excellent granite for building. In the town are 2 Congregational meeting-houses, 2 Baptist, and 1 Episcopal. Population, 2,457. Distance, 10 miles from Worcester, and 44 from Boston. Wilkinsonville, a small manufacturing village, containing an Episcopal church, is on Blackstone river, on the northern border of the town. In 1837 there were in the limits of the town 4 cotton mills, 7,356 spindles; 1,301,727 yards of cotton goods were manufactured; value, $125,572; males employed, 94; females, 100; 2 woollen mills, 4 sets of machinery; 82,000 yards of cloth were manufactured; value, $110,000; males employed, 40; females, 24. There were 2,000 dozen of shuttles manufactured; value, $10,000; hands em-

Dodge/Tuttle/Townes here + Waters/Rea

This town was originally purchased by a number of persons of John Wampus, a sachem, and his company of Indians, who claimed it, and was confirmed to the purchasers by the general court in 1704. It was formed into a township and called Sutton by an act of the legislature in 1715. The settling of the town was retarded for some time by reason of the wars with the Indians.

In the year 1716, three families were seated in the place, and spent the succeeding winter there, which was that of the great snow. This snow fell on some of the last days of February, (O. S.) and came so deep that it wholly covered over the hut in which one of the families lived. The man being from home, the family would probably have suffered much, had not an Indian, who knew the circumstances, come to their relief. He found the cottage only by the hole which the smoke from the fire-place had made through the snow. In September, 1717, the first child was born in the town, named Abigail Marsh, daughter of Mr. Benjamin Marsh.

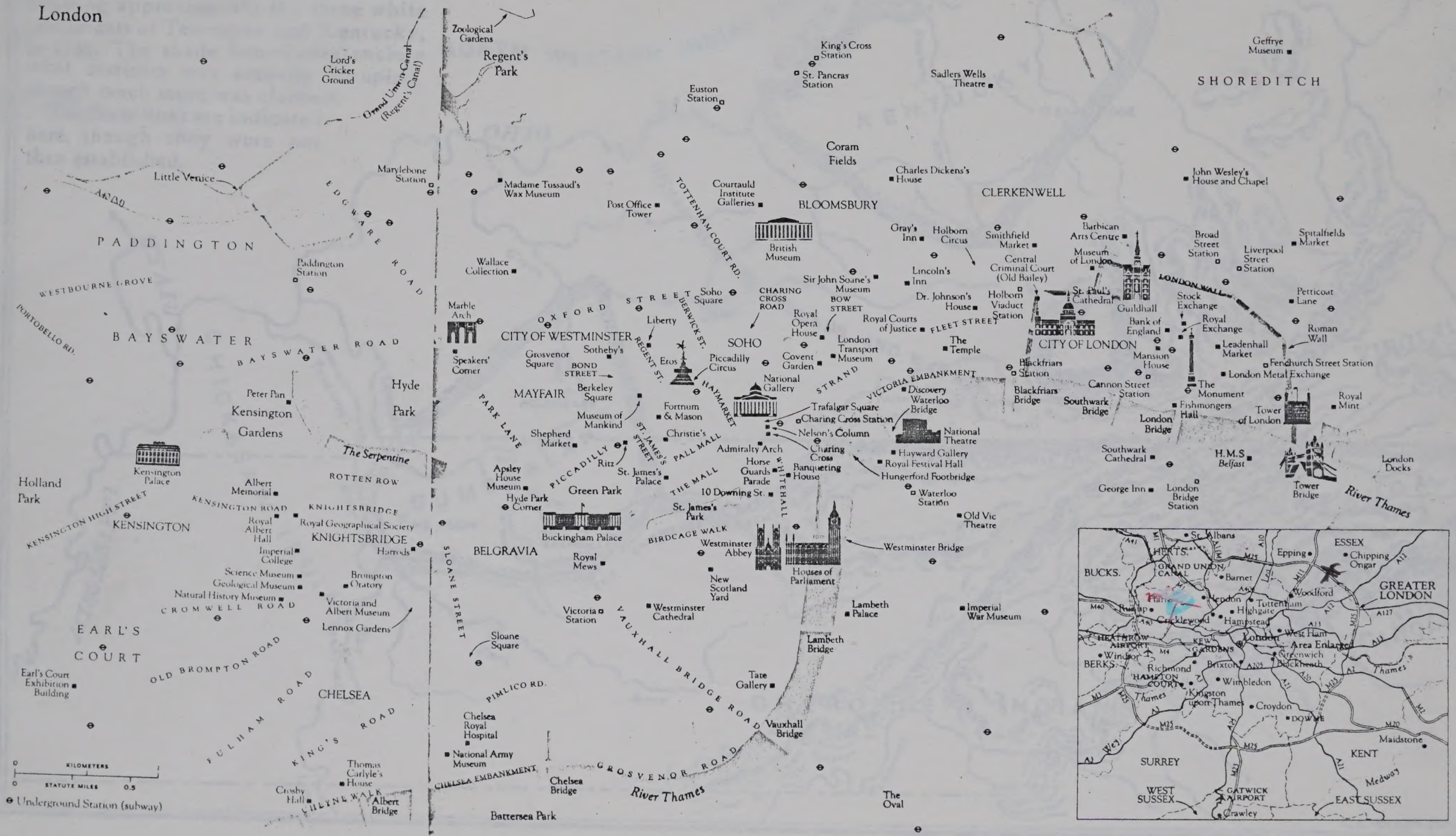
Congregational Church, Sutton.

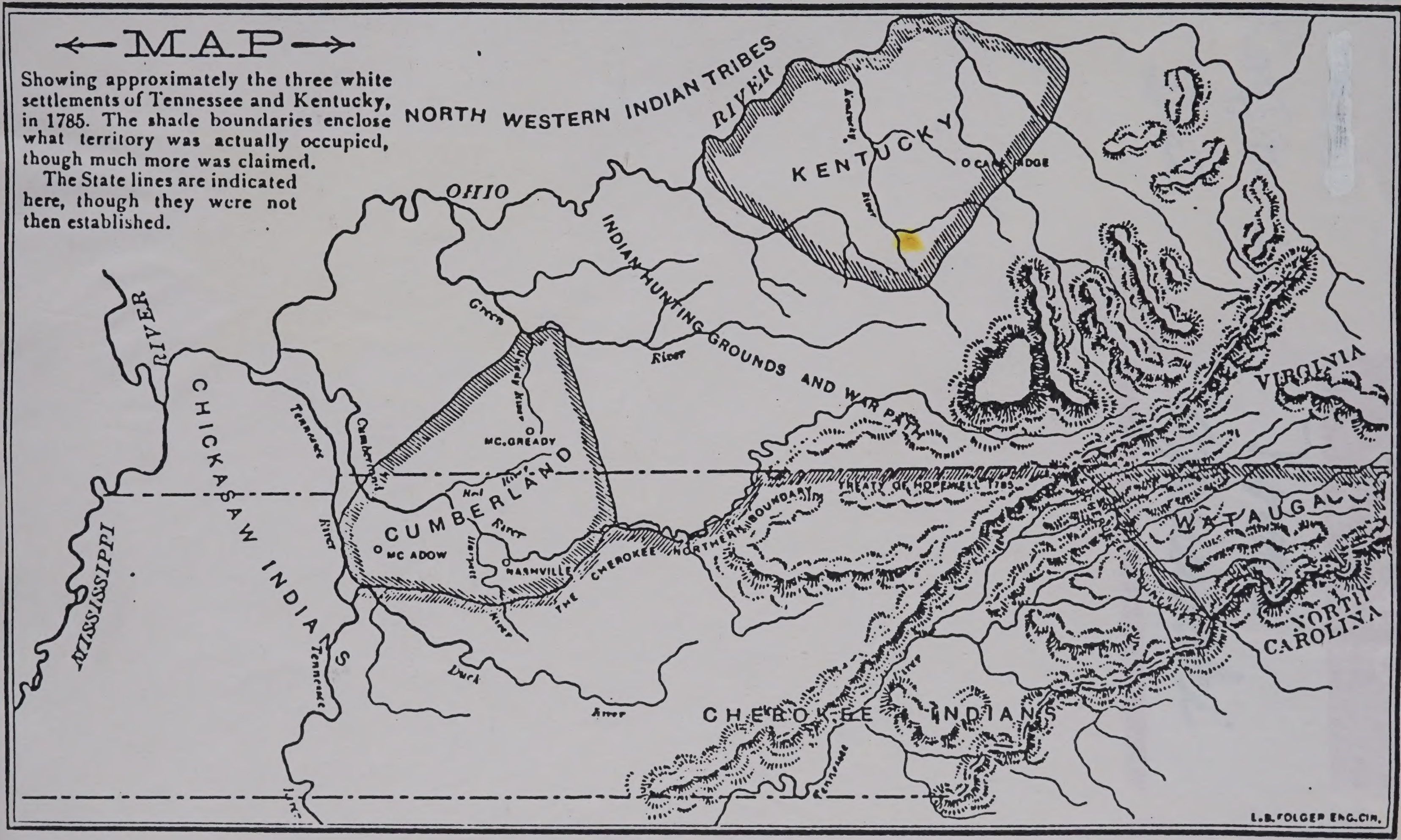
The above is a western view of the Congregational church in Sutton, which is situated on an elevated hill, commanding an extensive prospect in various directions. At present there are but few houses in the immediate vicinity of the church.

This is a pleasant town, and extensively engaged in manufacturing. It is watered by the Blackstone river, and the Blackstone canal passes on the northern border. The township is generally hilly, though of good soil. It contains soap-stone, and excellent granite for building. In the town are 2 Congregational meeting-houses, 2 Baptist, and 1 Episcopal. Population, 2,457. Distance, 10 miles from Worcester, and 44 from Boston. Wilkinsonville, a small manufacturing village, containing an Episcopal church, is on Blackstone river, on the northern border of the town. In 1837 there were in the limits of the town 4 cotton mills, 7,356 spindles; 1,201,787 yards of cotton goods were manufactured; value, $105,272; males employed, 54; females, 180; 2 woollen mills, 4 sets of machinery; 82,340 yards of cloth were manufactured; value, $110,000; males employed, 40; females, 25. There were 9,000 dozen of shuttles manufactured; value, $10,000; hands em-

Edw Gray parents (John + Elizabeth (Ward) Gray)
md. at Harrow-on-the Hill Ch,
Greater London

London


Zoological Gardens
Lord's Cricket Ground
Grand Union Canal (Regent's Canal)
Regent's Park
King's Cross Station
St. Pancras Station
Euston Station
Sadlers Wells Theatre
Geffrye Museum
SHOREDITCH
Coram Fields
Little Venice
Marylebone Station
Madame Tussaud's Wax Museum
Post Office Tower
Courtauld Institute Galleries
BLOOMSBURY
Charles Dickens's House
CLERKENWELL
John Wesley's House and Chapel
EDGWARE ROAD
TOTTENHAM COURT RD.
PADDINGTON
British Museum
Gray's Inn
Holborn Circus
Smithfield Market
Barbican Arts Centre
Broad Street Station
Liverpool Street Station
Spitalfields Market
Paddington Station
Wallace Collection
Sir John Soane's Museum
Lincoln's Inn
Central Criminal Court (Old Bailey)
Museum of London
WESTBOURNE GROVE
PORTOBELLO RD.
Marble Arch
OXFORD STREET
Soho Square
CHARING CROSS ROAD
BOW STREET
Dr. Johnson's House
Holborn Viaduct Station
St. Paul's Cathedral
Guildhall
LONDON WALL
Stock Exchange
Petticoat Lane
BAYSWATER
BAYSWATER ROAD
CITY OF WESTMINSTER
Liberty
BERWICK ST.
SOHO
Royal Opera House
Royal Courts of Justice
FLEET STREET
Bank of England
Royal Exchange
Roman Wall
Speakers' Corner
Grosvenor Square
Sotheby's
BOND STREET
REGENT ST.
Eros
Piccadilly Circus
Covent Garden
London Transport Museum
The Temple
CITY OF LONDON
Mansion House
Leadenhall Market
Fenchurch Street Station
London Metal Exchange
Hyde Park
Peter Pan
Kensington Gardens
MAYFAIR
Berkeley Square
HAYMARKET
National Gallery
STRAND
VICTORIA EMBANKMENT
Blackfriars Station
Blackfriars Bridge
Southwark Bridge
Cannon Street Station
The Monument
Royal Mint
PARK LANE
Museum of Mankind
Fortnum & Mason
Trafalgar Square
Discovery
Waterloo Bridge
Fishmongers Hall
London Bridge
Tower of London
Charing Cross Station
Nelson's Column
National Theatre
Shepherd Market
Christie's
ST. JAMES'S STREET
PALL MALL
The Serpentine
Kensington Palace
Ritz
PICCADILLY
Admiralty Arch
Charing Cross
Hayward Gallery
Royal Festival Hall
Southwark Cathedral
H.M.S. Belfast
London Docks
Holland Park
Albert Memorial
ROTTEN ROW
Apsley House Museum
Green Park
St. James's Palace
THE MALL
Horse Guards Parade
Banqueting House
Hungerford Footbridge
Waterloo Station
George Inn
London Bridge Station
Tower Bridge
River Thames
KENSINGTON HIGH STREET
KENSINGTON
KENSINGTON ROAD
KNIGHTSBRIDGE
Royal Albert Hall
Royal Geographical Society
Hyde Park Corner
Buckingham Palace
10 Downing St.
WHITEHALL
St. James's Park
Old Vic Theatre
Imperial College
Harrods
BELGRAVIA
BIRDCAGE WALK
Westminster Abbey
Westminster Bridge
Science Museum
Geological Museum
Brompton Oratory
Royal Mews
New Scotland Yard
Houses of Parliament
Natural History Museum
CROMWELL ROAD
Victoria and Albert Museum
SLOANE STREET
Victoria Station
Westminster Cathedral
Lambeth Palace
Imperial War Museum
EARL'S COURT
Lennox Gardens
Sloane Square
VAUXHALL BRIDGE ROAD
Lambeth Bridge
Earl's Court Exhibition Building
OLD BROMPTON ROAD
CHELSEA
PIMLICO RD.
Tate Gallery
FULHAM ROAD
KING'S ROAD
Chelsea Royal Hospital
Vauxhall Bridge
National Army Museum
Thomas Carlyle's House
CHELSEA EMBANKMENT
GROSVENOR ROAD
Chelsea Bridge
River Thames
The Oval
Crosby Hall
CHEYNE WALK
Albert Bridge
Battersea Park
0 KILOMETERS
0 STATUTE MILES 0.5
⊖ Underground Station (subway)
St. Albans
HERTS.
ESSEX
Epping
Chipping Ongar
BUCKS.
GRAND UNION CANAL
Barnet
Woodford
GREATER LONDON
Harrow
Hendon
Tottenham
Ruislip
Highgate
Cricklewood
Hampstead
HEATHROW AIRPORT
London
West Ham
Windsor
KEW GARDENS
Area Enlarged
BERKS.
Richmond
Brixton
Greenwich
Blackheath
Thames
HAMPTON COURT
Wimbledon
Kingston upon Thames
Croydon
DOWNE
M25
M20
Maidstone
KENT
Medway
SURREY
Wey
M23
WEST SUSSEX
GATWICK AIRPORT
Crawley
EAST SUSSEX
A41
A10
A11
A12
A127
A13
A2
A20
A3
A23
A4
M1
M4
M3
M11



←MAP→

Showing approximately the three white settlements of Tennessee and Kentucky, in 1785. The shade boundaries enclose what territory was actually occupied, though much more was claimed.

The State lines are indicated here, though they were not then established.

NORTH WESTERN INDIAN TRIBES
RIVER
OHIO
KENTUCKY
Kentucky River
INDIAN HUNTING GROUNDS AND WAR PATH
Green River
MISSISSIPPI RIVER
CHICKASAW INDIANS
Tennessee
Cumberland
MC.GREADY
CUMBERLAND
Red River
River
MC ADOW
NASHVILLE
THE CHEROKEE NORTHERN BOUNDARY
TREATY OF HOPEWELL 1785
Duck River
Tennessee
VIRGINIA
WATAUGA
NORTH CAROLINA
CHEROKEE INDIANS
L.B.FOLGER ENG.CIN.

Griffith +
Dial

HELLO
my name is
Norma
Zaniewski

County? If he did, was it in addition to one in Cayuga County? Perhaps we will never know for sure--those conundrums are more puzzling than important. The communities were adjacent and the differences in religion slight. The 1840 US census shows the family in Summerhill. Perhaps an older "child" who had lived a while near Homer worded the obituary. Silas's inlaws were from there. Since John and Silas resented their stepmother, they may have left the nest early to work there.

The obituary does show he was highly regarded. He died 23 Aug 1869, four years after establishing that congregation, and also four years after the Civil War. Lydia lived another twelve years. The 1870 census shows her residing between the families of William O. Dodge and "Samuel" (really Lemuel) and Emma (Dodge) Dunn. The youngest member of the latter family was little Mary Lydia, my grandma, who loved to hear her own grandma talk about the early days.

Lydia died 4 Aug 1881. She is buried beside Dwight in the Kingston Cemetery but, sadly, there is no marker on her grave because her remaining stepson would not allow it. I used to wonder why the others did not insist but suppose there is a good explanation. George Dodge's notes say his older cousin, Mary Clarkson Kautz, informed him that it was because "Silas and John were not too cordial toward her." Silas had actually died the year before but by then his little brother had been turned against his stepmother. I think their birth mother would have cried had she known.

Children of Rev. Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge:

Silas Dwight	(25 Aug 1818- 1 Jun 1880)	m.	5 May 1844	Mary Ann Hull
Lucy Moriah	(13 Mar 1820- 1889)		ca 1840	Martin Streeter
Levi Freeman	(15 Aug 1821-28 Aug 1822)		-	1 yr 14 days
John Freeman	(4 May 1824-20 Jul 1885)		1847	Louisa M.Walter
Lydia Susannah	(13 Jul 1830- 1 Nov 1860)		ca 1850	DeHaven

Children of Rev. Dwight and Lydia Woodman (Pearce) Dodge:

Phebe Keziah	(12 Oct 1831-29 Jun 1847)			15 yr 8 months
Obadiah Morrill	(22 May 1833-23 Mar 1899)		1857	Nancy Long
Levi James	(30 Apr 1835- 3 Feb 1844)			9 yr 3 days
Sarah C.	(30 Apr 1837- ca 1912)		18	________
William O.	(7 Jan 1839- 6 Sep 1901)	(1)	185	?Mariah(Alexander?)
		(2)	18	Hattie (————)
Emma Adelia	(9 Mar 1841-31 Jan 1932)		31 Jan 1860	Lemuel Dunn, Jr

DODGE FAMILY

References:

Regarding the Pearce Family:

Little Compton Families - Benjamin Franklin Wilbour-2 Volumes publ. Little Compton Historical Society (1967)
Notes on Little Compton - Carlton C. Brownell, Ed. from notes of B. F. Wilbour, deceased. Same publisher (1970)
Pearce Genealogy - Col. Frederick C. Pierce (1888)

Regarding all Subjects:

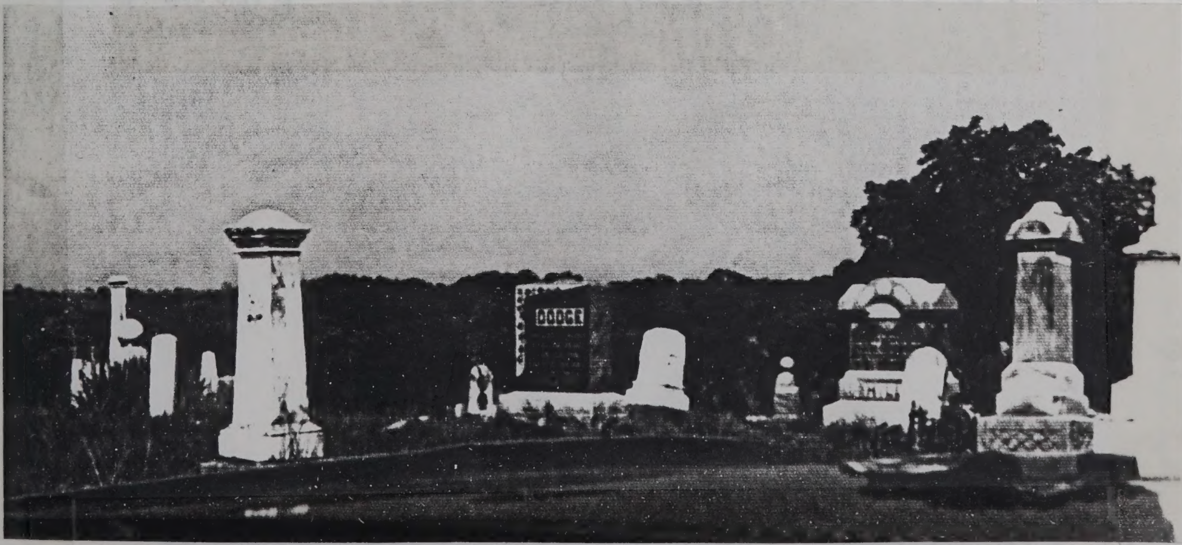
Historical Collections of the State of New York - J. W. Barber et al, Tuttle, (1841) with special reference to Cayuga, Cortland and Schoharie Counties
History of Schoharie County, New York

History of Cayuga County, New York

U.S. Census - various states and years as applicable
History of Caldwell & Livingston Counties, Missouri

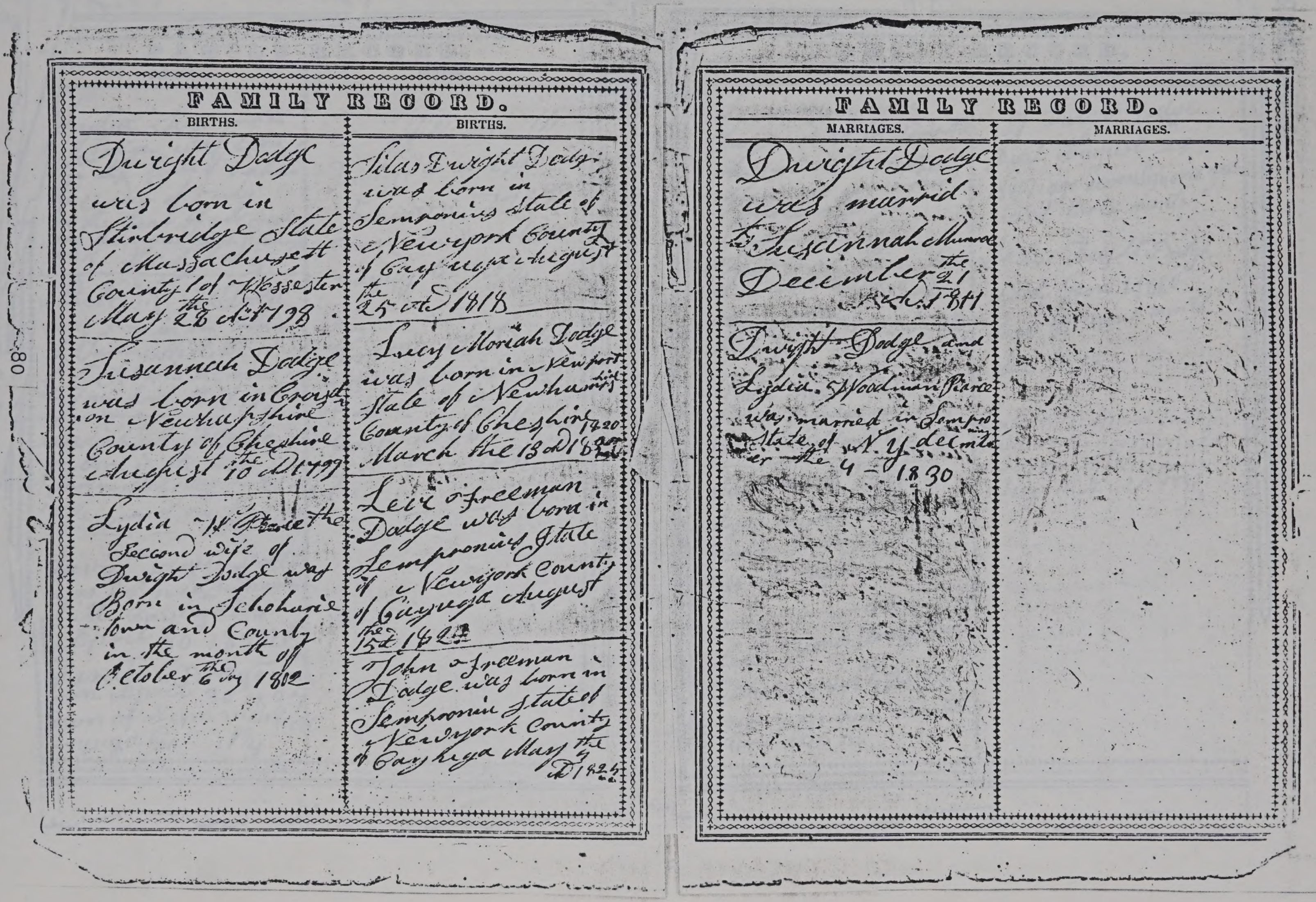
Various Kingston and Hamilton MO Newspaper columns
Unpublished Dodge Family Records of George Dodge of Hamilton MO
Dodge Family Bible Records - Family of Rev. Dwight Dodge
Unwritten Dodge Family recollections of Lydia Woodman (Pearce) Dodge and Emma Adelia (Dodge) Dunn as related to Mary Lydia (Dunn) White and her daughter Ada (White) Yoakum and in turn related by them to Mrs. Billie Gene Pringle and Mrs. Norma Zaniewski (That means Billie and I have second and third-hand information.)

BELOW: Some graves in the cemetery at Kingston, Missouri.



Photostatic copy of pages in the Dodge Family Bible

DODGE FAMILY



FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.

Dwight Dodge
was born in
Stirbridge State
of Massachusett
County of Wossester
May the 28 AD 1798.

Susannah Dodge
was born in Croyd-
on Newhampshire
County of Cheshire
August the 10 AD 1799

Lydia W Pierce the
Second wife of
Dwight Dodge was
Born in Schoharie
town and County
in the month of
October the 6 day 1802

BIRTHS.

Silas Dwight Dodge
was born in
Sempronius State of
New York County
of Cayuga August
the 25 AD 1818

Lucy Moriah Dodge
was born in Newport
State of Newhampshire
County of Cheshire 1820
March the 13 AD 1820

Levi Freeman
Dodge was born in
Sempronius State
of New York County
of Cayuga August
the 15 AD 1822

John Freeman
Dodge was born in
Sempronius State of
New York County
of Cayuga May the 4
AD 1825

FAMILY RECORD.

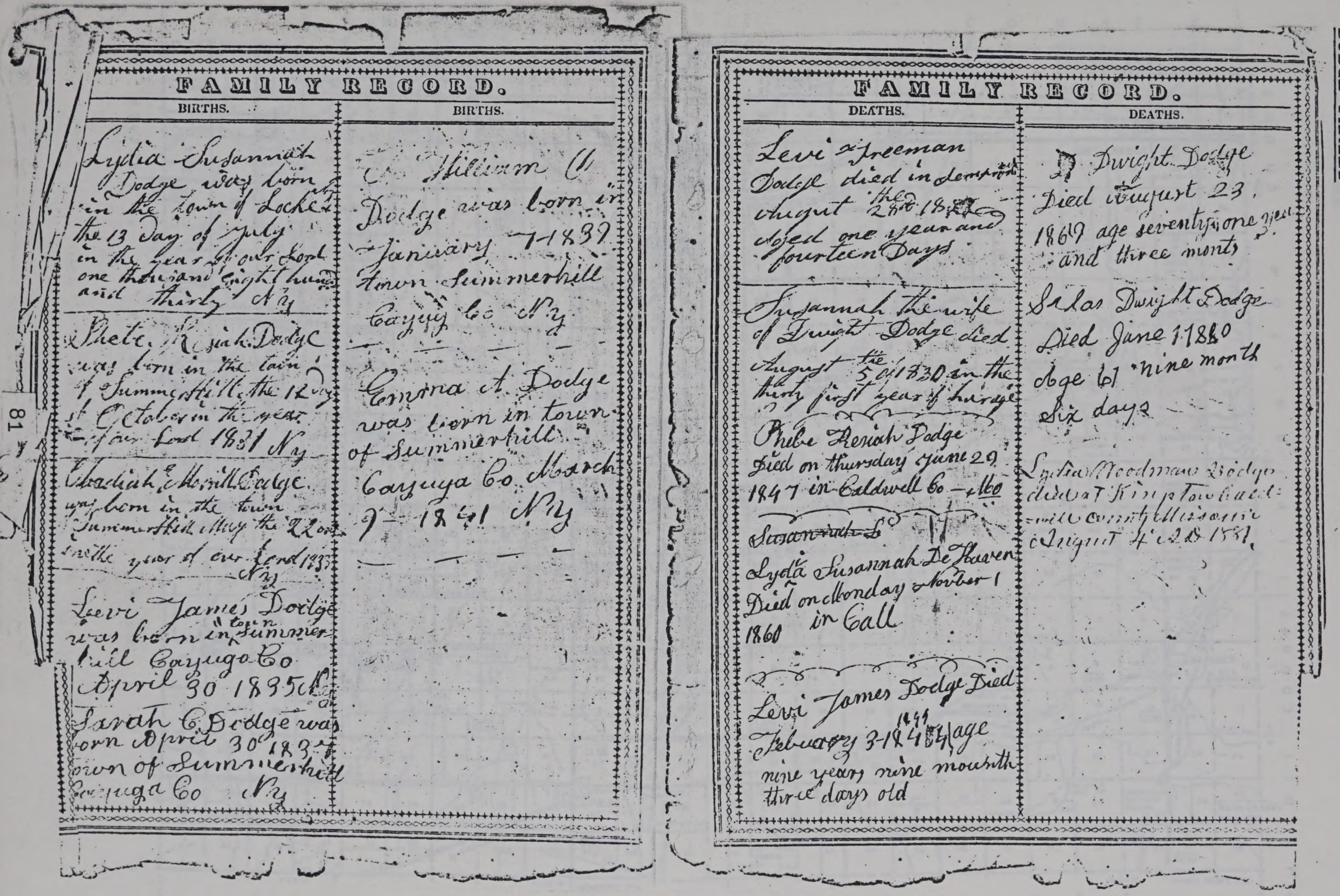
MARRIAGES.

Dwight Dodge
was married
to Susannah Munroe
December the 21
AD 1817

Dwight Dodge and
Lydia Woodman Pierce
was married in Sempronius
State of N. Y. decemb-
er the 4 1830

MARRIAGES.

Photostatic copy of pages in the Dodge Family Bible



FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.

Lydia Susannah
Dodge was born
in the town of Locke
the 13 day of July
in the year of our Lord
one thousand eight hun
and thirty Ny

Phebe Kesiah Dodge
was born in the town
of SummerHill the 12 day
of October in the year
of our Lord 1831 Ny

Obadiah Merrill Dodge
was born in the town
SummerHill May the 22 or
in the year of our Lord 1835
Ny

Levi James Dodge
was born in town Summer
hill Cayuga Co
April 30 1835

Sarah C Dodge was
born April 30 1837
town of Summerhill
Cayuga Co Ny

BIRTHS.

William C
Dodge was born in
January 7 1839
town Summerhill
Cayuga Co Ny

Emma A. Dodge
was born in town
of Summerhill
Cayuga Co March
9 1841 Ny

FAMILY RECORD.

DEATHS.

Levi Freeman
Dodge died in Sempron
August the 28 18[illegible]
Aged one year and
fourteen Days

Susannah the wife
of Dwight Dodge died
August the 5 of 1830 in the
thirty first year of her age

Phebe Kesiah Dodge
Died on thursday June 29
1847 in Caldwell Co - Mo

~~Susannah L~~
Lydia Susannah De Haven
Died on Monday Novber 1
1860 in Call

Levi James Dodge Died
1844
Febuary 3-1844 age
nine years nine mounth
three days old

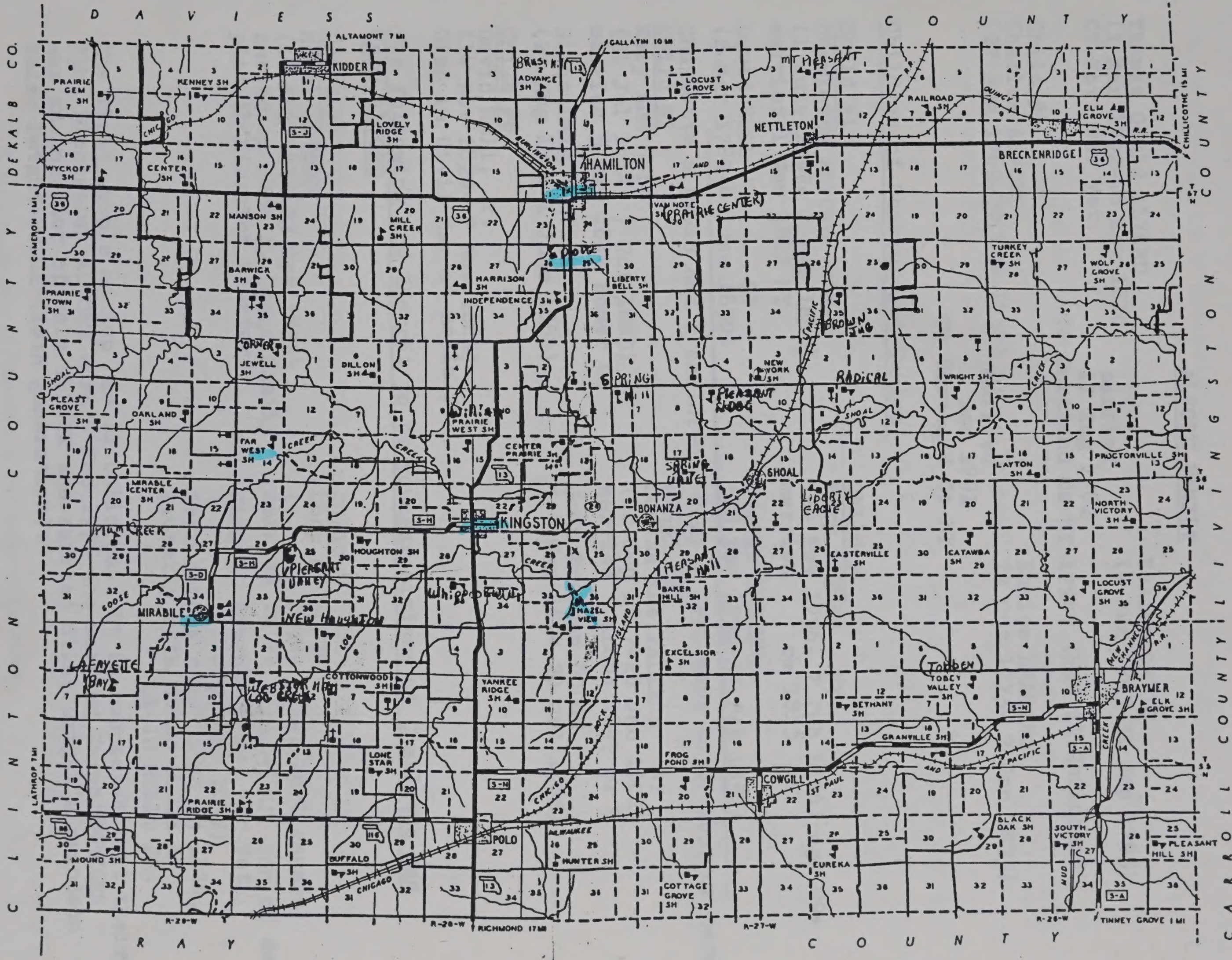
DEATHS.

Dwight Dodge
Died August 23.
1869 age seventy one year
and three monts

Silas Dwight Dodge
Died June 1 1880
Age 61 nine month
Six days

Lydia Woodman Dodge
died at Kingston Cald-
-well County Missouri
August 4 AD 1881.

MAP OF CALDWELL COUNTY, MISSOURI


DAVIESS COUNTY
DEKALB CO.
CLINTON COUNTY
RAY COUNTY
LIVINGSTON COUNTY
CARROLL COUNTY
ALTAMONT 7 MI
GALLATIN 10 MI
CAMERON 1 MI
CHILLICOTHE 15 MI
LATHROP 7 MI
RICHMOND 17 MI
TINNEY GROVE 1 MI
KIDDER
HAMILTON
NETTLETON
BRECKENRIDGE
KINGSTON
BONANZA
SHOAL
MIRABILE
COWGILL
POLO
BRAYMER
PRAIRIE GEM SH
KENNEY SH
WYCKOFF SH
CENTER SH
LOVELY RIDGE SH
ADVANCE SH
LOCUST GROVE SH
MT PLEASANT
RAILROAD SH
ELM GROVE SH
MANSON SH
MILL CREEK SH
VAN NOTE SH
PRAIRIE CENTER
DODGE
BARWICK SH
HARRISON SH
INDEPENDENCE SH
LIBERTY BELL SH
TURKEY CREEK SH
WOLF GROVE SH
PRAIRIE TOWN SH
CORNER
JEWELL SH
DILLON SH
SPRING HILL
NEW YORK SH
BROWN JUG
RADICAL
WRIGHT SH
PLEASANT GROVE SH
OAKLAND SH
PRAIRIE WEST SH
PLEASANT RIDGE
FAR WEST SH
CENTER PRAIRIE SH
SHADY VALLEY
LIBERTY EAGLE
LAYTON SH
PROCTORVILLE SH
MIRABLE CENTER SH
NORTH VICTORY SH
PLUM CREEK
HOUGHTON SH
PLEASANT VALLEY
WHIPPOORWILL
PLEASANT HILL
EASTERVILLE SH
CATAWBA SH
LOCUST GROVE SH
NEW HOUGHTON
HAZEL VIEW SH
BAKER HILL SH
EXCELSIOR SH
LAFAYETTE
COTTONWOOD SH
YANKEE RIDGE SH
TOBEY VALLEY SH
BETHANY SH
ELK GROVE SH
LONE STAR SH
FROG POND SH
GRANVILLE SH
PRAIRIE RIDGE SH
MOUND SH
BUFFALO SH
HUNTER SH
COTTAGE GROVE SH
EUREKA SH
BLACK OAK SH
SOUTH VICTORY SH
PLEASANT HILL SH
SHOAL CREEK
GOOSE CREEK
LOG CREEK
ROCK CREEK
MUD CREEK
BURLINGTON
CHICAGO
QUINCY R.R.
PACIFIC
ST PAUL
MILWAUKEE
NEW CHANNEL
R-29-W
R-28-W
R-27-W
R-26-W

ALVORD FAMILY

Thomas Gould ALVORD
(1 Mar 1742-18 May 1810)
CT Rev. War Vet.

married
17 Aug 1762
To Cortland Co NY 1794?

Keziah ORVIS
(4 Aug 1743-21 Sep 1795)
(Had 11 Children)

Child #4
Charles ALVORD
(27 Aug 1769-30 Oct 1830)

married
Dec 1791
To Cortland Co NY

Eunice LEAMING
(4 Oct 1775- 7 Jan 1835)

Children of Charles and Eunice:

Child #1
Charlotte ALVORD CT
(1 June 1792- 1 Feb 1882)
married 1 Mar 1812 NY

David HULL CT
(2 Mar 1780-4 June 1830)

Charlotte & David had 8 children.

Child #1
Mary Ann HULL
(31 Jul 1814- 7 Oct 1885)
married 5 May 1844 Homer NY

Silas Dwight DODGE
(25 Aug 1818-1 June 1880)

Child #8
David Hull, Jr.
(14 Nov 1829- 7 Nov 1864)
Died in Civil War at Rolla MO

Child #
Mary ALVORD NY?
(26 Nov 1796- 7 Feb 1896) age 99+
married ca 1815 NY

George WALTERS
(28 Sep 1796-25 Feb 1856)

Mary & Geo. went to MO 1837 or before

Child #1?
Louisa Mae WALTERS NY
(10 Sep 1817-28 Jan 1902)
married about 1847 or 8

John Freeman DODGE
(4 May 1824-20 Jul 1885)

The following are thought to be younger sisters of Charlotte and Mary ALVORD

Child #
Naomi ALVORD
(16 May 1814-23 Apr 1850)
Buried in John F. Dodge Family
plot in Kingston Cemetery

Child #
Lucy K. ALVORD
(1808- after 1870 census)
married in NY

John S. Houghton (born NJ, Son of Wm. a Rev. War Vet
(- after 1847)
This couple came to MO in 1844,
probably with Silas DODGE &
DAVID HULL, JR.

The first couple at top had 11 children. It is suspected that their 7th, Dioclesian ALVORD born 8 Feb 1776 who married Sarah WHEELER was an ancestor of Nora TURNER who married Silas Dwight's grandson Silas Dwight DODGE (10th generation).

The following is a verbatim copy of page 43 of George Dodge's Genealogy:

REVOLUTIONARY WAR DATA PERTAINING TO D.A.R. FURNISHED BY MRS. MARY CLARKSON KAUTZ.

Thos. Gould Alvord, sargent, enlisted Mar 1, 1777 - Capt. Judd's Company for the war - exchanged for Gabriel Leverich April 23, 1781.

3rd regiment Conn. Line, Colonel Samuel Wylies
Connecticutt Man in Revolution

Thos. Gould Alvord served in French and Indian war, when he was on the frontier from Oswego to Detroit, and in company with his eldest son, Thos. Gould Alvord, Jr. He was in Colonel Lamb's regiment in the Revolutionary war, both serving as cannoniers, and both present at Cornwallis's surrender.

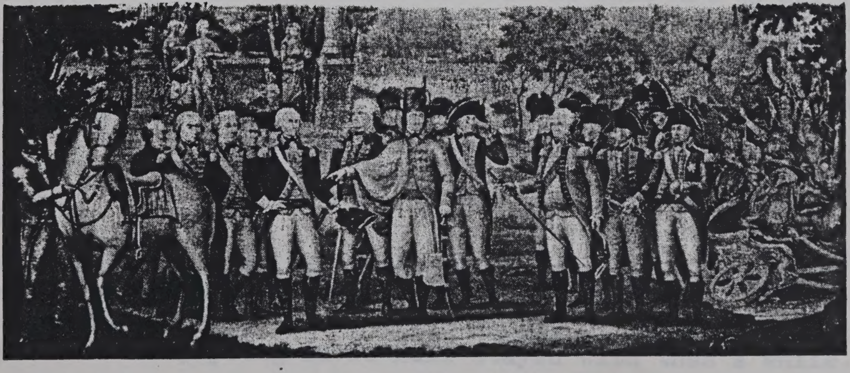
Thos. Gould Alvord was at the battle of White Plain and was wounded by a musket ball, which entered his arm, and passing out near the elbow, was picked up by a companion Luke Wardsworth, who placed the ball in his own gun and sent it back to the enemy.

Some of the descendants also mention that at the Battle of Yorktown he loaded and fired a cannon four times a minute for four hours, and that when the balls gave out they used old bolts, pieces of log chains, etc.

Thomas Gould Alvord served during the entire war, for which he drew lot No. 13, which was 600 acres in Homer, New York, to which he moved in 1794.

- - - - - - - - - - - -

Doesn't that make you proud to be an American? You can be sure George was proud, for he was descended from that brave man.



Artist's conception of surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown

DODGE FAMILY

Silas Dwight Dodge[8] oldest child of Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge, was born 25 August 1818 in Sempronius, Cayuga County, NY probably prematurely, the first year his parents were married. His mother died when he was twelve years old and he was so devastated there was no way anyone else could ever take her place, though his stepmother tried the best she knew how. Little brother John, six years old, looked up to his big brother and copied him. The fact that they grew up to marry cousins with roots in Homer, New York, probably strengthened the solidarity between them.

On 5 May 1844 near Homer, Cortland County, New York, Silas married Mary Ann Hull, born 31 July 1814. The next month, June 1844, they joined a family group going to settle in Far West, Missouri, taking her 15-year old brother, David, Jr., along with them. Mary Ann's parents were Charlotte (Alvord) and David Hull, Sr., though her father had died in 1830 when she was only 16. David had owned two farms in Homer, New York, probably a part of Thomas Gould Alvord's grant, but the widow & five other children stayed in New York to farm them. Later on some of them did migrate, but not as far as Missouri.

When the Mormons were forced to leave Far West, Missouri, in 1843, Mary (Alvord) Walter and her husband, George, who had gone there in 1837 or before, probably wrote the family that now would be an excellent time to come join them. So a group went. We don't know whom all of them were, but besides Mary Ann, Silas, and David, her young aunt her own age Naomi Alvord, and an older aunt Lucy (Alvord) Houghton and husband John Houghton were in the group. George Dodge was told that his grandparents, Silas and Mary Ann, left New York State in June, 1844, and came west "via the Ohio River by ox team then on the Mississippi and Missouri and Lexington." Being young and just starting out, when they arrived "they had barely enough money left to post a letter to their parents back East."

George Dodge included some intriguing short Hull, Alvord, Orvis and other genealogies in his book. It is hard not to get carried away telling some of them, but there is not room for that here, except for the parts I have already included for clarity's sake. He did make the interesting observation that a certain Isaac Hull was witness in 1670 to the will of Richard Dodge I. He wondered whether that were a coincidence, or some far-back relative he had not been able to trace, since he had not been able to find his own Hull line back much before the Revolution. He was under the impression that some early Hulls came from Somerset, as did the Dodges.

In the spring of 1847 the young couple moved to just south of where Hamilton, Missouri, now stands and there they made their farm home where they reared their family of one boy and three girls. Probably young David Hull stayed with them a while.

In 1849 when gold was discovered in California, Silas and John became "Forty-Niners" and went overland to California. Several sources say they did succeed in making some money, though no details have come down about how they accomplished that. Dr. J.T. Dodge says they returned to "Far West," and George says the return trip was by "ship via the Cape of Good Hope," and that they got off a boat at Lexington. It is good there were other older family members in Missouri by then, to look after their families, for by then Silas had three young children and John two.

On the farm that he owned and operated, and which later passed into the hands of the son, Dwight David, he allowed the community to locate a school house, and in another location a small cemetery. "This same farm was reputed to have a large amount of gold buried thereon during the Civil War and, although many have attempted to locate this gold, nothing has ever been found, to the knowledge of the writer (George)" He was told by his older half-brother, who was also named Silas Dwight, John Freeman Dodge was afraid to keep his money during the Civil War because of bushwhackers being bad in his area, so it was entrusted to Silas to keep for him. It was hidden under the stairway of Silas's log house. It was gold, and the older brother said there was $30,000.00. (Quite a sum for those days before inflation.)

He said the following is an exact copy of a record they received from their Aunt Susannah McCollum[9]:

"Hamilton, Mo., was laid out by a Mr. Hamilton and Mr. A. G. Davis and one other man. Mr. Silas D. Dodge cut the walnut tree on his place in the summer of 1856. He and Mr. David Hull rived out the shingles and Mr. Dodge hauled the shingles with an ox team for a hotel built by a Mr. William Pardon and a Mr. Cheek and one other man.

"This was the first house built in Hamilton. The carpenters boarded at Mr. Dodge's and walked it every morning and evening. They stepped it, and said it was three miles and seven steps from Mr. Dodge's place to the building site."

Writer has not searched to see if David Hull ever got married and had a family or not. It was reported that later he was injured in the raising of Chauncey Moore's barn. He did become a soldier in the Civil War and while still in the service he died 7 Nov. 1864 in a hospital in Rolla, Missouri.

Silas Dwight Dodge died 1 June 1880 at his farm in Hamilton and Mary Ann died there 7 October October 1885. Both of them are buried in Kingston Cemetery.

DODGE FAMILY

Children of Silas Dwight and Mary Ann (Hull) Dodge:

Susanna K.	(30 Aug 1845-14 Jan 1927)	M 19 Nov 1863	Franklin McCollum
* Dwight David	(25 Dec 1846-23 Jan 1916)	27 Jan 1874 12 Jan 1904	Lucy Cox Laura Scott
Eunice C.	(29 Oct 1848- 7 Jul 1919)	22 Oct 1868	Fred. C. Gibson
Frances Nevada	(12 Sep 1853-21 Oct 1920)	2 Feb 1874 7 Jun 1911	Nathaniel Clarkson Jackson Edminster

A few notes first about the spouses and children of the daughters are given first, then followed by a longer discussion of the son, Dwight David, and his son George who wrote the book.

Franklin McCollum (1840-1911) lived on a farm southwest of Hamilton. He was a member of the voluntary infantry. They had two daughters, Florence who married Ernest E. Henry and Charlotte who married Leslie V. McCauley,

Frederick C. Gibson (1845-1927) was said to have been a Welshman. After Eunice died he spent his winters in San Antonio. They had five children, John Dwight, George F., Sylvia, Edwin, and Harry E. Gibson.

Nathaniel C. Clarkson (1849-1906) was a Hamilton postmaster. They had three children, Charles, Mary, and Egbert. (Frances is called "Fannie" in Latter Day Saint marriage records.) She and her last husband, Jackson Edminster had no children. She died in Excelsior Springs but is buried in Kingston Cemetery.

*Dwight David Dodge[9] was born at Far West Missouri 26 Dec 1846 in the area that became Mirable TWP, to Silas Dwight and Mary Ann (Hull) Dodge. When he was an infant six weeks old his parents moved to the farm he grew up in and later inherited a little south of where Hamilton was later built.

When the Civil War broke out he was under 15 years old. Because of his youth he never became an actual soldier, but he became a member of the home militia and was actually involved in a skirmish against the rebels at Lexington under Captain Jacob Snider. He was brave but green--his Captain had to tell him to get behind a tree rather than stand boldly out in the open and get shot at.

On 27 Jan 1874 he married a devout Methodist girl named Lucy Frances Cox born 22 Oct 1854. They had four children and she died 19 May 1887 when the youngest was seven years old. His second wife, whom he married 12 Jan 1904, was Laura Scott born 15 Feb 1867 near Lancaster, Ohio, daughter of Mrms. Stephen Scott. Mr. Scott was a

carpenter-contractor and a Civil War veteran. Though Laura was very active in the Methodist Episcopal church, Dwight David was baptized into the Reorganized Church of Latter Day Saints on 20 Aug 1906 by an Elder Pickering and a liberal contributor to the erection of Oakdale Church, to which his two daughters of his first marriage belonged.

Dwight David was a successful farmer. When he was 69 years old he disposed of most of his stock, rented out his farm, and bought a house in Hamilton but died 23 Jan 1916 before he could move there. The four living children shared equally in his will. His widow, Laura (Scott) Dodge died 29 Jan 1930 and is buried in the Scott lots in the Hamilton Cemetery.

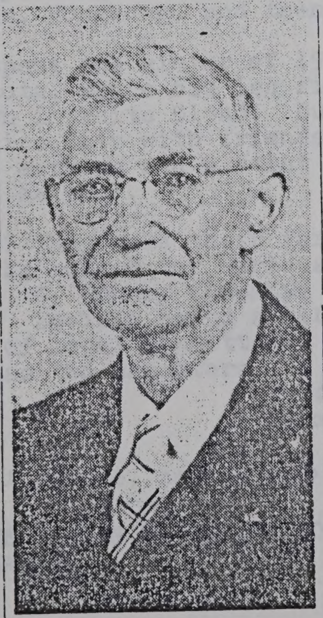
Children of Dwight David^{9} and Lucy (Cox) Dodge:

Silas Dwight (17 Dec 1874-3 Feb 1954)	m 24 Nov 1897	Nora Maud Turner
(see photo)	4 children	(1874-1942)
Nellie Lula (17 May 1876-13 Jul 1955)		Ollie Clark Dunlop
they were active LDS church	4 children	
Fannie May (11 Jun 1880-22 Jun 1963)		Coleman Snyder
he died suddenly of appencicitis	3 children	elder-LDS church

Children of Dwight David^{9} and Laura (Scott) Dodge:

**George Dwight (03 Apr 1905-) m 25 Oct 1836 Lois Margrete Schiller

This George Dodge is the man who let us copy his book, without which this writer could not have written so much of the material in this book.



COOK PHOTO

LEFT--Silas Dwight Dodge^{10}

ABOVE--Lois (Schiller) Dodge, pretty wife of George Dwight Dodge^{10}

George Dwight Dodge[10] was born 3 April 1905 on a farm a little south of Hamilton to Dwight David and Laura (Scott) Dodge. When he was 11 years old his father, age 69, had bought a house in town and was getting ready to move into it when he died. At that time George's older half-brother and sisters were all married with children of their own, some of them older than their little brother. The widow Laura Dodge moved into town and George finished school there. His mother died when he was 24 and he stayed with his aunt Emma A Scott and worked for a while, until he met with some kind of accident.

George's broken ankle refused to heal. That led into a romantic love story. He was hospitalized for a very long time. On 25 October 1936, in Room 520 of the Research Hospital in Kansas City, MO, he was wedded to pretty Lois Margarete Schiller, born 8 May 1912 near St. Joseph, MO. The ceremony was performed by a minister, Rev. Todd of Trenton. Between hospitalizations they lived at the Schiller farm at Trenton. Though he did not say so he probably gradually got around on crutches but must have had some bone infection such as osteomyelitis which gradually improved but required too much medication or trips to the doctor to allow him to hold down a job.

By 1938 his condition had improved enough that they took an extended auto tour through the midwest and most of the Atlantic seaboard states. On May 7th at New York City they embarked on an ocean liner going on a cruise to Plymouth, England. (Without knowing it, they were probably only a dozen or so miles from where Richard Dodge I was born!) They then visited England, Scotland, Holland, Germany, Belgium, France, Egypt, India, Ceylon and various Pacific Islands, Hongkong, and then Japan before returning to San Francisco.

They spent the winter of 1938-9 at the Mayo Clinic at Rochester, Minnesota, where his leg finally healed, then purchased a farm at auction in White Cloud. During that summer they took a vacation at Mexico City with friends. He worked at various jobs, including public service and a stint as a constable, and most likely Lois worked as well.

In 1947 they sold their farm, eventually moving back to Hamilton where he worked for various firms, including a very long stint with J. C. Penney Company. He was very active in the Masonic Lodge. Besides being a librarian at Hamilton, Lois served on all kinds of local committees. They were very active socially. They had two daughters,

Frederica Schiller Dodge born 7 Nov 1940
Sarah Margaret Dodge born 15 Nov. 1944

And, of course, he kept up the book.

NOW WE RETURN TO GENERATION 8 AND THE REST OF REV. DWIGHT DODGE'S CHILDREN--

This section will attempt to tell about all of Rev. Dwight Dodge's children by the two wives, starting with the eldest, Silas from whom our cousin George Dodge, who shared so much information, was descended.

It is beyond the scope of this book to go into detail about all of the Caldwell County descendants of Dwight's children, except that out of gratitude to George his line will be shown. Some people named Gibson, Morris, Clarkson, Snider, Allee, Kinne and Streeter etc. might find their Dodge ancestors in this book but details about that will be omitted, which were given in George's book, and is one reason I would like to see his book go public.

Relatively more has been discovered so far about the lives of Silas, John, and of course our ancestor Emma Adelia, the youngest. Neither George nor I have yet been able to come up with an acceptable amount of information about the daughters who migrated to California in the 1850's, Sarah C. and Lydia Susannah who married a Mr. DeHaven. I would be eternally grateful to anyone who could fill in those details and intend to keep on looking. Will try to do a postscript if I learn more.

Why did the Dodges go to Missouri when they did? And why was Dwight so hesitant about joining Silas there that he got wound up and preached in his sleep? Part of the answer may lie with the remarkable Alvord family.

The casual reader might miss the implication because the most influential players, sisters Charlotte, Mary, Lucy and Naomi Alvord, were back-stage actors. Silas was married to the daughter of one of them, Charlotte's daughter, Mary Ann Hull, only four years older than her husband, but Dwight may have felt that her family had too great an influence on him.

Dwight knew all those people well, for they were early residents of Homer, Cortland County, New York, where he sometimes preached. This writer suspects that those people had been friendly with his first wife, Susannah, but did not much care for the Pearces. If such were the case he might not have been anxious to subject Lydia to discrimination in the new area. That would have contributed to his hesitance about going West, and the nervous episode.

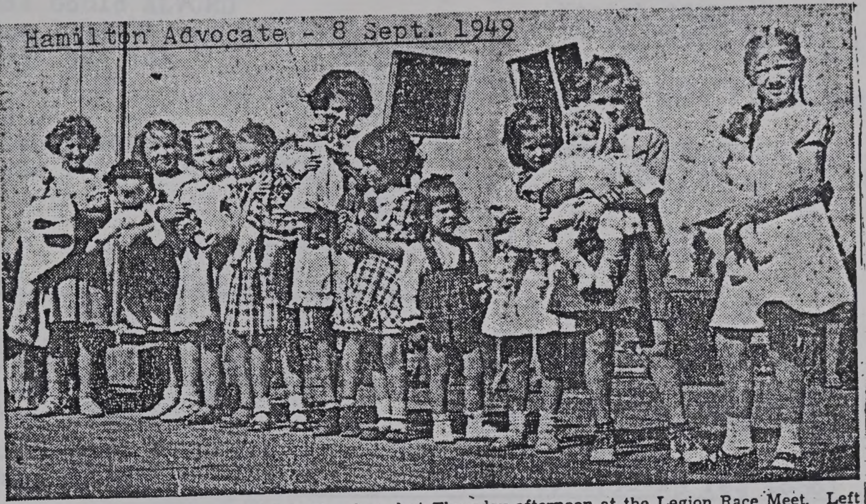
In case those concerns were worrying Dwight, he would have been even more alarmed had he realized his other son, John, would marry the cousin in Missouri, Louisa Mae Walter, six years older. At least, something did occur to widen the schism in the Dodge family.

The patriarch of the Alvord family was a very brave man from Connecticut, Thomas Gould Alvord, who fought in the French and Indian War and also the Revolution, and was awarded 600 acres Bounty Land in Homer. The chart on the next page may make all this easier to understand.

DODGE FAMILY

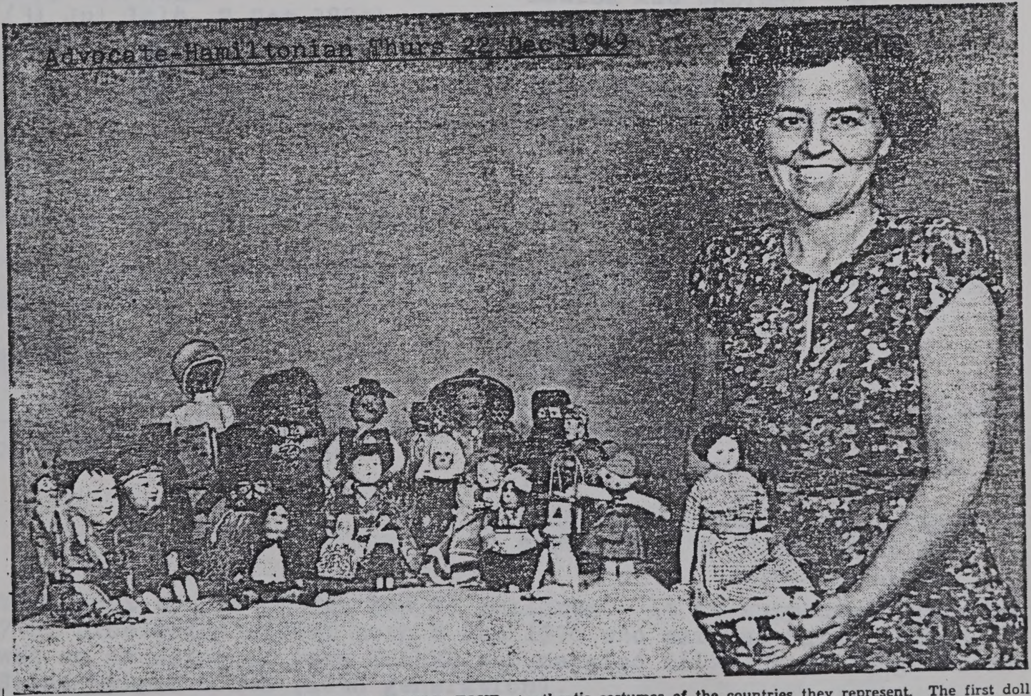
Top--George Dodge's two little daughters are 5th & 6th from left

Bottom--His wife, Lois, and the dolls she collected on that world cruise.



Hamilton Advocate - 8 Sept. 1949

GIRLS EXHIBIT THEIR DOLLS in the show last Thursday afternoon at the Legion Race Meet. Left to right are Loraine Barnes, Susie Tuggle, Doris Jean McCubbin, Alberta Van Camp, Frederica Dodge, Sarah Dodge, Susie Christmann, Sharolyn Kay Ochs, Carol Gillilan and Sandra Wilhoit.—ADVOCATE PHOTO



Advocate-Hamiltonian Thurs 22 Dec 1949

HAMILTON WOMAN COLLECTS DOLLS ON WORLD TOUR—Mrs. George Dodge of south Hughes street has a most interesting collection of dolls which she bought while making a world tour with Mr. Dodge in 1938, two years after their marriage. The tour was postponed because of the severely fractured ankle suffered by Mr. Dodge, which required a long period of hospitalization. Mrms. Dodge and daughters, Frederica, 9, and Sarah, 5, came here from Barnard, Nodaway county in 1947, after selling their farm where they had lived for a number of years.

There are 21 dolls in the collection and all are dressed in the authentic costumes of the countries they represent. The first doll on the left, pictured above, is a Mexican and furnished by Mrs. Dodge's aunt, who was a missionary in Mexico for 50 years. The others in order include two Chinese, Ceylon tea picker, another Mexican doll from Hawaii, Scottish, Indian Canadian, Russian, Japanese, Hungarian, English (the latter from England where Mrs. Dodge's brother lived for some time), Belgium, France, Holland, Phillippine, Egyptian, Javanese and German dolls. The large doll Mrs. Dodge is holding belonged to Mr. Dodge's mother, the late Mrs. Laura Dodge.—PHOTO BY STRADE

ALVORD FAMILY

Thomas Gould ALVORD
(1 Mar 1742-18 May 1810)
CT Rev. War Vet.

married
17 Aug 1762
To Cortland Co NY 1794?

Keziah ORVIS
(4 Aug 1743-21 Sep 1795)
(Had 11 Children)

Child #4
Charles ALVORD
(27 Aug 1769-30 Oct 1830)

married
Dec 1791
To Cortland Co NY

Eunice LEAMING
(4 Oct 1775- 7 Jan 1835)

Children of Charles and Eunice:

Child #1
Charlotte ALVORD CT
(1 June 1792- 1 Feb 1882)
married 1 Mar 1812 NY

David HULL CT
(2 Mar 1780-4 June 1830)

Child #
Mary ALVORD NY?
(26 Nov 1796- 7 Feb 1896) age 99+
married ca 1815 NY

George WALTERS
(28 Sep 1796-25 Feb 1856)

Charlotte & David had 8 children.

Child #1
Mary Ann HULL
(31 Jul 1814- 7 Oct 1885)
married 5 May 1844 Homer NY

Silas Dwight DODGE
(25 Aug 1818-1 June 1880)

Child #8
David Hull, Jr.
(14 Nov 1829- 7 Nov 1864)
Died in Civil War at Rolla MO

Mary & Geo. went to MO 1837 or before

Child #1?
Louisa Mae WALTERS NY
(10 Sep 1817-28 Jan 1902)
married about 1847 or 8

John Freeman DODGE
(4 May 1824-20 Jul 1885)

The following are thought to be younger sisters of Charlotte and Mary ALVORD

Child #
Naomi ALVORD
(16 May 1814-23 Apr 1850)
Buried in John F. Dodge Family plot in Kingston Cemetery

Child #
Lucy K. ALVORD
(1808- after 1870 census)
married in NY

(born NJ, Son of Wm. a
John S. Houghton(Rev. War Vet
(- after 1847)
This couple came to MO in 1844,
probably with Silas DODGE &
DAVID HULL, JR.

The first couple at top had 11 children. It is suspected that their 7th, Dioclesian ALVORD born 8 Feb 1776 who married Sarah WHEELER was an ancestor of Nora TURNER who married Silas Dwight's grandson Silas Dwight DODGE (10th generation).

DODGE FAMILY

Lucy Moriah Dodge[8] the second child of Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge was born 13 March 1820 In Newport, Cheshire (now Sullivan) County, New Hampshire. (Page 169 of the 1820 census ~~does~~ shows ~~this~~ the ~~little~~ family there) Writer conjectures that they went back to New Hampshire at least partly because she wanted to be near her parents when the baby came. All must have gone fairly well, for next summer they were back in Sempronius.

The amount known about this daughter is rather sketchy. The census helps a little, also LDS marriage records. From the records we can conjecture that Lucy married about 1839 or 1840 in New York State, Martin Streeter born about 1817 in New York. They evidently 6 moved to Missouri later than her parents, about 1850. Their first five children were born in New York and the last three in Missouri. In 1870 they were living near her brother, John Freeman Dodge, in Mirable area. Several years later his brother, Horace and his family also came west and lived near her brother Silas near Hamilton.

Martin Streeter became an Army Captain during the Civil War, and it is said that because she still had small children his being gone worked a hardship on the family, and that her two brothers tried to help her.

Lucy died about 1889 in Breckenridge but is buried in Kingston Cemetery. The notes do not say when Martin ~~he~~ died. ~~Maybe I can find his grave someday to find out.~~ his name is not in Kingston Cemetry index.

Sorry I do not have more information on the children.

Children of Captain Martin and Lucy Moriah (Dodge) Streeter:

Ella W.	born ca 1841 NY 1860 Census	m. 28 Dec 1859	James Woosley (Davies Co)
Evaline S.	1842 NY 19	15 Nov 1865 ? after1870	William Northrup 161 ( ) Cranby?
Hattie J.	1847 14 NY		
Martin, Jr.	1849 10 NY	13 Apr 1871	Emma Vanwinkle VR 161
Horace	1851 9 MO		
Plumas	1857 3 MO		
Dwight F.	1859	07 Mar 1883	Alicia A. Coit 161
Eugene	1864		

Ella and Mr. Woosley were married in Davies County. George said they had several children and spelled it Worsley. Evaline and William Northrup had one little son, William, Jr. William soon died. In 1870 she and little Willie, 4, were living with her parents. George said the little boy died young and she married a Mr. Cranby?? He called Martin's wife Emma Vanderpool. He did not list Dwight's wife. I could not find any other marriages, except a Horace J. Streeter married a Maria F. Cox but that seems to have been an older man. ~~There were~~ Other Streeter marriages have been found but none (So far) for these remaining children.

Lucy Moriah Dodge^{8} the second child of Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge was born 13 March 1820 In Newport, Cheshire (now Sullivan) County, New Hampshire. Page 169 of the 1820 census does show this little family there. Writer conjectures that they went back to New Hampshire at least partly because she wanted to be near her parents when the baby came. All must have gone fairly well, for next summer they were back in Sempronius.

The amount known about this daughter is rather sketchy. The census helps a little, also LDS marriage records. From the records we can conjecture that Lucy married about 1839 or 1840 in New York State, Martin Streeter born about 1817 in New York. They evidently moved to Missouri later than her parents, about 1850. Their first five children were born in New York and the last three in Missouri. In 1870 they were living near her brother, John Freeman Dodge, in Mirable area. Several years later his brother, Horace and his family also came west and lived near her brother Silas near Hamilton.

Martin Streeter became an Army Captain during the Civil War, and it is said that because she still had small children his being gone worked a hardship on the family, and that her two brothers tried to help her.

Lucy died about 1889 in Breckenridge but is buried in Kingston Cemetery. The notes do not say when he died. Maybe I can find his grave someday to find out.

Sorry I do not have more information on the children.

Children of Captain Martin and Lucy Moriah (Dodge) Streeter:

Ella W.	born ca 1841	m. 28 Dec 1859	James Woosley
Evaline S.	1842	15 Nov 1865 ? after1870	William Northrup ( ) Cranby?
Hattie	1847		
Martin, Jr.	1849	13 Apr 1871	Emma Vanwinkle
Horace	1851		
Plumas	1857		
Dwight F.	1859	07 Mar 1883	Alicia A. Coit
Eugene	1864		

Ella and Mr. Woosley were married in Davies County. George said they had several children and spelled it Worsley. Evaline and William Northrup had one little son, William, Jr. William soon died. In 1870 she and little Willie, 4, were living with her parents. George said the little boy died young and she married a Mr. Cranby?? He called Martin's wife Emma Vanderpool. He did not list Dwight's wife. I could not find any other marriages, except a Horace J. Streeter married a Maria F. Cox but that seems to have been an older man.

DODGE FAMILY

Levi Freeman Dodge[8] third child of Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge was born 15 August 1821 in Sempronius, Cayuga County, NY. The Bible record says he died 18 August 1822 in Sempronius, "age one year and three days."

John Freeman Dodge[8] fourth child of Rev. Dwight and Susanna (Monroe) Dodge was born 4 May 1824 in Sempronius New York. On the following page is a photostatic copy of a page from the Caldwell County History. It says that in 1829 the family moved to Cortland County and remained there until 1846 when they all came west. That does not agree with the US census reports, nor with the Dodge Family Bible which shows that all seven of the remaining children were born in Cayuga County.

John did come west in 1846 with his father's family. Others may have accompanied them, such as Anson Perry and family. They settled in Blythe township. In a year or two (1847 Or 1848) John married Louisa Mae Walters, born 10 Sep 1818 in Homer, New York to George and Mary (Alvord) Walter. Previous pages have explained her Eastern background. At the time of their marriage John was 23 or 24 and Louisa Mae was about 30.

The Walters family was in Far West, Caldwell County, Missouri by 1837 when they paid taxes there, if not earlier. George did not mention any Mormon background but histories do (see page 82) and Dr. J. T. Dodge's book says that John settled in Far West and married the daughter of a Mormon neighbor after the others had gone to Nauvoo. I don't know about the Walters, but some of the Hulls did live in Palmyra, New York, the old stomping grounds of the Mormon Prophet, Joseph Smith. (The only note of George that even approached the subject says his father, in old age in 1906, Dwight David, his father and John's nephew, became a Latter Day Saint.) This writer is in no position to question any of this or attempt to reconcile it, but feels such matters should at least be reported for the record.

The following are said to be interred in John Dodge's family plot in the Kingston Cemetery: Louise's parents, George Walters (28 Sep 1796-25 Feb 1856) and Mary (Alvord) Walter (26 Nov 1796-7 Feb 1896)--99 years, 2 mos., 11 days! who had lived with John and his family, and Naomi Alvord who died 23 April 1850 age 35 years, 11 mo, 7 days.

As reported before, John Freeman Dodge was a "49er" who went overland to California during the Gold Rush with his brother. They were said to have been successful, but nobody has said how they accomplished that. John was a successful and prosperous man, as shown in the illustration below. He credited his excellent education in New York for at least part of his success. The part of Far West he settled in became Mirable. (1870 census shows him with the (then) large sum of $13,400 plus real estate!) His mother-in-law lived with him, and her sister Lucy (Alvord) and George Houghton next door. Next door to them lived his

sister Lucy (Dodge) and Martin Streeter. Either his particular area or an ostentatious home may have attracted "bushwhackers" during Civil War, or he feared so, for he entrusted his brother Silas with $30,000.00 in gold which was buried under the stairs of Silas's log home until the danger was over.

John died 20 July 1885 age 61 and Louisa 28 Jan 1902. Both are buried in the Kingston Cemetery.

Children of John Freeman and Louisa Mae (Walters) Dodge:

John (11 Nov 1849 (Mo)-1 Dec 1863) died age 18
Mary L.(5 Dec 1847 (Mo) - 28 Jan 1909) m. 12 Jan 1880 James Frank Morris. (13 Nov 1853-11 Jan 191 They
had two children, Eugene Morris m. Elsie Rinkler
Louise Morris m. Kennedy

From Calwell County History, pp 372-3:

HON. JOHN F. DODGE

(Deceased).

The name that heads this sketch was that borne by one of the most highly respected and esteemed residents Caldwell county ever had. For three years John F. Dodge made his home in Hamilton, actively and closely identified with all movements of enterprise and merit. In an official capacity he had served the people at a time in the country's history when only men of broad but firm principles and ideas could discharge duties in a decisive manner. His death on July 20, 1885, was the occasion of universal sorrow, for all feit the loss which would be sustained by the departure of such a man. John F. Dodge was born in Cayuga county, N. Y., May 24, 1824. His father was a minister of the Christian Church — Rev. Dwight Dodge, and he was also by trade a blacksmith. His wife was formerly Miss Susan Monroe, whose father, M. Monroe, Esq., was a farmer and shoemaker by occupation. In 1829 the family removed from Cayuga to Cortland county, N. Y., John accompanying them, and in the latter county he was favored with such educational advantages as the district schools afforded. He remained there until 1846 and at that early day came West, locating in what now constitutes Caldwell county, engaging in farming at once. About the year 1861 he was elected county judge and served the county in that capacity for sixteen years, only resigning on account of ill health about 1878. He was obliged to decline further public preferment, though sought to do so. Of great popularity, Judge Dodge discharged his duties in a faultless manner and with great satisfaction. During the war he desired to enlist but was prevented by his constituents who would not release him from the position he then occupied. He was possessed of considerable property and at his death left a large estate. His wife was formerly Miss Louisa M. Walter, daughter of George Walter, of New York State. Two children were born to the Judge and his wife: John G. died when eighteen (18) years old, and Mary L. is now the wife of James F. Morris of Hamilton. Mrs. Dodge now resides in Hamilton, where she is held in great respect by those who are favored with her acquaintance.

Lydia Susannah Dodge^8 was born 13 July 1830 at Locke, Cayuga Co., New York to Reverend Dwight and Susanna (Monroe) Dodge, and her 31-year old mother died three weeks and two days later.

The little newborn and the unfortunate suffering mother were tenderly nursed by a concerned and loving friend who tried the best she could to comfort the mother and take excellent care of the newborn. She grieved when her friend passed away, but before that happened Susannah named the baby Lydia in gratitude and affection. The rest insisted on the middle name of Susannah.

So soon after that it seems odd by modern standards, Dwight asked Lydia to marry him and she accepted. She was already extremely fond of the whole family and she loved the little baby and raised her as her own. They were married only four months after Susannah died. The whole family did mourn the loss, but they needed Lydia.

Writer regrets to say that Grandma did report more about this child, but I have forgotten all of it except that there was always a strong bond between the two Lydias. She did grow up, marry a Mr. DeHaven, before she and her younger sister Sarah and family migrated to California in the mid or late 1850's. She probably had children but I do not know their names or the first name of her husband. She died 1 November 1860 in California, only 30 years old.

Writer would be grateful for any further information at all.

Phebe Keziah Dodge^8 was born 12 October 1831 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York, first child of Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge, eleven months after the wedding. Her name was special, for she was named for both of her grandmothers. Phebe (Wood) Pearce, a widow, was living nearby with her son, Phebe's Uncle Giles and saw the family often, partly because they belonged to Dwight's church.

Dwight's mother, Keziah (Ellis) Dodge was then living with her husband and children in New Hampshire. Her youngest child, Phebe's Uncle Ellis, was only six years older than she was. Details of her young life have not come down to us, but she and Lydia, only about a year older, doubtless played together happily. Her Grandmother Phebe died when she was twelve. Uncle Giles moved to Ohio and she moved with her parents, brothers, and sisters to Caldwell County, Missouri, when she was fourteen.

Little Phebe Keziah Dodge died 29 June 1847, aged fifteen years and eight months. She is buried in Kingston Cemetery but her stone has not survived. Her grave is one of the oldest there.

DODGE FAMILY

Obadiah Morrill Dodge^8 was born 22 May 1833 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. He was 13 years old when he migrated with his parents to Missouri. In 1857 he married Nancy Long, born in 1840, and they had nine children. The amount writer knows is woefully sparse. Some from the family bible, three marriage records of his children, the census, and George's notes.

Writer would greatly appreciate any additions or corrections, for I am not at all satisfied with what I have but will print this, lacking better information. The 1870 census calls him a farmer. Another source says that same year he was hauling freight between Kingston and Hamilton. Obadiah died 23 March 1899, and Nancy died in 1910. Their graves are just north of his father's.

Children of Obadiah and Nancy (Long) Dodge:

Mary "Mollie"	bca 1858	m. 18 Apr 1878	Matthew Cannon.	4 sons.
Florence "Flossie"	1861	10 Mar 1883	(1) Jesse V. Allee	
		18	(2) Marsh	
Robert (7/3/63-12/7/29)		18	Nora McFall	
Alice	1865	18	Glaziner? White?	
Gertrude		18	C.W. Dolly	1 son lived
Frances "Fannie"	1868	1 Jan 1884	David West	3 children
Emma	1870	18	?Vert Rogers	1 child, lived KCKS
Nannie)		18	? Dr. White	
Nettie)	(1/8/76-9/27/37)	16 Jan 1901	Sam McMasters--1 son Sammie d.y. & they left farm, ran groc.store	

It appears that the census calls the 7th Emma but George says Effie. Gertrude, Nannie and Nettie are not on the 1870 census. Twins were born later. Would not be surprised if some of this is wrong.

Levi James Dodge^8 was born 30 April 1835 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. He was named for both of his grandfathers. James Pearce was long since deceased, having died in 1820. Maybe his other grandpa, Levi Dodge, was then ill for he died the following December, in New Hampshire. This was Dwight's second attempt to name a child for his father.

When Little Levi was "nine years, nine months, and three days old" (Bible records) on a February day he slipped, skidded on the ice, and fell backwards, fracturing his skull. He became comatose and fell asleep; and he never regained consciousness.

The family felt that if only they had forced him to walk around to stay alert and awake he would have lived, so for the next hundred years the Dodges, and later descendants Dunns and even Whites, never let anyone who became ill pass out, but marched the ill person around to keep him/her alive. The date of Levi's death was 3 February 1844 in Summerhill, New York.

DODGE FAMILY

Sarah C. Dodge[8] was born 30 April 1837 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. Writer cannot find anything in print about her, other than what the Dodge family Bible says. However, My mother, Ada (White) Yoakum, recalls being told that Sarah was married in her teens, about 1854 or 5, though she cannot remember the husband's name. Children came quickly and she soon had her hands full. There were probably at least four.

There is an old family story to the effect that when the oldest was tiny Sarah needed my great grandmother Emma, four years younger, to help watch the baby and keep away the flies while she did some other necessary chore. Flies were especially bad that summer. They bit and were filthy pests. Back before the Civil War people did not have adequate ways to control insects as we can now. Some netting may have existed, but mostly they could just fly in through the windows.

All food had to be kept covered to keep insects away. The only way to keep food cool was to put it down a cistern or spring in a bucket tied to a rope. Usually the bucket was wooden. They sometimes made preserves or pickles, or dried fruit or certain meats in the sun or over a fire. (Nowadays we use the fancy word dehydration.) They also had root cellars. Canning food was not yet in vogue and was not safe--that came later.

Getting back to the subject, Emma was a careless teenager about fourteen years or younger. She did not do a very good job of keeping the flies away but Sarah paid her 10¢. Back then 10¢ was worth what several dollars would be nowadays. Emma put the dime in her mouth and accidentally swallowed it. Divine retribution?

Sarah, her husband, and four young children migrated to California with Lydia Susannah (Dodge) DeHaven and her family in the late 1850's. Crossing the desert a grain of sand blew into the baby's eye (another, younger baby than the one mentioned before, who was now a little child.) The baby cried piteously, and they attempted frantically to dislodge the offending object from his little eye, which became infected. The baby lost that eye.

Sarah did correspond with the folks in Missouri. The years slid by to approximately 1911 or 1912 or so, when Emma was an elderly widow, about 70 years old, living alone in a tiny house on the west side of Kingston. One day there was a lot of talking about a hanging that was going to take place in Mirable--people still liked to attend those grizzly events back then. All that talk made her so jittery that she asked her grandson, Mamma's older brother Benjamin White, who was probably about twelve at the time, to stay overnight with her. As luck would have it, they did have plenty of excitement, and it is good Uncle Ben was with her. A fire broke out nearby, with a big conflagration. During all the ruckus, word came to Emma that her sister Sarah had died.

DODGE FAMILY

William O. Dodge[8] was born 7 January 1839 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. He was the childhood playmate of my great grandmother, Emma Adelia Dodge, two years younger, and she became a bit of a tomboy trying to keep up with him. She was not always successful, as another of those family stories illustrates.

Billy and Emma, when they were little, were always getting into mischief, and to show how brave they were, and how skillful, kept pulling pranks and daring each other to do "dangerous" stunts. Because of their personalities, older members of the family tried to keep a lid on their activity. Especially off limits was a creek with trees to climb and tempting grapevines. They were told never, never to go there without adult supervision and threatened with physical punishment or other dire consequences if they were ever caught near the place.

What kind of fun is that? The more forbidden, the more exciting and tempting. They were playing near the creek one day when the water was a little higher than usual, though it did not quite cover a big rock in the middle of the stream. There were long, sturdy grapevines hanging off a tree or so at that point, and they decided--or at least Billy did--that the other side of the creek looked inviting. They began swinging across the creek on the vines and Billy did quite well but Emma, being younger and not quite as skillful, and wearing a dress besides, had trouble hanging on and got stuck in the middle. She could not swim and was petrified. Billy had no choice but to go get help! What happened after that was left to the imagination.

One can tell from the story that the children were quite young, but whether that happened when she was five and he was seven, before they left the Finger Lakes area of New York, or later in Missouri is hard to figure out. It is true wild grapes sometimes grew along creekbeds in Caldwell County. On the other hand, the Finger Lakes area was, and still is, renowned for the fine wines it produces. Grapes grew in great abundance and the Dodge family may very well have made wine for their own consumption or for Communion services in Dwight's church. One reason I suspect so was the attitude of my Grandma, Mary Lydia (Emma's daughter), plus remembering that when the Dodges moved to Missouri in the 1840's, prohibition was an idea whose time had not yet come.

There was a time during our country's development when alcoholism was a national problem, especially because it was easier to take liquor to market than big loads of corn, but just after the Civil War, when Rev. Dwight Dodge organized that congregation, it most likely would have been considered almost sacreligious to use grape juice instead of wine. But during Prohibition that is exactly what they did, in that very building. But my Grandma always said she loved wine, and the way she said it we could tell she was thinking of a time long ago. Our whole family were

teetotalers. In fact, when I was little they did not dance, play cards, or do hardly anything. So one Christmas when my sister Billie and I were very young and daring adults, living and working in the city, we decided Grandma deserved a special treat. We gave her a nice bottle of wine. The startled look on people's faces was something to see, but Mamma later told me that Grandma enjoyed it. She drank all of it, a tiny bit at a time.

When the Civil War broke out in 1861, William O. Dodge, age 22, became a private (probably in the Cavalry) in the Union Army under Captain E. D. Johnson of Caldwell County. He was one of five men to be caught in an ambush as their company attempted to cross the Missouri River on horseback over a bridge at Blue Mill Landing in Clay County. (I think they mean near Liberty.) A group of Rebels, hiding under the bridge, "poured about 100 shot into the company."

Billy's right leg was so seriously wounded it partially incapacitated him the rest of his life, but four of his comrades were killed in that ambush. A photocopy of his captain's version of what happened, taken from a book of Caldwell County history, appears on another page.

Another page shows a list of Caldwell County "List of Pensioners on the Roll as of Jan. 1, 1888." The book it was copied from was an official government publication, published by act of the U. S. Congress the preceding year. It shows that William O. Dodge of Hamilton, Missouri, was receiving a government pension of $10.00 per month due to injuries received in a wound to the right leg. The date the pension started is unclear, it either commenced December 1882 or earlier, and was probably from at least partial disability due to the war injury. (Also interesting on that list is the fact that a Mrs. Laura Scott was receiving the standard $8.00 per month War of 1812 Widow's Pension. Was this lady related to the later George Dodge's mother? See bottom of page 88.)

Writer cannot resist including yet another page of illustrations, copied from George's book this time, typifying the frustrating "governmentese" forms received by Billy Dodge and later his widow, Hattie. I've run across that problem in various other family lines having nothing to do with the Dodges, in the 1880's. The system was especially frustrating for elderly War of 1812 widows trying to get the benefits they had coming, and have no doubt some of the poor souls simply gave up! So if you, the reader, receive some really garbled message from the IRS, Social Security, Medicare or whatever federal agency--remember, the government is good at that. They started practicing a long, long time ago. Wonder if it will be any better 100 years from now, or will new-found technology make it even worse?)

It seems that Billy applied for either an increased pension or some other benefit he was entitled to on 30 April 1901 but died

6 September 1901 before a determination was made--then later Hattie was penalized because he had not been re-examined by a Government physician. Perhaps he didn't know to do that, or was too sick to get to that other doctor--no matter, it was all his fault!! It is hard to know how this all came out. Presumably Hattie eventually received a pension, though maybe not as much as if she had been able to carry out some obscure instructions.

On one of those forms, the name R. L. Dodge appears as the attorney they assigned William O. Dodge. George scribbled on this that the man was no relation, and that he was father of Judge R. K. Dodge. Not mentioned was another early settler in Caldwell County in 1837 of before, Erastus Dodge. He seems to have had a number of descendants. One wonders whether he came west when the Walters family did, or the Mormons. Writer has been unable to find any connection with any of those people, and also searched the Dodge Genealogy by Dr. J. T. Dodge. He seems to have been completely unaware of them.

William could not have been completely disabled, at least in midlife, for it is said he was Hamilton city marshall for a while. He also ran a hack between Kingston and Hamilton. Perhaps he and his older brother Obadiah were associated in the latter venture, though no evidence proving that has surfaced.

The information about Billy's marriage(s) is from George, who says there were two marriages. The first was of very brief duration, possibly to a Melissa Alexander, though he seemed very unsure of that name. He was told by an older cousin, Laura Kautz, that Hattie, "being modern for her day," came between Billy and his wife. Presumably a divorce or annulment followed, after which the couple eloped and were married by a preacher at Tom Creek. "Just why there the family did not know."

Whereupon, he continues, "The family gave them the cold shoulder" until Dwight David's child, Silas--generation 10, George's older half brother--was injured in a "runaway." I presume they mean a spooked horse? Billy, who must have been nearby, quickly picked up the injured child and rushed him to his own home to treat his wounds. "After that the family, except for Eunice Gibson, buried the hatchet."

Writer wonders if the whole Dodge family shunned the couple. Though others might not have approved, I suspect the snubbers were mostly Silas and John's clique. Billy had only one child, Sallie. The 1870 census shows him living next door to Obadiah, whom they call a farmer, and beyond them were his mother, the widow Lydia Dodge, then "Samuel" (really Lemuel) Dunn and his wife, their sister Emma, plus all the children of the families. William, an "expres" driver age 30, wife Mariah age 21, and Sarah age 6. If her nickname was Hattie she was 25, for her birthday was 11 June 1845 (though her maiden name has not been learned).

Emma Adelia Dodge[8] the youngest child of Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge was born 9 March 1841 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York. Her favorite childhood playmate was brother Billy, whom she tried the best she could to keep up with. You've already read about the grapevine incident. Emma was definitely a young tomboy, also a skillful horsewoman. She loved horses and grew up in the saddle--sidesaddle, that is.

Back in the 1860's women and girls rode sidesaddle because of their long skirts and dresses. There were still occasions when hoop skirts were worn, especially for extra dressup affairs, though the hoops were taken off for riding horses. Many stories have been repeated, with awe, about Emma galloping her horse, riding sidesaddle, which would certainly require a great more skill than doing it in a regular saddle. Of course her parents did not approve of such antics but that does not seem to have stopped her. It appears she did not always confide in her elders, but do girls nowadays? Apparently she did all right in school, and took direction very well in one way--she was an exquisite seamstress. Her father being a minister undoubtedly broadened her social contacts.

Emma seems to have attracted several beaus growing up, but instead of telling her parents about all of them, she gigglingly confided in her girlfriends. People in Kingston loved to socialize. In the very early days many of the homes were of logs, with blankets or curtains often used instead of at least some of the walls. Such a custom certainly seems quaint nowadays, but for the early settlers, in the days before central heating, it was a very practical solution. Children peeking behind curtains would have been considered a grave social error, resulting in good spankings.

On one occasion a boy who had a crush on Emma was showing off, trying to get her attention. That boy obviously was not her choice of the moment. Encouraged by her girlfriends, she did her best to ignore him, so he became even more boisterous and fell behind one of the curtains. Emma was pretty embarrassed by the incident and her brothers teased her. She and her friends thought he was "just awful" for doing that, and pretty dumb besides.

Though there was really no scarcity of young men in the area, when Emma was about 18 she became attracted to an older widower in his late 30's, over twice her age, who joined her father's congregation in 1958, Dr. Lemuel Dunn.

Dwight and Lydia did not really know how to handle the situation. They could find no fault with the idealistic Dr. Dunn's character. Everyone knew he was a fine man, and brilliant besides. But they really had hoped she would find a nice young man her own age. Though they did not not encourage the relationship, they knew better than to forbid it, for Emma was a strong-minded girl.

Lemuel's first wife had been Sarah McCoy, born 7 September 1820, daughter of the late Rev. Rice McCoy, a pioneer Baptist preacher and his wife, Mahala (Pound) McCoy. Her father died in 1836. Lemuel had come to Washington County, Indiana, with his mother and some of his siblings a few years after the death of his father in rural Harrodsburg, Kentucky, in 1828. He and Sarah were married there on 14 November 1839. Both of them were 19 years old, a common age to get married in those years. Probably their oldest daughter, Mahala Cynthia, was born there before they moved to Ray County, Missouri, in 1841 where his older brother George, a young attorney, lived.

They emigrated to Missouri with the intention of owning a farm, but Lemuel went through a period of failing health and limited endurance which led him to seek medical treatment and also the study of medicine. Becoming a doctor in those years was a great deal simpler than it is today. After having completed an academic education--which he had already done in Kentucky--one studied medical textbooks for a while and convinced a competent practicing physician of one's basic medical knowledge, then entered into an apprenticeship program working in a doctor's office under his direct tutelage. When you learned enough you graduated. Writer does not know whom he studied under, but it was evidently in Grundy and Ray Counties, Missouri, likely in Richmond.

Upon graduation he moved to the area that became Kingston and hung out his shingle announcing his new medical practice. He had a special interest in the new town--his brother, Judge George Washington Dunn and two other men became responsible for establishing Kingston as the county seat, and even ordered the town laid out, according to the Caldwell County history, and as mentioned on a previous page.

The Dodges came from New York State to that same vicinity in that same year, 1846, and doubtless knew each other well. Dr. Dunn, who had to get around quite a bit to make housecalls, probably patronized Rev. Dwight Dodge's blacksmith business for household necessities and buggy parts, and so on while if someone was bad sick in the Dodge household the good doctor probably treated that person. Undoubtedly Dodge and Dunn children attended the same school. Both families were well liked and respected in the community.

The first courthouse, according to reports, was not much to look at, but at least it was better than the old school building they had used at Far West. The courthouse, built around 1843 according to a book about old courthouses, was 1½ stories high, constructed of logs, and stood on the south side of Main Street opposite the City Square, which may have been a sort of village green at first. It was replaced in either 1847 or 1854 (both dates are claimed by different sources) by a nicer two-story brick building on the public square facing south. It was used by civic as well as church groups for all kinds of meetings including Sunday services, not just for court.

There were no railroads west of the Mississippi yet. Dr. Dunn was anxious for his area to be one of the first served, so he made stump speeches, organized public meetings, and gathered signatures for a petition to the legislature to allow contact with the railroad companies about lines and depots in Caldwell County, enabling local farmers to market their surplus products. That activity led to his election in 1850 as Representative to the State Legislature on the Whig ticket, as the person best suited to carry out those goals. While in office he got in touch with the counties along the desired routes and persuaded them to grant alternate sections requested by the railroads for right-of-ways. Another bill he sponsored led the State of Missouri to apportion overflowed and wetlands to the various counties for their own use.

In 1852, having accomplished his goals in such a short time, he ran for the office of Clerk of Caldwell County Courts, a position he preferred because it required less traveling. Two years later he ran for Clerk of Circuit Courts as well, successfully holding down both jobs simultaneously. His office was in the brick courthouse described on the previous page. All of the courts and county offices were on the ground floor, the second floor being unfinished and presumably available for other uses.

Lemuel, his first wife Sarah McCoy Dunn and their eight children seem to have had a happy family life. The family was popular in the Kingston area. But on 24 September 1858 Sarah passed away, leaving a large, grieving family. Writer does not know this as a fact, but it is possible Sarah had sometimes attended Rev. Dwight Dodge's Christian Church services. He and her late father, Baptist missionary Rev. Rice McCoy would have had very similar religious views. She undoubtedly had fond memories of her father and anything that reminded her of him would have appealed to her. Most likely the services were in the courthouse, since they had not yet bought their church building. In good weather they also held revival or "camp meetings" just as her father had done.

Though Lemuel was raised a Presbyterian, he had not officially joined any church as an adult, though he became a Master Mason at the lodge in Mirable in 1857. (Later he was member and Past Master of Kingston Lodge No. 118, A.F. & A.M.) Seeking solace in religion after Sarah's death may have motivated Lemuel to attend services. In 1859 he officially joined the Christian Church.

Soon thereafter he began to notice the Reverend's perky and attractive daughter. Before long young Emma was "smitten." While it was true Lemuel had a big family with at least one daughter a little older than herself, he still cut a dashing figure at age 39. He was tall, dark and muscular (six feet tall, 200 lbs) with warm, friendly brown eyes and the soft accent of a Kentucky gentleman. No matter that there had never been any Southerners in the family up to then--that made him all the more fascinating.

Dwight and Lydia had very mixed emotions about their youngest child's interest in a man twice her age. Though he was older, on the other hand he was kind, financially secure, brilliant and idealistic. As far as character alone was concerned, one could not ask for better.

Whenever she could find any pretext at all--though sometimes it was pretty thin, Emma would put on a pretty dress and bonnet, and mount the sidesaddle of her horse, then ride properly into town, hoping she might "chance" to meet Lemuel. Like in the song in "My Fair Lady" -- "We walk down the street on the chance that we'll meet, and we meet but not really by chance."

Dr. Dunn's family all liked her, though some of the older ones may secretly have thought to themselves that she was a little young. They were too well bred to hurt anyone's feelings--a characteristic they shared with their father. Little four-year old Marion soon followed her around admiringly, and wanted her to play with him. One of the family stories says that Marion was given a pretty new pony by his father. He could hardly wait to show it to Emma, and how nicely he could ride. When she saw the little animal she told the boy how much she admired it. Sweet little Marion, wanting to please her, said, "You can have my pony if you want it." Emma hugged the little boy. She thought Marion was just adorable. She liked them all.

Children of Lemuel, Jr. and Sarah (McCoy) Dunn:

Cynthia (Mahala?)	b. 1840	m. 14 Mar 1875	Matison Owens ?
Rice Allen	08 Aug 1842	06 Sep 1866	Martha J. Stephens
Almira Catherine	07 Feb 1844	07 May 1865	Richard D. Sackman
Sarah Melinda	1846	25 Sep 1875	Joseph R. McClellan
Ann Hazeltine	15 Nov 1847	28 Jun 1866	Walker Miller
George Washington	1849		died young?
Lemuel III	1851		died young
Marion	26 Apr 1855		died age 18?

That first line may be wrong. A Mahala Dunn did marry as indicated. It would have been natural for Sarah to have named her first child Mahala for her mother as they named Rice for her father. My mother thought Cynthia married a Jones, which sounds like Owens if you say it fast. (The 1870 census does not show her with her father's family, nor does it show any Mr. Jones with wife Cynthia.) Mamma describes Cynthia as a high-strung, nervous lady who had a tendency to "flit about" but was pious and warm-hearted, very likeable. Sarah Melinda was always called "Sis," or "Aunt Sis." Almira was known as "Kate" and they ran a grocery store. Her husband was a Civil War vet. Rice married and had a nice family but the other boys may have died young, two before their father. Lemuel did, and Mamma thinks Marion died at age 18. This writer recalls visiting some of Grandma's half-sisters in Kingston as a child, but was too young to remember much. Would greatly appreciate any more information or corrections.

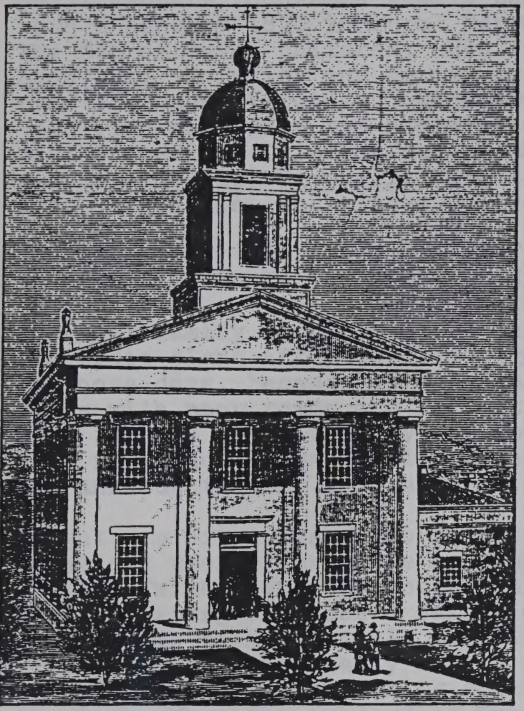
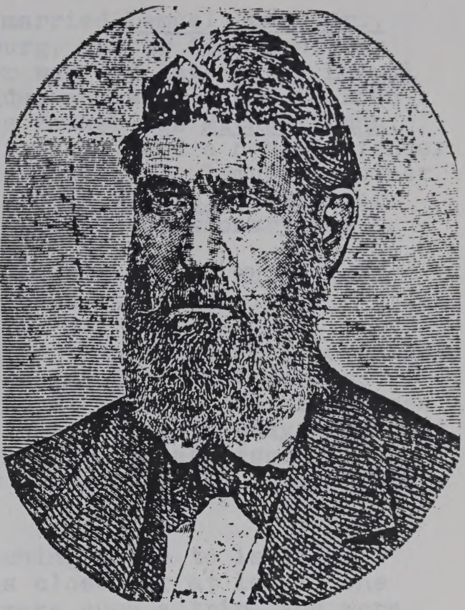
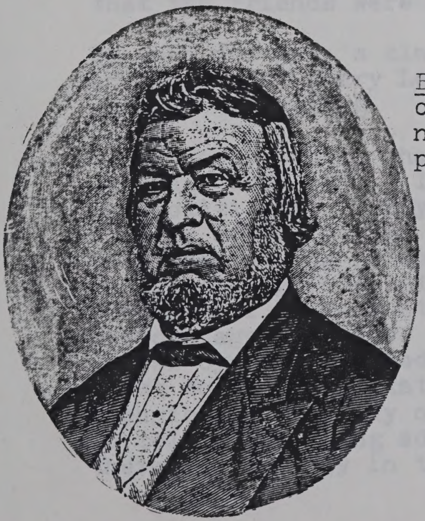


Fig. 1. Caldwell County Courthouse, 1860-1896.
(From: *Kingston Times*, Dec. 5, 1890.)



Above Right--Judge Lemuel Dunn
Above Left--The courthouse as it appeared when he practiced there.



Below--Lemuel's brother, Judge George W. Dunn of Richmond. The Dunn brothers' idealistic nature is typified by one of George's poems praising the American judicial system.

THE ERMINE AND THE HARP.

The Ermine's hue of spotless white
Invokes the wearer's earnest ken,
As law and equity unite
To shield and bless the sons of men;
For heaven-born Truth by right prevails
And baffles every crafty scheme,
When Justice holds the impartial scales
And Mercy's tears bedew the beam.

Fraud writhes beneath the Jurist's feet,
And Falsehood from his presence flies,
Twin sisters these that dare not meet
The piercing glances of his eyes;
And fetters that the strong apply
To feeble limbs are snapped in twain,
And wrong's foul emblems scattered lie
Around the bondman's broken chain.

O bring my Harp! Its chords shall send
Exultant notes to greet all ears,
Notes whose harmonies will blend
With music sounding from the spheres;
For right has triumphed over wrong,
And Justice holds unbroken sway;
The victory demands a song,
A sweet song that will live for aye.

DODGE FAMILY

On 31 January 1860 Emma Adelia Dodge married Lemuel Dunn, Jr., born 2 January 1820 in rural Harrodsburg, Mercer Co., Kentucky the 5th of seven children. His father was the late Major Lemuel Dunn, Sr., a fuller and farmer by trade, who went there in 1806 from Southwest Virginia. Major Dunn's father was Michael Dunn, "of Irish parentage but a native of Virginia, and a noble defender of the American Colonies during the Revolution." Lemuel's mother was Sarah (Read) Campbell, daughter of John Campbell, "also of Irish extraction and also a soldier in the Revolutionary War."

(In much later years, my Grandma, Mary Lydia (Dunn) White used to say, laughingly to us kids, "My Grandma was a Camel!")

The next family story is about an incident that occurred to Dwight and Lydia right after their youngest child, Emma, got married. In those days, because of the long time it took to travel between towns with poor roads and all, it was the custom to stay overnight with friends along the way. People in rural areas, especially, were inclined to feel isolated, happy for a break in the monotony, and anxious to hear all the news.

Dwight was often begged to go on preaching trips to isolated locations where there were no churches close, or at least none of that faith. They had occasion to make such a trip, and were especially eager to see a family of dear friends they were lonesome for, and to talk about old times. But when they got there, the friends were unexpectedly rather cool toward them. They were perplexed but started making small talk in an effort to break the ice. When the subject of Emma's marriage came up, they remarked that they guessed Lemuel, being older, would be very good to her. The friends snapped back, "Well, don't you think our son would have been good to her?" They were amazed and blurted out, "Why, we didn't even know he was interested!" After that the friends were cordial, just as before.

So much for Emma's claim that she would probably be an old maid if she didn't marry Lemuel. Obviously she didn't tell her parents everything.

We can only wonder what the first few years of Emma and Lemuel's marriage were like. It was told that they were active socially and politically. They were especially enthralled over attending a rally at St. Joseph to hear President Abraham Lincoln speak. They were strong Lincoln supporters, and very impressed. It would be especially interesting to know how she fit into that family composed of so many step-children, most of whom were not far from her own age. None of them were in a hurry to get married, either, unless Cynthia married earlier than writer has discovered. The first to marry was Kate, five years later. Though Emma was technically the lady of the house, she certainly was in no position to tell other young adults what to do. We are told, however, that there was harmony in that house, so they must have worked it out.

Culturally Emma and Lemuel and the others reflected their period in history. They were very prim and proper Victorians, with all the high-flown ideas and prudery of that era. I don't know if the Dodges behaved in that same way, but expect they did. While growing up, I used to think elderly members of my family got their exaggerated moralistic speech and behavior from the Dodge's Puritan or Pilgrim background, especially because Great-Great Grandpa Dwight Dodge was a minister. Now that I know more about history, I know better than to blame it on the Pilgrims--who were moralistic, it is true, but their speech as revealed in unexpurgated form in old court documents and so on was often so explicit as to be considered almost pornographic, actually banned from some libraries years ago. They unblushingly said exactly what they meant! No, the Victorians were simply products of their time, not an earlier time. Possibly the Dodges, and certainly the Dunns, were prim and proper Victorians.

Grandma, Mary Lydia (Dunn) White, often said she did not allow any rough talk, and certainly not swearing, in her house. She cited her father as a shining example. "Pa only swore once in his life, when he got so excited and angry he could not stop himself, and said 'Darn it!'"

Writer's sister and her husband, Allan and Billie Gene (Hansen) Pringle, as well as myself, have been searching for many years for more data on the early Dunns or Campbells. We are not at all satisfied with the amount learned, but we have discovered enough to know that Major Lemuel and Sarah Campbell Dunn set very high standards for themselves and their seven children, of whom George was third and Lemuel, Jr. fifth.

The parents were Presbyterians. The American Presbyterian Church, with help from people in Edinburgh, Scotland, stressed literacy from the very beginning, and tried to provide schools or teachers for their people even in the mountain valleys, because they wanted them to read the Bible to save their souls. That church founded Princeton in 1745. Later they sponsored Transylvania University in Kentucky where George got his law degree, though he had to clerk at a store in Nicholasville and also work as a tutor to get college money.

Major Dunn died in 1828 when Lemuel was only eight. His will was that of a prosperous but not rich man. Nevertheless, his inventory included a desk and 50 books! For those days that's a lot of books. In no way would a family like that be satisfied with uneducated sons, even though his premature death limited the available funds. The children received primary educations in their immediate neighborhood, then were sent to Cane Run Academy in Mercer County to finish their secondary education.

It appears that the Kentucky family probably participated in religious revivals and camp meetings so popular in their area in the early 1800's. Some of the Dunn's idealism may have been fostered in those surroundings. Perhaps the Campbells were even more involved in revivals than the Dunns. Both families called themselves "Irish" but it is rather obvious they were descended from Scots who settled in Ireland about the same time the Dodge's settled in America. Having lived there about a century or so, they considered themselves Irish. Campbell is certainly a Scotch name, though there were ancient Dunns in England and Ireland as well as Scotland, who all settled in Ulster.

As for the Major and Sarah, it is hard to know whether they, also acted like Victorians. I would guess they were born a little soon for that but had overly idealistic ideas that fostered their sons' way of thinking. Whatever the case, as you will see, Lemuel was too idealistic, civic-minded and trusting for the good of his widow and younger children.

Getting back to Lemuel, Jr. and Emma, they had been married only a little over two months--on 19 April 1860, to be exact--when a fire consumed the Courthouse at Kingston and almost all of the Court and County records he had cared for so carefully. He was crestfallen by the awful news. Worse yet, the authorities were pretty sure arsonists had set the blaze but they could not prove it, so the crime went unpunished.

In 1860, for the county's third courthouse $20,000 was appropriated for a new building to be completed by September 1861. It seems parts were utilized before the whole was completed. It was a temple-style building, "a large commodious two-story brick...with an old colonial portico in front...much admired for its antique and quaint architecture." It was built in much the same style as the Lafayette Co. Courthouse in Lexington and the Ray Co. Courthouse in Richmond (where Judge G. W. Dunn was on the bench) and constructed by the same builder. Photocopy of a drawing of that building appears on one of these pages. (PS--on 28 November 1896, several years after Lemuel's death, his records were again destroyed when this courthouse, also, was burned. The present courthouse was then constructed.)

When the Whig party disbanded, Great Grandpa became a Republican in spite of the fact that his brother was a Democrat. (Before I forget to mention it, each of them named a son for the other.) Lemuel and Emma admired Republican President Abraham Lincoln. They attended a rally in St. Joseph, Missouri, and heard him speak. That was a big occasion in their lives. Emma, an excellent seamstress, stitched a small flag to take to the rally. Mamma, Ada (White) Yoakum, still has the flag, which she keeps stored in a box, but it is now starting to crumble with age. When I was little I used to stare at it on those rare occasions when it was brought out. The stitching is the tiniest and most evenly

spaced I ever saw. It is so beautiful, I doubt that a microscope would reveal a flaw. This modern age has some marvellous things, but the time of needlework like that is long past. The age of machinery has spoiled us. Girls started to practice their needlework then practically in the cradle. The best examples were exquisite as a lovely painting. Her work was a joy to behold. I have seen other things she sewed, as well. The family said her sewing was as rapid as it was beautiful. Mamma used to watch her sew.

Emma and Lemuel did have a happy marriage. She enjoyed all the social activity and admired her handsome husband who not only was intelligent but always studying his books. While he was Clerk of Courts he made up his mind that eventually he wanted to become a lawyer.

Back then it evidently took longer to become a lawyer than a medical doctor--or it did in Lemuel's case. The way one became a physician back then was to first study one's books a while to acquire a theoretical background, and then go to work as an apprentice to some well established, experienced physician for a while. In spite of the ease with which he accomplished that, he must have had pretty good luck caring for patients. The reason I'm sure of that is that so many elderly people told me so around Kingston and at the church, who would just have said nothing had it been otherwise. Of course, nobody knew anything about germs in those days. That knowledge came after his death. The Dunns, nevertheless were fastidious people, so maybe keeping things so clean helped the healing.

Before this writer retired, I used to work in the court system in a large city. I've known a good many judges quite well. All of them, and every judge I ever heard of, was a well-respected lawyer first. Evidently in Civil War times that was not a requirement, for in 1862 Great Grandpa Dunn was elected Probate Judge on the Republican ticket, and served very successfully. He did have a pretty good background, however, for he had studied law for several years, always had his statute books with him for consultation, and it may also be supposed his previous experience as Clerk of Courts stood him in good stead.

In 1864 the couple's oldest son, Dwight Dunn, named for Emma's father, was born. Can you imagine the excitement in that home, with all the doting young aunts and uncles on hand. Do you think the little fellow was spoiled at first? I'm not sure whether it happened before or after the baby came, but during the Civil War Great Grandpa became a Curator of the University of Missouri, but he resigned in about a year, preferring to stay in Kingston and continue his studies to become an attorney. Being past the age when it was expected of him, he did not serve in the Civil War. I do not know if Rice, born in 1842, served or not. In 1865 Kate was married to veteran Richard Sackman.

King Edward and Baliol. You can skip this section if you like. This is just a little over-simplified sketch of what led up to the wars on the Scottish Borders in which Sir Peter Dodge became involved.

Edward I inherited the throne of England and Normandy in 1272, roughly 200 years after his ancestor, William the Conqueror, came over from Falaise. He was in Sicily on his way back from the last of the Crusades with King Louis IX of France when he received the news of his father's death. At age 33, he had already waged a successful battle to put down an uprising against his father, Henry III; journeyed to the Holy Land to fight; and toured the Mediterranean. He was in no great hurry to assume the crown he knew would be waiting for him or the burdens of the reforms his father had begun, knowing that this would be an enormous task if he wanted to do it right. It took him two years to get back.

Then Edward went about establishing a much improved system of justice and a complicated code of laws, also many governmental reforms which were quite remarkable when you consider that his grandfather had been the notorious King John who had been forced to sign the Magna Charta. (All of this was a few hundred years too early in history for anyone to consider the "little guy," however.) He did improve the government.

In a few years he was interrupted by a serious uprising of the restless Welsh, who had always resented having an English king as overlord. It took a long time and a lot of hard fighting to crush the resistance in Wales, during which time he had many huge and spectacular castles built, especially on the north seacoast of that country, to rule and to defend his conquests. Some of them are in remarkable condition to this day.

From the start, England wanted to own Scotland. Royal marriages helped maintain the peace for a long time, until little Margaret, "Maid of Norway" (1283-1290) became Queen of Scotland. The child was grand-daughter of King Alexander III of Scotland and a lineal descendant of William the Lion. Alexander named her heiress-presumptive of the throne when she was a year old. He died two years later and she was made queen under the regency. In an attempt to unite the two thrones, King Edward I of England arranged to have her betrothed to his own little son Edward II Prince of Wales, one year younger.

When Queen Margaret was seven years old, it was decided it would be nice for the young couple to meet, and that Margaret should journey to England to see her intended. Enroute she died of mysterious causes. Her death precipitated civil strife in Scotland over who should succeed her on the throne. There was a mad scramble of claimants.

King Edward and Baliol. You can skip this section if you like. This is just a little over-simplified sketch of what led up to the wars on the Scottish Borders in which Sir Peter Dodge became involved.

Edward I inherited the throne of England and Normandy in 1272, roughly 200 years after his ancestor, William the Conqueror, came over from Falaise. He was in Sicily on his way back from the last of the Crusades with King Louis IX of France when he received the news of his father's death. At age 33, he had already waged a successful battle to put down an uprising against his father, Henry III; journeyed to the Holy Land to fight; and toured the Mediterranean. He was in no great hurry to assume the crown he knew would be waiting for him or the burdens of the reforms his father had begun, knowing that this would be an enormous task if he wanted to do it right. It took him two years to get back.

Then Edward went about establishing a much improved system of justice and a complicated code of laws, also many governmental reforms which were quite remarkable when you consider that his grandfather had been the notorious King John who had been forced to sign the Magna Charta. (All of this was a few hundred years too early in history for anyone to consider the "little guy," however.) He did improve the government.

In a few years he was interrupted by a serious uprising of the restless Welsh, who had always resented having an English king as overlord. It took a long time and a lot of hard fighting to crush the resistance in Wales, during which time he had many huge and spectacular castles built, especially on the north seacoast of that country, to rule and to defend his conquests. Some of them are in remarkable condition to this day.

From the start, England wanted to own Scotland. Royal marriages helped maintain the peace for a long time, until little Margaret, "Maid of Norway" (1283-1290) became Queen of Scotland. The child was grand-daughter of King Alexander III of Scotland and a lineal descendant of William the Lion. Alexander named her heiress-presumptive of the throne when she was a year old. He died two years later and she was made queen under the regency. In an attempt to unite the two thrones, King Edward I of England arranged to have her betrothed to his own little son Edward II Prince of Wales, one year younger.

When Queen Margaret was seven years old, it was decided it would be nice for the young couple to meet, and that Margaret should journey to England to see her intended. Enroute she died of mysterious causes. Her death precipitated civil strife in Scotland over who should succeed her on the throne. There was a mad scramble of claimants.

King Edward and Baliol. You can skip this section if you like. This is just a little over-simplified sketch of what led up to the wars on the Scottish Borders in which Sir Peter Dodge became involved.

Edward I inherited the throne of England and Normandy in 1272, roughly 200 years after his ancestor, William the Conqueror, came over from Falaise. He was in Sicily on his way back from the last of the Crusades with King Louis IX of France when he received the news of his father's death. At age 33, he had already waged a successful battle to put down an uprising against his father, Henry III; journeyed to the Holy Land to fight; and toured the Mediterranean. He was in no great hurry to assume the crown he knew would be waiting for him or the burdens of the reforms his father had begun, knowing that this would be an enormous task if he wanted to do it right. It took him two years to get back.

Then Edward went about establishing a much improved system of justice and a complicated code of laws, also many governmental reforms which were quite remarkable when you consider that his grandfather had been the notorious King John who had been forced to sign the Magna Charta. (All of this was a few hundred years too early in history for anyone to consider the "little guy," however.) He did improve the government.

In a few years he was interrupted by a serious uprising of the restless Welsh, who had always resented having an English king as overlord. It took a long time and a lot of hard fighting to crush the resistance in Wales, during which time he had many huge and spectacular castles built, especially on the north seacoast of that country, to rule and to defend his conquests. Some of them are in remarkable condition to this day.

From the start, England wanted to own Scotland. Royal marriages helped maintain the peace for a long time, until little Margaret, "Maid of Norway" (1283-1290) became Queen of Scotland. The child was grand-daughter of King Alexander III of Scotland and a lineal descendant of William the Lion. Alexander named her heiress-presumptive of the throne when she was a year old. He died two years later and she was made queen under the regency. In an attempt to unite the two thrones, King Edward I of England arranged to have her betrothed to his own little son Edward II Prince of Wales, one year younger.

When Queen Margaret was seven years old, it was decided it would be nice for the young couple to meet, and that Margaret should journey to England to see her intended. Enroute she died of mysterious causes. Her death precipitated civil strife in Scotland over who should succeed her on the throne. There was a mad scramble of claimants.

King Edward and Baliol. You can skip this section if you like. This is just a little over-simplified sketch of what led up to the wars on the Scottish Borders in which Sir Peter Dodge became involved.

Edward I inherited the throne of England and Normandy in 1272, roughly 200 years after his ancestor, William the Conqueror, came over from Falaise. He was in Sicily on his way back from the last of the Crusades with King Louis IX of France when he received the news of his father's death. At age 33, he had already waged a successful battle to put down an uprising against his father, Henry III; journeyed to the Holy Land to fight; and toured the Mediterranean. He was in no great hurry to assume the crown he knew would be waiting for him or the burdens of the reforms his father had begun, knowing that this would be an enormous task if he wanted to do it right. It took him two years to get back.

Then Edward went about establishing a much improved system of justice and a complicated code of laws, also many governmental reforms which were quite remarkable when you consider that his grandfather had been the notorious King John who had been forced to sign the Magna Charta. (All of this was a few hundred years too early in history for anyone to consider the "little guy," however.) He did improve the government.

In a few years he was interrupted by a serious uprising of the restless Welsh, who had always resented having an English king as overlord. It took a long time and a lot of hard fighting to crush the resistance in Wales, during which time he had many huge and spectacular castles built, especially on the north seacoast of that country, to rule and to defend his conquests. Some of them are in remarkable condition to this day.

From the start, England wanted to own Scotland. Royal marriages helped maintain the peace for a long time, until little Margaret, "Maid of Norway" (1283-1290) became Queen of Scotland. The child was grand-daughter of King Alexander III of Scotland and a lineal descendant of William the Lion. Alexander named her heiress-presumptive of the throne when she was a year old. He died two years later and she was made queen under the regency. In an attempt to unite the two thrones, King Edward I of England arranged to have her betrothed to his own little son Edward II Prince of Wales, one year younger.

When Queen Margaret was seven years old, it was decided it would be nice for the young couple to meet, and that Margaret should journey to England to see her intended. Enroute she died of mysterious causes. Her death precipitated civil strife in Scotland over who should succeed her on the throne. There was a mad scramble of claimants.

King Edward and Baliol. You can skip this section if you like. This is just a little over-simplified sketch of what led up to the wars on the Scottish Borders in which Sir Peter Dodge became involved.

Edward I inherited the throne of England and Normandy in 1272, roughly 200 years after his ancestor, William the Conqueror, came over from Falaise. He was in Sicily on his way back from the last of the Crusades with King Louis IX of France when he received the news of his father's death. At age 33, he had already waged a successful battle to put down an uprising against his father, Henry III; journeyed to the Holy Land to fight; and toured the Mediterranean. He was in no great hurry to assume the crown he knew would be waiting for him or the burdens of the reforms his father had begun, knowing that this would be an enormous task if he wanted to do it right. It took him two years to get back.

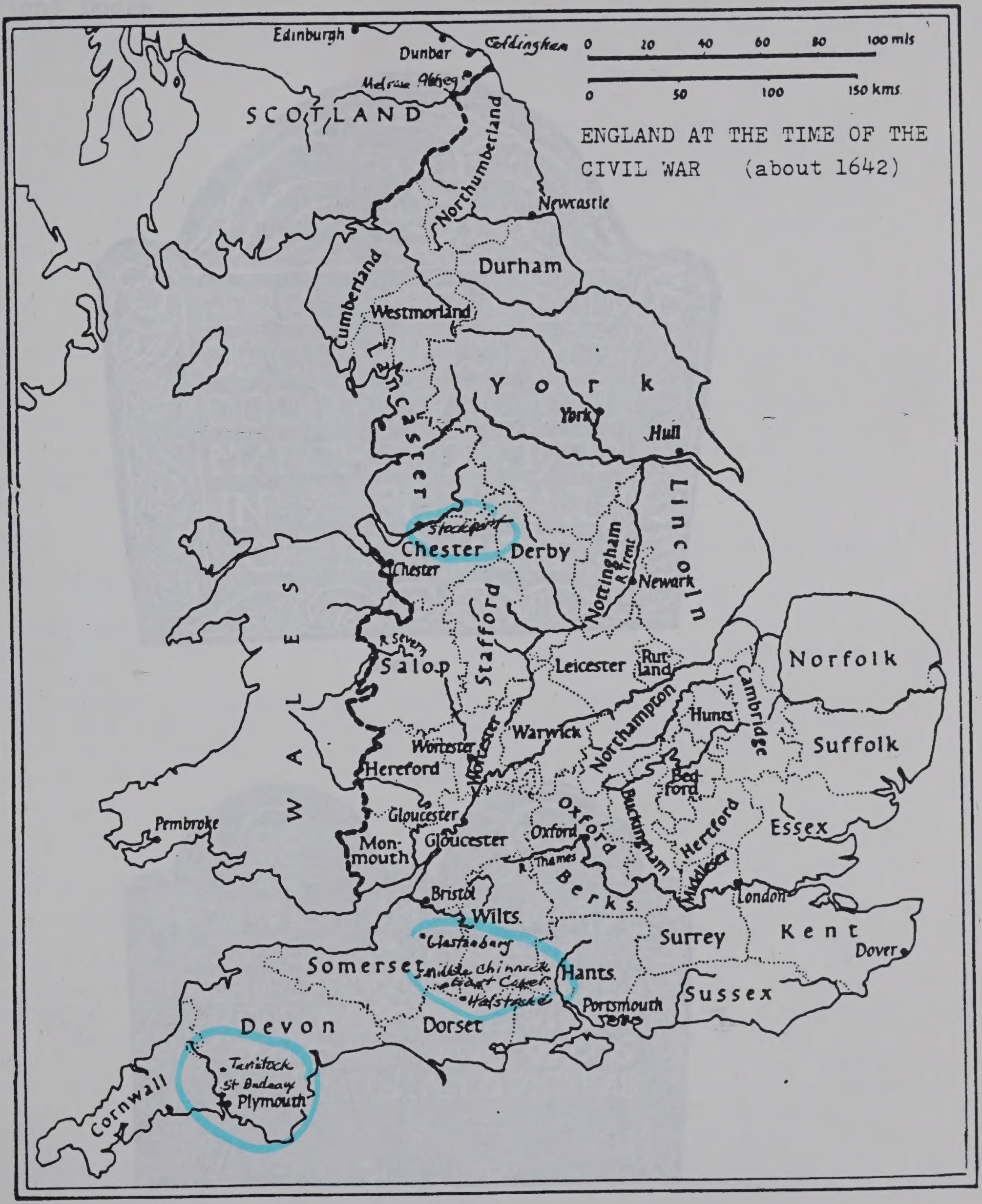
Then Edward went about establishing a much improved system of justice and a complicated code of laws, also many governmental reforms which were quite remarkable when you consider that his grandfather had been the notorious King John who had been forced to sign the Magna Charta. (All of this was a few hundred years too early in history for anyone to consider the "little guy," however.) He did improve the government.

In a few years he was interrupted by a serious uprising of the restless Welsh, who had always resented having an English king as overlord. It took a long time and a lot of hard fighting to crush the resistance in Wales, during which time he had many huge and spectacular castles built, especially on the north seacoast of that country, to rule and to defend his conquests. Some of them are in remarkable condition to this day.

From the start, England wanted to own Scotland. Royal marriages helped maintain the peace for a long time, until little Margaret, "Maid of Norway" (1283-1290) became Queen of Scotland. The child was grand-daughter of King Alexander III of Scotland and a lineal descendant of William the Lion. Alexander named her heiress-presumptive of the throne when she was a year old. He died two years later and she was made queen under the regency. In an attempt to unite the two thrones, King Edward I of England arranged to have her betrothed to his own little son Edward II Prince of Wales, one year younger.

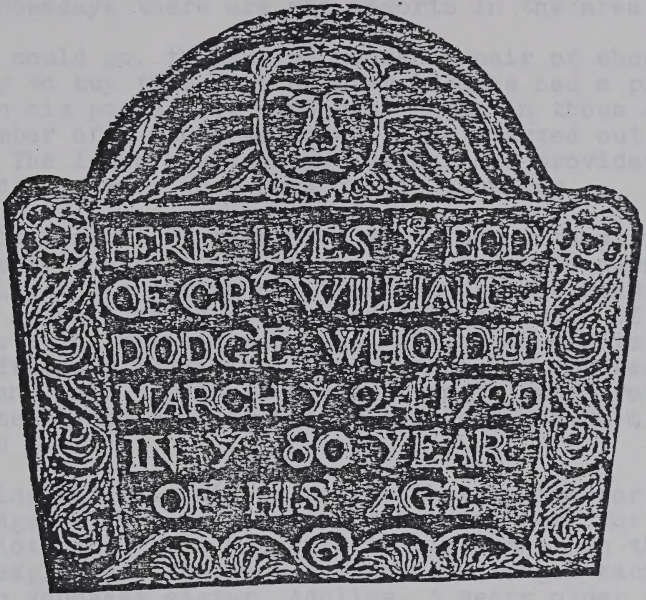
When Queen Margaret was seven years old, it was decided it would be nice for the young couple to meet, and that Margaret should journey to England to see her intended. Enroute she died of mysterious causes. Her death precipitated civil strife in Scotland over who should succeed her on the throne. There was a mad scramble of claimants.

Map showing communities associated with our Dodge Family in England.

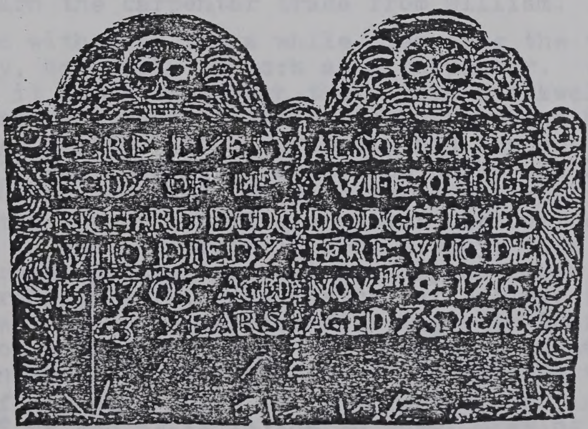

Edinburgh
Dunbar
Coldingham
Melrose Abbey
0 20 40 60 80 100 mls
0 50 100 150 kms
ENGLAND AT THE TIME OF THE CIVIL WAR (about 1642)
SCOTLAND
Northumberland
Newcastle
Durham
Cumberland
Westmorland
Lancaster
York
York
Hull
Lincoln
Stockport
Chester
Chester
Derby
Nottingham
R. Trent
Newark
WALES
R. Severn
Salop
Stafford
Leicester
Rutland
Norfolk
Cambridge
Hunts
Suffolk
Warwick
Northampton
Worcester
Worcester
Hereford
Bedford
Pembroke
Gloucester
Gloucester
Monmouth
Oxford
Oxford
Buckingham
Hertford
Essex
R. Thames
Middlesex
Berks.
London
Bristol
Wilts.
Kent
Dover
Surrey
Glastonbury
Somerset
Middle Chinnock
East Coker
Halstocke
Hants
Sussex
Portsmouth
Dorset
Devon
Tavistock
St Budeaux
Plymouth
Cornwall

DODGE FAMILY

Below are photostatic copies of three gravestones. The top stone is that of Captain William Dodge, son of William the Immigrant. Beneath are the stones of our ancestors, Richard II and Mary (Eaton) Dodge.


HERE LYES Y BODY
OF CPT WILLIAM
DODGE WHO DIED
MARCH Y 24 1720
IN Y 80 YEAR
OF HIS AGE

BEVERLY.


HERE LYES Y
BODY OF MR
RICHARD DODG
WHO DIED Y
15 1705 AGED
63 YEARS
ALSO MARY
WIFE OF RICH
DODGE LYES
HERE WHO DIE
NOV 2 1716
AGED 75 YEAR

NORTH BEVERLY.

Ellis Dodge, the youngest, born 7 May 1825 in Croydon, NH, reported that the death of his father in December 1835 when he was ten years old, left him without any means of support; and he had to go live with his oldest sister, Charlotte (Mrs. John Stockwell) at Rumney, NH, which is situated near a stream on the south slope of Carr Mountain of the White Mountains, a part of the Appalachian Chain. (Nowadays there are ski resorts in the area.)

Before he could go, though, he needed a pair of shoes and had to earn money to buy them. By October 1836 he had a pair of shoes and 50¢ in his pocket for expenses. (50¢ in those days would be what a number of $ would be today!) He started out for Rumney on foot. The lunch his mother, Keziah, had provided "and his scanty clothes" were in a pack on his shoulder.

He had walked about 25 miles the first day without serious difficulty but the seriousness of his predicament began to dawn upon him the next morning while eating his breakfast by the roadside. He pushed on as well as he could; and in the middle of the afternoon a lady, noticing him as he passed, called to him to stop and made numerous friendly inquiries, after which she offered him a bowl of bread and milk. That gave him strength (and probably also encouragement) and enabled him to complete his 50-mile journey about 7:00 p.m.

After living with his sister and brother-in-law for three years, Ellis engaged with a neighboring farmer to work for a year for $25 and clothing. What happened to his mother in the meantime has not been explained. Somehow she managed to get back to Palmer MA, taking his youngest sister, Adeline, 5 years older than he, along.

About December 1840 Adeline, having just married her distant cousin, William Dodge, in Palmer, was visiting Rumney on their wedding trip. They decided to take Ellis home with them so that he could learn the carpenter trade from William.

Ellis stayed with them for a while, learning the trade, and then went to Troy, New York, to work as a carpenter. (Though he did not say so, it seems as though there were Stockwell families in Troy who were relatives of Adaline's husband and his brother Freeman Dodge's wife.) So he probably had someone to stay with at first. On 30 May 1846 he married Miss Cook, who later died. On 1 Nov 1849 he commenced working for a railroad line as car builder, after a year becoming a master car builder. Then he transferred to another train line at Albany; then to the Troy & Boston Railroad, getting promotions. By November 1855 he was living in Brooklyn working as master car builder for the Brooklyn Street Railway Co.. He married Miss Wager in 1862. There were no children from either marriage. In 1869 he returned to Troy. This talented man took out four patents on inventions very useful to railroads of his day. Like so many Dodges, he finally returned to Palmer where he was still living in 1898, drawing royalties.

Perhaps these youngsters, ages 18 and 19, each came west separately seeking opportunity and were delighted to meet again. Several Dodge families were already in the area. No one has said whether they were distant cousins or if Dwight made contact with them. The prosperous Finger Lakes region was already settled, this being in the military district set aside for land grants for Revolutionary War veterans.

The "History of Cayuga County" says that the Indians who had previously occupied the Finger Lakes region had been "civilized" for centuries to the point where they lived in longhouse villages, not teepees, and planted fine fields of squash, corn, and vegetables, that they were not such fierce warriors as the tribes who roamed the eastern part of the state. The land was already cleared when the white settlers got there.

It was easy to get to that place from New Hampshire. A picture on the next page shows boats on the Mohawk River in 1810. They came seven years later when transportation was even better. Originally the only really difficult part of the journey was caused by swift currents at the juncture of the Mohawk and the Hudson, necessitating a very long portage. To reach the Hudson from New Hampshire, most travelers took a pretty good road going east-west across far southern Vermont, widened from an old Indian trail that had been used for centuries. Highway 9 now approximates that route. The reason to think they went that way is that most everybody did.

So, perhaps Dwight and Susanna met again in Sempronius, fell in love, and got married--but ancestor sleuths have to be nosy people, otherwise we would never learn anything. It looks to me as though Dwight and the neighbor girl eloped. Adding to that suspicion is the fact that eight months later their oldest child, Silas Dwight, was born in Sempronius, but when the next child, Lucy, came they were back in Newport, New Hampshire. That suggests probably her parents were there and she wanted to be near them when the baby came, especially if the first birth was slightly premature. The family does show up on the 1820 New Hampshire census. They were back in New York soon after. Little Levi Freeman Dodge was born in Sempronius but died in 1822, aged one year and three days.

About this period in time, exact date unknown, Dwight became a minister of the Gospel. He soon had a sizeable congregation. Susannah's health seems to have been delicate, but they had two more children, John Freeman in 1824 and then Lydia Susanna on 13 July 1830. Three weeks and two days later Susannah died - on 5 August 1830, age 31. She probably died of pueperal fever or a body damaged in previous child bearing. People still did not know about germs in those days. Even if they had they might not have been able to save her life.

Perhaps these youngsters, ages 18 and 19, each came west separately seeking opportunity and were delighted to meet again. Several Dodge families were already in the area. No one has said whether they were distant cousins or if Dwight made contact with them. The prosperous Finger Lakes region was already settled, this being in the military district set aside for land grants for Revolutionary War veterans.

The "History of Cayuga County" says that the Indians who had previously occupied the Finger Lakes region had been "civilized" for centuries to the point where they lived in longhouse villages, not teepees, and planted fine fields of squash, corn, and vegetables, that they were not such fierce warriors as the tribes who roamed the eastern part of the state. The land was already cleared when the white settlers got there.

It was easy to get to that place from New Hampshire. A picture on the next page shows boats on the Mohawk River in 1810. They came seven years later when transportation was even better. Originally the only really difficult part of the journey was caused by swift currents at the juncture of the Mohawk and the Hudson, necessitating a very long portage. To reach the Hudson from New Hampshire, most travelers took a pretty good road going east-west across far southern Vermont, widened from an old Indian trail that had been used for centuries. Highway 9 now approximates that route. The reason to think they went that way is that most everybody did.

So, perhaps Dwight and Susanna met again in Sempronius, fell in love, and got married--but ancestor sleuths have to be nosy people, otherwise we would never learn anything. It looks to me as though Dwight and the neighbor girl eloped. Adding to that suspicion is the fact that eight months later their oldest child, Silas Dwight, was born in Sempronius, but when the next child, Lucy, came they were back in Newport, New Hampshire. That suggests probably her parents were there and she wanted to be near them when the baby came, especially if the first birth was slightly premature. The family does show up on the 1820 New Hampshire census. They were back in New York soon after. Little Levi Freeman Dodge was born in Sempronius but died in 1822, aged one year and three days.

About this period in time, exact date unknown, Dwight became a minister of the Gospel. He soon had a sizeable congregation. Susannah's health seems to have been delicate, but they had two more children, John Freeman in 1824 and then Lydia Susanna on 13 July 1830. Three weeks and two days later Susannah died - on 5 August 1830, age 31. She probably died of pueperal fever or a body damaged in previous child bearing. People still did not know about germs in those days. Even if they had they might not have been able to save her life.

Perhaps these youngsters, ages 18 and 19, each came west separately seeking opportunity and were delighted to meet again. Several Dodge families were already in the area. No one has said whether they were distant cousins or if Dwight made contact with them. The prosperous Finger Lakes region was already settled, this being in the military district set aside for land grants for Revolutionary War veterans.

The "History of Cayuga County" says that the Indians who had previously occupied the Finger Lakes region had been "civilized" for centuries to the point where they lived in longhouse villages, not teepees, and planted fine fields of squash, corn, and vegetables, that they were not such fierce warriors as the tribes who roamed the eastern part of the state. The land was already cleared when the white settlers got there.

It was easy to get to that place from New Hampshire. A picture on the next page shows boats on the Mohawk River in 1810. They came seven years later when transportation was even better. Originally the only really difficult part of the journey was caused by swift currents at the juncture of the Mohawk and the Hudson, necessitating a very long portage. To reach the Hudson from New Hampshire, most travelers took a pretty good road going east-west across far southern Vermont, widened from an old Indian trail that had been used for centuries. Highway 9 now approximates that route. The reason to think they went that way is that most everybody did.

So, perhaps Dwight and Susanna met again in Sempronius, fell in love, and got married--but ancestor sleuths have to be nosy people, otherwise we would never learn anything. It looks to me as though Dwight and the neighbor girl eloped. Adding to that suspicion is the fact that eight months later their oldest child, Silas Dwight, was born in Sempronius, but when the next child, Lucy, came they were back in Newport, New Hampshire. That suggests probably her parents were there and she wanted to be near them when the baby came, especially if the first birth was slightly premature. The family does show up on the 1820 New Hampshire census. They were back in New York soon after. Little Levi Freeman Dodge was born in Sempronius but died in 1822, aged one year and three days.

About this period in time, exact date unknown, Dwight became a minister of the Gospel. He soon had a sizeable congregation. Susannah's health seems to have been delicate, but they had two more children, John Freeman in 1824 and then Lydia Susanna on 13 July 1830. Three weeks and two days later Susannah died - on 5 August 1830, age 31. She probably died of pueperal fever or a body damaged in previous child bearing. People still did not know about germs in those days. Even if they had they might not have been able to save her life.

DODGE FAMILY

When Silas first came west to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1844 and his parents in 1846, they settled in what was then called Blythe Township, named for an old pioneer, Riley Blythe, who had hunted and trapped along the branches of Shoal Creek long before. At first the county seat had been at a Mormon settlement called "Far West," and continued to be there until after 1843.

The culture of the Mormons and that of the other settlers clashed to a point which inevitably led to bloodshed. Early history of the Mormons is remindful in a way of the first Puritans of early New England back in the 1630's or so. Just like the Puritans, the Mormons were absolutely convinced theirs was the only way to salvation. They proselytized vigorously and they insisted on governing any area they were situated in, especially if they were a majority.

The Mormon movement started in New York State among people with Yankee background, though others had joined by the 1840's. The bulk of early Missouri settlers were of very different culture, such as the original French or else southerners who had come there through Kentucky, Tennessee, and contiguous states. Those people were distrustful of Yankees to start with. The new religion they considered false, distasteful, even evil. Both sides became bellicose whereupon the Mormons were beset by angry mobs even before the Missouri governor finally called out the troops to drive them out. The manner in which they accomplished the task left something a great deal better to be desired. The refugees finally retraced their steps eastward to the Mississippi River where they established a settlement in Hancock County, Illinois, called Nauvoo. As with most forced evacuations, a few stragglers stayed behind. Son John Freeman Dodge married the daughter of one such family, though most Mormons were gone when the Dodges came.

Far West was in the western part of the county. As the whole area filled up, the population center started to shift eastward so that it was felt necessary to move the county seat to a more central location. The Missouri legislature selected a committee to find a site and lay the groundwork. Several men were chosen, but it is said that the actual work was accomplished by only three of them, Robert D. Ray of Carroll County, Milford Donaho of Daviess County, and George W. Dunn of Ray County. (It just so happens that the latter of the three, Judge George Washington Dunn of Richmond, MO, later became brother-in-law of the youngest Dodge daughter Emma, our ancestor, when she married his brother. More of that later.)

The men preferred a site for the county seat slightly south of that eventually chosen, near Log Creek, but the owner refused to yield the land. After much deliberation, they finally chose the present site where the town square now stands, and Kingston was incorporated as county seat by a special act of the state legislature later. They named it for Governor King.

DODGE FAMILY

When Silas first came west to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1844 and his parents in 1846, they settled in what was then called Blythe Township, named for an old pioneer, Riley Blythe, who had hunted and trapped along the branches of Shoal Creek long before. At first the county seat had been at a Mormon settlement called "Far West," and continued to be there until after 1843.

The culture of the Mormons and that of the other settlers clashed to a point which inevitably led to bloodshed. Early history of the Mormons is remindful in a way of the first Puritans of early New England back in the 1630's or so. Just like the Puritans, the Mormons were absolutely convinced theirs was the only way to salvation. They proselytized vigorously and they insisted on governing any area they were situated in, especially if they were a majority.

The Mormon movement started in New York State among people with Yankee background, though others had joined by the 1840's. The bulk of early Missouri settlers were of very different culture, such as the original French or else southerners who had come there through Kentucky, Tennessee, and contiguous states. Those people were distrustful of Yankees to start with. The new religion they considered false, distasteful, even evil. Both sides became bellicose whereupon the Mormons were beset by angry mobs even before the Missouri governor finally called out the troops to drive them out. The manner in which they accomplished the task left something a great deal better to be desired. The refugees finally retraced their steps eastward to the Mississippi River where they established a settlement in Hancock County, Illinois, called Nauvoo. As with most forced evacuations, a few stragglers stayed behind. Son John Freeman Dodge married the daughter of one such family, though most Mormons were gone when the Dodges came.

Far West was in the western part of the county. As the whole area filled up, the population center started to shift eastward so that it was felt necessary to move the county seat to a more central location. The Missouri legislature selected a committee to find a site and lay the groundwork. Several men were chosen, but it is said that the actual work was accomplished by only three of them, Robert D. Ray of Carroll County, Milford Donaho of Daviess County, and George W. Dunn of Ray County. (It just so happens that the latter of the three, Judge George Washington Dunn of Richmond, MO, later became brother-in-law of the youngest Dodge daughter Emma, our ancestor, when she married his brother. More of that later.)

The men preferred a site for the county seat slightly south of that eventually chosen, near Log Creek, but the owner refused to yield the land. After much deliberation, they finally chose the present site where the town square now stands, and Kingston was incorporated as county seat by a special act of the state legislature later. They named it for Governor King.

DODGE FAMILY

When Silas first came west to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1844 and his parents in 1846, they settled in what was then called Blythe Township, named for an old pioneer, Riley Blythe, who had hunted and trapped along the branches of Shoal Creek long before. At first the county seat had been at a Mormon settlement called "Far West," and continued to be there until after 1843.

The culture of the Mormons and that of the other settlers clashed to a point which inevitably led to bloodshed. Early history of the Mormons is remindful in a way of the first Puritans of early New England back in the 1630's or so. Just like the Puritans, the Mormons were absolutely convinced theirs was the only way to salvation. They proselytized vigorously and they insisted on governing any area they were situated in, especially if they were a majority.

The Mormon movement started in New York State among people with Yankee background, though others had joined by the 1840's. The bulk of early Missouri settlers were of very different culture, such as the original French or else southerners who had come there through Kentucky, Tennessee, and contiguous states. Those people were distrustful of Yankees to start with. The new religion they considered false, distasteful, even evil. Both sides became bellicose whereupon the Mormons were beset by angry mobs even before the Missouri governor finally called out the troops to drive them out. The manner in which they accomplished the task left something a great deal better to be desired. The refugees finally retraced their steps eastward to the Mississippi River where they established a settlement in Hancock County, Illinois, called Nauvoo. As with most forced evacuations, a few stragglers stayed behind. Son John Freeman Dodge married the daughter of one such family, though most Mormons were gone when the Dodges came.

Far West was in the western part of the county. As the whole area filled up, the population center started to shift eastward so that it was felt necessary to move the county seat to a more central location. The Missouri legislature selected a committee to find a site and lay the groundwork. Several men were chosen, but it is said that the actual work was accomplished by only three of them, Robert D. Ray of Carroll County, Milford Donaho of Daviess County, and George W. Dunn of Ray County. (It just so happens that the latter of the three, Judge George Washington Dunn of Richmond, MO, later became brother-in-law of the youngest Dodge daughter Emma, our ancestor, when she married his brother. More of that later.)

The men preferred a site for the county seat slightly south of that eventually chosen, near Log Creek, but the owner refused to yield the land. After much deliberation, they finally chose the present site where the town square now stands, and Kingston was incorporated as county seat by a special act of the state legislature later. They named it for Governor King.

DODGE FAMILY

When Silas first came west to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1844 and his parents in 1846, they settled in what was then called Blythe Township, named for an old pioneer, Riley Blythe, who had hunted and trapped along the branches of Shoal Creek long before. At first the county seat had been at a Mormon settlement called "Far West," and continued to be there until after 1843.

The culture of the Mormons and that of the other settlers clashed to a point which inevitably led to bloodshed. Early history of the Mormons is remindful in a way of the first Puritans of early New England back in the 1630's or so. Just like the Puritans, the Mormons were absolutely convinced theirs was the only way to salvation. They proselytized vigorously and they insisted on governing any area they were situated in, especially if they were a majority.

The Mormon movement started in New York State among people with Yankee background, though others had joined by the 1840's. The bulk of early Missouri settlers were of very different culture, such as the original French or else southerners who had come there through Kentucky, Tennessee, and contiguous states. Those people were distrustful of Yankees to start with. The new religion they considered false, distasteful, even evil. Both sides became bellicose whereupon the Mormons were beset by angry mobs even before the Missouri governor finally called out the troops to drive them out. The manner in which they accomplished the task left something a great deal better to be desired. The refugees finally retraced their steps eastward to the Mississippi River where they established a settlement in Hancock County, Illinois, called Nauvoo. As with most forced evacuations, a few stragglers stayed behind. Son John Freeman Dodge married the daughter of one such family, though most Mormons were gone when the Dodges came.

Far West was in the western part of the county. As the whole area filled up, the population center started to shift eastward so that it was felt necessary to move the county seat to a more central location. The Missouri legislature selected a committee to find a site and lay the groundwork. Several men were chosen, but it is said that the actual work was accomplished by only three of them, Robert D. Ray of Carroll County, Milford Donaho of Daviess County, and George W. Dunn of Ray County. (It just so happens that the latter of the three, Judge George Washington Dunn of Richmond, MO, later became brother-in-law of the youngest Dodge daughter Emma, our ancestor, when she married his brother. More of that later.)

The men preferred a site for the county seat slightly south of that eventually chosen, near Log Creek, but the owner refused to yield the land. After much deliberation, they finally chose the present site where the town square now stands, and Kingston was incorporated as county seat by a special act of the state legislature later. They named it for Governor King.

DODGE FAMILY

When Silas first came west to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1844 and his parents in 1846, they settled in what was then called Blythe Township, named for an old pioneer, Riley Blythe, who had hunted and trapped along the branches of Shoal Creek long before. At first the county seat had been at a Mormon settlement called "Far West," and continued to be there until after 1843.

The culture of the Mormons and that of the other settlers clashed to a point which inevitably led to bloodshed. Early history of the Mormons is remindful in a way of the first Puritans of early New England back in the 1630's or so. Just like the Puritans, the Mormons were absolutely convinced theirs was the only way to salvation. They proselytized vigorously and they insisted on governing any area they were situated in, especially if they were a majority.

The Mormon movement started in New York State among people with Yankee background, though others had joined by the 1840's. The bulk of early Missouri settlers were of very different culture, such as the original French or else southerners who had come there through Kentucky, Tennessee, and contiguous states. Those people were distrustful of Yankees to start with. The new religion they considered false, distasteful, even evil. Both sides became bellicose whereupon the Mormons were beset by angry mobs even before the Missouri governor finally called out the troops to drive them out. The manner in which they accomplished the task left something a great deal better to be desired. The refugees finally retraced their steps eastward to the Mississippi River where they established a settlement in Hancock County, Illinois, called Nauvoo. As with most forced evacuations, a few stragglers stayed behind. Son John Freeman Dodge married the daughter of one such family, though most Mormons were gone when the Dodges came.

Far West was in the western part of the county. As the whole area filled up, the population center started to shift eastward so that it was felt necessary to move the county seat to a more central location. The Missouri legislature selected a committee to find a site and lay the groundwork. Several men were chosen, but it is said that the actual work was accomplished by only three of them, Robert D. Ray of Carroll County, Milford Donaho of Daviess County, and George W. Dunn of Ray County. (It just so happens that the latter of the three, Judge George Washington Dunn of Richmond, MO, later became brother-in-law of the youngest Dodge daughter Emma, our ancestor, when she married his brother. More of that later.)

The men preferred a site for the county seat slightly south of that eventually chosen, near Log Creek, but the owner refused to yield the land. After much deliberation, they finally chose the present site where the town square now stands, and Kingston was incorporated as county seat by a special act of the state legislature later. They named it for Governor King.

DODGE FAMILY

When Silas first came west to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1844 and his parents in 1846, they settled in what was then called Blythe Township, named for an old pioneer, Riley Blythe, who had hunted and trapped along the branches of Shoal Creek long before. At first the county seat had been at a Mormon settlement called "Far West," and continued to be there until after 1843.

The culture of the Mormons and that of the other settlers clashed to a point which inevitably led to bloodshed. Early history of the Mormons is remindful in a way of the first Puritans of early New England back in the 1630's or so. Just like the Puritans, the Mormons were absolutely convinced theirs was the only way to salvation. They proselytized vigorously and they insisted on governing any area they were situated in, especially if they were a majority.

The Mormon movement started in New York State among people with Yankee background, though others had joined by the 1840's. The bulk of early Missouri settlers were of very different culture, such as the original French or else southerners who had come there through Kentucky, Tennessee, and contiguous states. Those people were distrustful of Yankees to start with. The new religion they considered false, distasteful, even evil. Both sides became bellicose whereupon the Mormons were beset by angry mobs even before the Missouri governor finally called out the troops to drive them out. The manner in which they accomplished the task left something a great deal better to be desired. The refugees finally retraced their steps eastward to the Mississippi River where they established a settlement in Hancock County, Illinois, called Nauvoo. As with most forced evacuations, a few stragglers stayed behind. Son John Freeman Dodge married the daughter of one such family, though most Mormons were gone when the Dodges came.

Far West was in the western part of the county. As the whole area filled up, the population center started to shift eastward so that it was felt necessary to move the county seat to a more central location. The Missouri legislature selected a committee to find a site and lay the groundwork. Several men were chosen, but it is said that the actual work was accomplished by only three of them, Robert D. Ray of Carroll County, Milford Donaho of Daviess County, and George W. Dunn of Ray County. (It just so happens that the latter of the three, Judge George Washington Dunn of Richmond, MO, later became brother-in-law of the youngest Dodge daughter Emma, our ancestor, when she married his brother. More of that later.)

The men preferred a site for the county seat slightly south of that eventually chosen, near Log Creek, but the owner refused to yield the land. After much deliberation, they finally chose the present site where the town square now stands, and Kingston was incorporated as county seat by a special act of the state legislature later. They named it for Governor King.

DODGE FAMILY

When Silas first came west to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1844 and his parents in 1846, they settled in what was then called Blythe Township, named for an old pioneer, Riley Blythe, who had hunted and trapped along the branches of Shoal Creek long before. At first the county seat had been at a Mormon settlement called "Far West," and continued to be there until after 1843.

The culture of the Mormons and that of the other settlers clashed to a point which inevitably led to bloodshed. Early history of the Mormons is remindful in a way of the first Puritans of early New England back in the 1630's or so. Just like the Puritans, the Mormons were absolutely convinced theirs was the only way to salvation. They proselytized vigorously and they insisted on governing any area they were situated in, especially if they were a majority.

The Mormon movement started in New York State among people with Yankee background, though others had joined by the 1840's. The bulk of early Missouri settlers were of very different culture, such as the original French or else southerners who had come there through Kentucky, Tennessee, and contiguous states. Those people were distrustful of Yankees to start with. The new religion they considered false, distasteful, even evil. Both sides became bellicose whereupon the Mormons were beset by angry mobs even before the Missouri governor finally called out the troops to drive them out. The manner in which they accomplished the task left something a great deal better to be desired. The refugees finally retraced their steps eastward to the Mississippi River where they established a settlement in Hancock County, Illinois, called Nauvoo. As with most forced evacuations, a few stragglers stayed behind. Son John Freeman Dodge married the daughter of one such family, though most Mormons were gone when the Dodges came.

Far West was in the western part of the county. As the whole area filled up, the population center started to shift eastward so that it was felt necessary to move the county seat to a more central location. The Missouri legislature selected a committee to find a site and lay the groundwork. Several men were chosen, but it is said that the actual work was accomplished by only three of them, Robert D. Ray of Carroll County, Milford Donaho of Daviess County, and George W. Dunn of Ray County. (It just so happens that the latter of the three, Judge George Washington Dunn of Richmond, MO, later became brother-in-law of the youngest Dodge daughter Emma, our ancestor, when she married his brother. More of that later.)

The men preferred a site for the county seat slightly south of that eventually chosen, near Log Creek, but the owner refused to yield the land. After much deliberation, they finally chose the present site where the town square now stands, and Kingston was incorporated as county seat by a special act of the state legislature later. They named it for Governor King.

This section will attempt to tell about all of Rev. Dwight Dodge's children by the two wives, starting with the eldest, Silas from whom our cousin George Dodge, who shared so much information, was descended.

It is beyond the scope of this book to go into detail about all of the Caldwell County descendants of Dwight's children, except that out of gratitude to George his line will be shown. Some people named Gibson, Morris, Clarkson, Snider, Allee, Kinne and Streeter etc. might find their Dodge ancestors in this book but details about that will be omitted, which were given in George's book, and is one reason I would like to see his book go public.

Relatively more has been discovered so far about the lives of Silas, John, and of course our ancestor Emma Adelia, the youngest. Neither George nor I have yet been able to come up with an acceptable amount of information about the daughters who migrated to California in the 1850's, Sarah C. and Lydia Susannah who married a Mr. DeHaven. I would be eternally grateful to anyone who could fill in those details and intend to keep on looking. Will try to do a postscript if I learn more.

Why did the Dodges go to Missouri when they did? And why was Dwight so hesitant about joining Silas there that he got wound up and preached in his sleep? Part of the answer may lie with the remarkable Alvord family.

The casual reader might miss the implication because the most influential players, sisters Charlotte, Mary, Lucy and Naomi Alvord, were back-stage actors. Silas was married to the daughter of one of them, Charlotte's daughter, Mary Ann Hull, only four years older than her husband, but Dwight may have felt that her family had too great an influence on him.

Dwight knew all those people well, for they were early residents of Homer, Cortland County, New York, where he sometimes preached. This writer suspects that those people had been friendly with his first wife, Susannah, but did not much care for the Pearces. If such were the case he might not have been anxious to subject Lydia to discrimination in the new area. That would have contributed to his hesitance about going West, and the nervous episode.

In case those concerns were worrying Dwight, he would have been even more alarmed had he realized his other son, John, would marry the cousin in Missouri, Louisa Mae Walter, six years older. At least, something did occur to widen the schism in the Dodge family.

The patriarch of the Alvord family was a very brave man from Connecticut, Thomas Gould Alvord, who fought in the French and Indian War and also the Revolution, and was awarded 600 acres Bounty Land in Homer. The chart on the next page may make all this easier to understand.

DODGE FAMILY

The following is a verbatim copy of page 43 of George Dodge's Genealogy:

REVOLUTIONARY WAR DATA PERTAINING TO D.A.R. FURNISHED BY MRS. MARY CLARKSON KAUTZ.

Thos. Gould Alvord, sargent, enlisted Mar 1, 1777 - Capt. Judd's Company for the war - exchanged for Gabriel Leverich April 23, 1781.

3rd regiment Conn. Line, Colonel Samuel Wylies
Connecticutt Man in Revolution

Thos. Gould Alvord served in French and Indian war, when he was on the frontier from Oswego to Detroit, and in company with his eldest son, Thos. Gould Alvord, Jr. He was in Colonel Lamb's regiment in the Revolutionary war, both serving as cannoniers, and both present at Cornwallis's surrender.

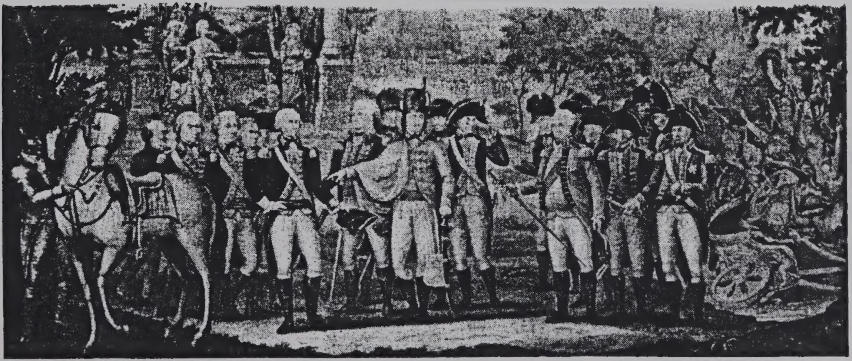
Thos. Gould Alvord was at the battle of White Plain and was wounded by a musket ball, which entered his arm, and passing out near the elbow, was picked up by a companion Luke Wardsworth, who placed the ball in his own gun and sent it back to the enemy.

Some of the descendants also mention that at the Battle of Yorktown he loaded and fired a cannon four times a minute for four hours, and that when the balls gave out they used old bolts, pieces of log chains, etc.

Thomas Gould Alvord served during the entire war, for which he drew lot No. 13, which was 600 acres in Homer, New York, to which he moved in 1794.

- - - - - - - - - - -

Doesn't that make you proud to be an American? You can be sure George was proud, for he was descended from that brave man.



Artist's conception of surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown

The Author and her Great-Grandmother, Emma Adelia Dodge Dunn

INTRODUCTION

The central figure of this book is the Reverend Dwight Dodge (1798-1869) who migrated to Missouri in 1846 with his family. The expert on the Dodge family in America was and probably always will be Dr. Joseph Thompson Dodge, who wrote the comprehensive genealogy a century ago. He knew only a little bit about Dwight, but had much data about those who came before. The task here is to tell about those later people whom the genealogist was not familiar with, after first reviewing those particular Dodges in Dwight's own ancestral line.

The logical beginning of any family history starts with the earliest known progenitor, who is ancestor of them all. The Dodges have selected the venerable ancient baron, Sir Peter Dodge, for this role. Feeling that others would share my frustration because all of the other books speak about Sir Peter with awe, but don't tell anything about him except to repeat what is stated in the patent for the Dodge coat of arms, a little ementary research was done to come up with material for a section about him and his place in history. It was fun doing it, but that is only a little frosting for the cake.

Having such a marvellous resource as the genealogy, it was rather simple to extract Dwight's ancestors from it. Many other periodicals and books were consulted to come up with material supplementing what others had to say about our own direct ancestors and their siblings. Because the old genealogy covers so many Dodges, any one individual, no matter how interesting, tends to get lost in the crowd. Conversely, when the story of each family unit is followed by that which comes after it (omitting the others) an interesting progressive pattern emerges. A case in point shows the progression. Our Puritan ancestor, Richard Dodge II, a prosperous farmer living not far from ancient Salem, owned a cider mill and a negro slave named Mingo. Two hundred years later his great-great-great-great grandson Billy Dodge was wounded in the Civil War fighting against slavery.

To make a project like this feasible, one has to have source material. Writer has three good ones which have not been used by anyone else before, as far as I know. The last one to be listed was the true inspiration for this book.

(1) The first and easiest pool of information to explain, is that I have been able to figure out the identities of most of the other ancestors were (not bearing the Dodge surname) of Reverend Dwight Dodge. The missing ancestors are the families or progenitors of William Chubb born about 1684 and Abigail Smith born about 1734. Dwight was born 1798 in Sturbridge, Massachusetts, raised in New Hampshire, had his children in New York Finger Lakes region and migrated to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1846. Such a man could not help but be interesting. Some of his ancestors were fascinating. Many of those families go back into medieval England.

Short family histories will be presented for each of those lines. They will be brief because otherwise this work would be overwhelmed, but source material will be listed in every case, should anyone reading them want to learn more.

(2) The second source is an unpublished genealogy in scrapbook form kept up for at least a generation by my mother's third cousin, a charming man named George Dodge who lived in Hamilton, Missouri. He did not have access to resources now available in large cities like microfilm copies of censuses, reference books, or the data at Latter Day Saint stake family history centers, yet what a collection of data he had!

He visited libraries during trips to New York and Minneapolis and, before the advent of Xerox machines he painstakingly hand copied the patent for the coat of arms, Richard I's will, first names and the children's names for each successive generation. More importantly, he kept a collection of articles clipped from newspapers in his home town every time anyone even remotely related or married to a Dodge was mentioned, which was often. Many clippings concerned social events, but there were also marriage and death notices, also excerpts from the county history. He had a treasured copy of Rev. Dwight Dodge's obituary.

George worked in the public a long time. He often met near-relatives and must have asked about who married whom and about the families. Sometimes the informants garbled names or were confused. He had the presence of mind to put it on paper anyway, so we can check it out. An older cousin who belonged to a patriotic society based on heritage gave him valuable information which might otherwise have been lost. Sometimes she or other informants conjectured in assigning wrong parents to a few early 19th century cousins, but you could tell he was beginning to catch on, though he had a trusting nature. Like myself, he sought but was unable to find answers to some problems, such as who were the spouses and children of the two sisters (Dwight's children) who migrated to California. I wish someone with the answers to that could see this and contact me!

George intended to keep his book in order but often got carried away, jotting note upon note on already typed pages whenever people told him things, while it was still fresh in his mind. Because of that, it took a little effort to search out the information most useful for this book--but well worth it, since many of his entries are of things I never would have found out any other way.

This gracious and charming Dodge gentleman permitted my brother, sister, and me, whom he scarcely knew except that we were part Dodge, too, to take his precious book and photocopy it, just because we were so interested in those same ancestors. He probably felt lost until it was returned safely to him.

Because of the limited scope of this narrative, only a fraction of George's large collection of data can be used. I hope his book is being kept safe, and wish it could be made available to the public, though something like that would be up to his immediate family. My book is about the ancestors and about Dwight's children, not about descendants as his is, except to wind up the story with mention of my own direct line. His book would make a nice supplement to be used in connection with this, since this follows only the daughter, Emma, and he followed her brothers and sisters, particularly her oldest brother Silas. He also has other little treats, such as brief genealogies of his Hull and Alvord lines. We are so grateful to George!

(3) Third and last, are my precious pages of the Dodge Family Bible and the unwritten family stories and traditions that have been kept alive in our family over these many years, and which I am afraid will soon be lost for all time unless I pass them on in writing. They have been told and retold so many times it is possible they have lost details in the telling. Who is to say if they have come down exactly as they started out? The point is to preserve what there is to remember. I wish I had listened better when I was a child, but people just don't.....

I suppose not every family has so many tales that go back a century and a half, though undoubtedly some do. By way of explaining this, Dwight's widow, Lydia (Pearce) Dodge and youngest daughter, Emma, (whom I remember--my great grandmother) never tired of telling about how things were in New York or in early Caldwell County. My grandmother absorbed all that like a sponge. She adored her grandmother, Lydia, who lived next door and died when she was twelve. You'd have to meet my grandmother to understand it better, but for some reason she thought she had to talk a lot to be a good hostess, and the conversation often drifted to the lives of her ancestors. Not only that, but Emma told those stories to my mother, Ada, who at age 90 is still repeating the stories, too.

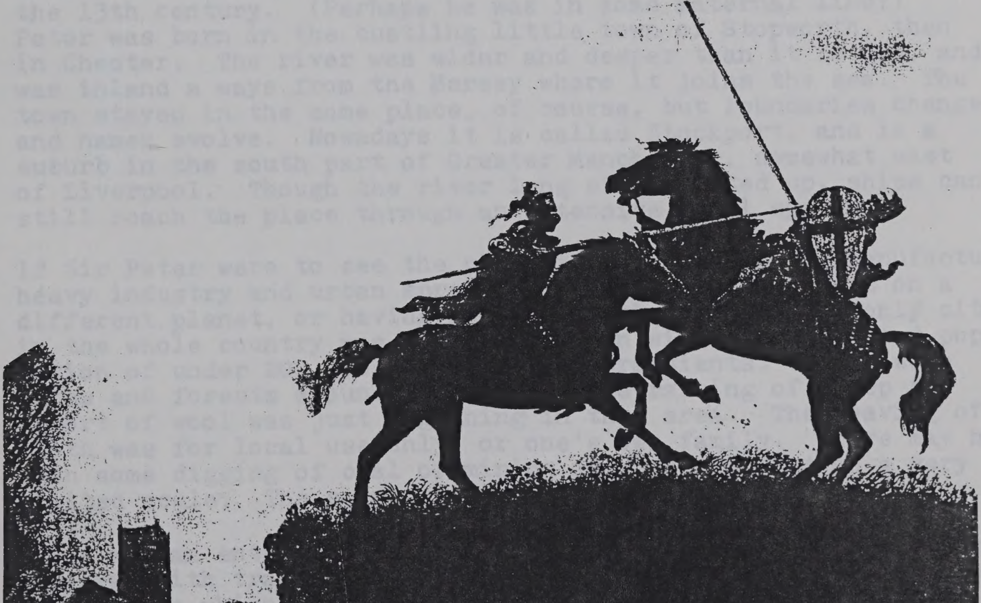
I left home early and moved to another state. Whenever I return to the scenes of my childhood, sometimes they are gone--like the one-room elementary school I attended, houses I grew up in, people, and even entire small communities have vanished. I'm all for progress if it is for the best, but it is sad to know that soon the old places and the old stories about those loved ones will fade away never to be remembered again. Maybe if I can save even a few inconsequential memories someone will read them someday and traces of their lives will not pass into oblivion. The hour groweth late.

THE LEGEND OF SIR PETER DODGE

This part is dedicated to my grandson Nate who, even as a toddler, was fascinated by the idea of having his very own medieval knight ancestor, the Baron Sir Peter Dodge, and also to all the other youngsters privileged to share this marvellous legacy.

Just who was "Baron Pierre Doidge" (his French name) who fought so valiantly for his King? You won't find him in any history book, so this is a simple little historical attempt to answer that question. You grownups who want to get straight to the genealogy part can skip this part if you want to. It is not must reading.

If Sir Peter were to appear miraculously before our very eyes, we could ask him. Problem is, likely you would have such a hard time trying to understand him you might give up. He spoke an earlier version of "Middle English." The language we speak today had not yet evolved but if you want to get an idea, you might go to the library and get a copy of "Canterbury Tales" by Chaucer. He spoke a more northerly and even earlier dialect a hundred years before, but he and the people in the book could have conversed easily. The pictures will give you an idea of what they wore.



The English language is based on ancient Saxon, Danish, Celtic, Latin and Norman French--or on the tongues of whoever invaded the island. It is still changing. Some of the words you use are different from those of your grandparents. Though England is only a small island country, the people there even today sometimes have difficulty understanding one another. In parts of the northeast some people use words left over from the Vikings and in Cornwall from the Celts. Whatever dialect Peter spoke, you may be sure he also spoke Norman French, for he was an ambitious man.

How sad that we could not really understand Sir Peter! But we still would love to know what he looked like. Was he tall or short, blonde, brunette or redhead? It is said redheads were scrappy people back then--maybe he was a redhead with strong muscles. We do know he wore a heavy metal suit of armor, and his shield was emblazoned with his own coat-of-arms, the one you see on the cover of this book. He rode a huge war horse. It had to be huge to carry all that weight. Alongside him was an honor-guard carrying the Dodge coat-of-arms on a very large battle flag that could be seen far away.

Since scholars seem to think the name "Dodge" is of Saxon origin, he may not have been a Norman but the people in power were in the 13th century. (Perhaps he was in some maternal line?) Peter was born in the bustling little town of Stopworth, then in Chester. The river was wider and deeper than it is now, and was inland a ways from the Mersey where it joins the sea. The town stayed in the same place, of course, but boundaries change and names evolve. Nowadays it is called Stockport, and is a suburb in the south part of Greater Manchester, somewhat east of Liverpool. Though the river long since silted up, ships can still reach the place through an extensive canal system.

If Sir Peter were to see the place today with all the manufacturing, heavy industry and urban sprawl, he might suspect he was on a different planet, or having a surrealistic dream. The only city in the whole country was far-away London with its congested population of under 200,000, some of them transients. There were farms and forests around Stopworth. The raising of sheep for export of wool was just beginning in that area. The weaving of cloth was for local use only, or one's own family. There may have been some digging of coal or mining of minerals, but on a very limited scale. The countryside was pretty.

Peter was an enterprising man. His family would have been somewhat involved with trade, for Stopworth was a place where ships brought merchandise which was exchanged with the local people for the area's products. But Dodges have always loved agriculture, so that may have been their primary occupation. However, to get ahead in the Middle Ages one had to be prepared to lead one's own tenants and serfs into battle when the monarch or overlord asked. Might made right. Law and order in the modern sense existed nowhere in the world.

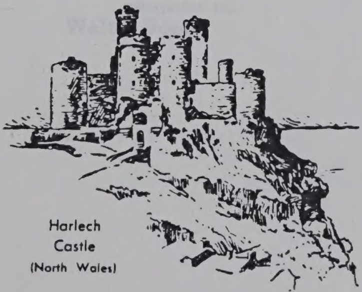
When Peter was a young man King Edward I, his beloved monarch, was fighting to conquer Wales not so very far to the west. Nothing in the records suggests our young Knight ancestor went there to help out, but maybe he did, living so close. Somewhere he acquired the skills to become a fine military leader. The battles of the English in Northern Wales were quite successful. Many of the grand old castles they built during the conquest, and to retain power, are still standing there, a marvel for all to see.

From that time onward, Wales is part of England. As a gesture to calm the Welsh, King Edward made his son and intended heir "Prince of Wales," and so it has been ever since.

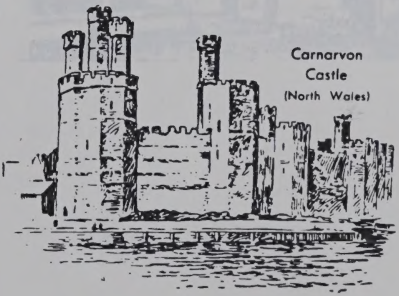
Soon after the victories in Wales, King Edward I, "Hammer of the Scots" needed soldiers and leaders to fight "the evil Balliol" so he could rule Scotland. Naturally our Hero volunteered. Besides being so patriotic, he could make a big name for himself. Also, to the victor went the spoils of war.

Sir Peter led his men in battle during the fierce and bloody seiges of Dunbar and Berwick in Scotland. In fact, they fought hard and bravely and won a number of battles. Sir Peter was "conspicuous for the advancement and good content" of his sovereign Lord, King Edward I "and in recompense of said service, and by his special grace," the King "awarded to Peter Dodge and to his heirs forever, the Lordship of Podenhughe, with the Barony of Coldingham, in the Kingdom of Scotland." What a wonderful honor!

We don't know if Peter stayed there to take up his Barony or not. It really wasn't safe there, as the wars went on--and on--and on for hundreds of years. Things are different now, of course. And it has been said that there are a few people named Dodge still living on the borders in that very area. Of course other people, bearing Sir Peter's arms, did remain in and around Stopworth.



Harlech
Castle
(North Wales)



Carnarvon
Castle
(North Wales)

Ancient Podenhughe no longer exists. Berwick and Dunbar are right there on the map of Scotland, so you can see Sir Peter's army must have been quite successful to conquer such a chunk of territory for England for a while, though the Scots won it back some time later. Melrose Abbey figured in the fighting, and its ruins are still there, its beauty marred in much later fighting in other wars.

If details of the battles were written down they hve since been destroyed in the fighting and looting. Most of the people living there were illiterate. Since the territory later returned to Scotland, what stories there are about those battles are told from the Scots' point of view.

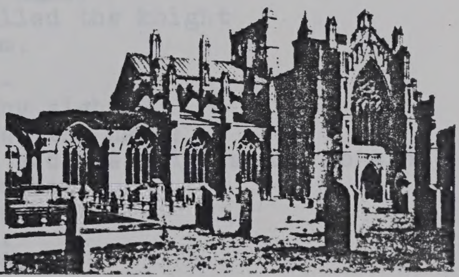
Of course the Scots did not jump for joy because they lost the battles, but you can see from Sir Walter Scott's poem that Sir Peter was magnanimous in victory, for he spared the life of Sir Richard Smaylhome of Coldingham, allowing him and his wife to escape to the safety of Melrose Abbey. It also shows that Sir Peter got to be Baron of Coldingham by defeating this man in battle.

CHICAGO HIST. SOC.

Walter Scott

Ruins of historic Melrose Abbey in Scotland

EWING GALLOWAY



DODGE FAMILY

Sir Walter Scott was fascinated with folk ballads of the Scottish border from the time he was a youngster and began a life-long avocation of collecting them and learning the local history which lay behind them in an ancient War-ravaged, desolate area where nobody could read or write except an occasional cleric in one of the local monasteries. Even those records were usually destroyed by war and looting.

The old Celts there were not literate but they were bright and (witness modern Ireland) they never forgot an ancient grudge. Bards and troubadors were trained as a special class who memorized events from their point of view, and even genealogical lines, and preserved them in song.

Soon after his marriage in 1797, Scott was appointed "sheriff-dispute" of Selkirke. The position gave him wide access to research in the area, the people, and the ancient ballads. Of course, he put it all in writing. He came to realize that in order to preserve his findings they would have to be published. To attract broad appeal he did polish them up to take off the rough spots. Hopefully, he did not polish too much.

EVE OF ST. JOHN

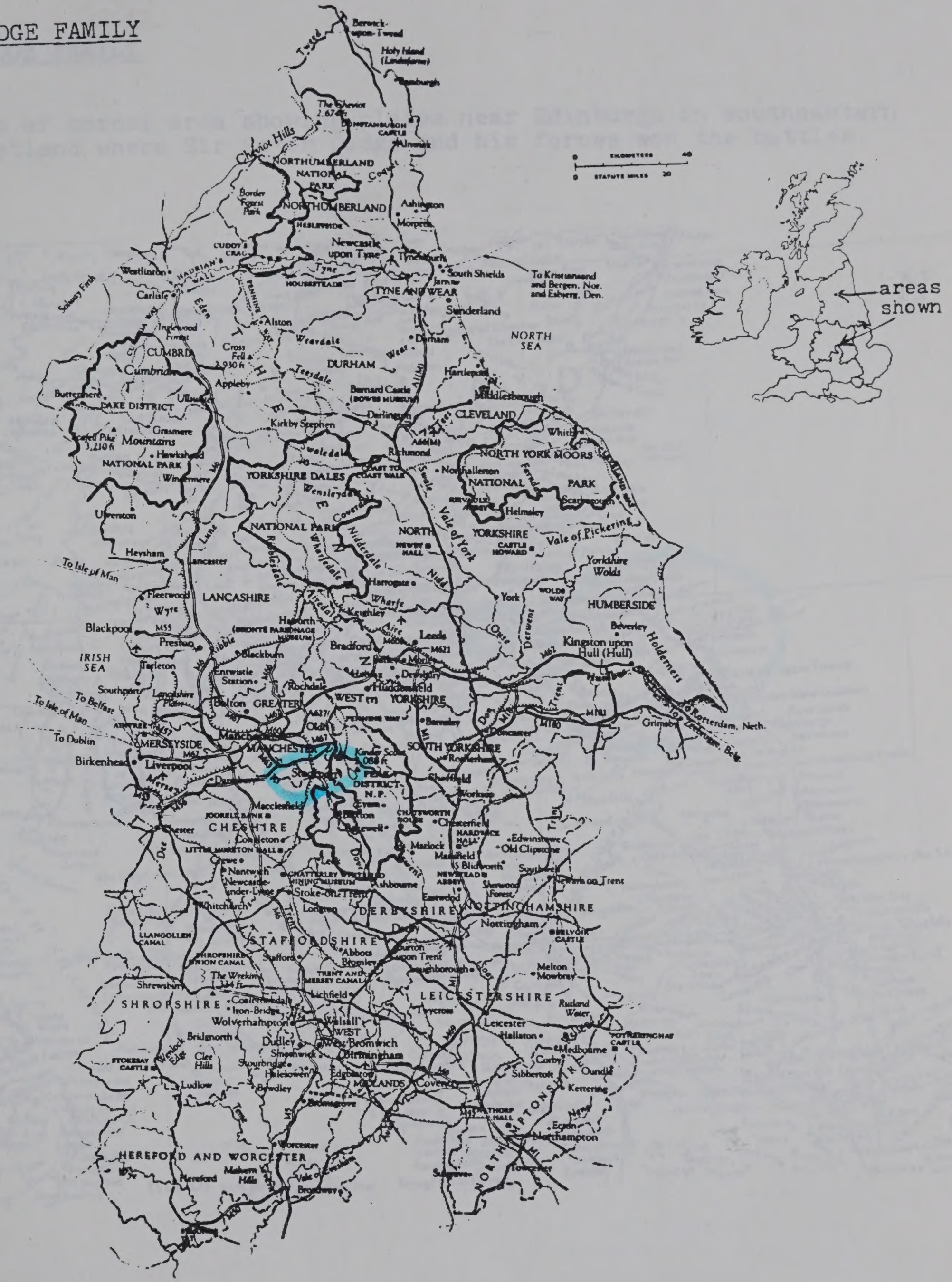
His arms shone full bright; - in the beacon's red light
His plume, it was scarlet and blue;
On his shield was a hound, in a silver leash bound
And his crest was a branch of the yew.
Yet hear but my word, my noble Lord!
For I heard her name his name;
And that lady bright, she called the knight
Sir Richard of Coldingham.

- - - - - - - - - - - - - - -

The varying light deceived thy sight;
And the wild winds drowned the name;
For the Dryburgh bells ring, and the white monks do sing
for Sir Richard of Coldingham.
There is a nun in Dryburgh bower
Ne'er looks upon the Sun,
There is a Monk in Melrose Tower
He speaketh word to none.
That Nun, who ne'er beholds the day
That Monk who speaks to none,
That Nun, was Smaylhome's Lady Gay,
That Monk the bold Baron.

Sir Walter Scott

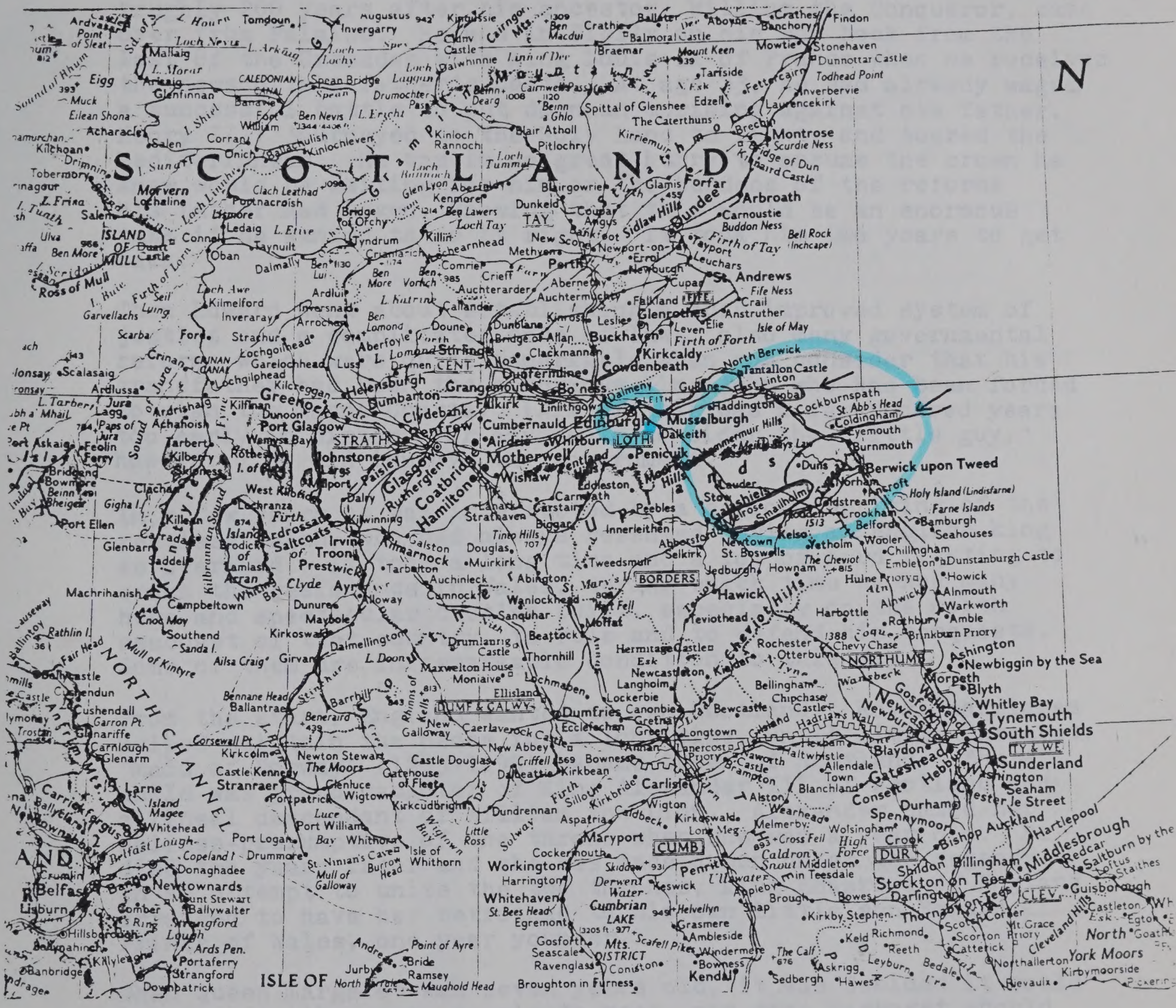
DODGE FAMILY


Berwick-upon-Tweed
Holy Island (Lindisfarne)
Bamburgh
The Cheviot 2,674 ft
Cheviot Hills
Alnwick
NORTHUMBERLAND NATIONAL PARK
NORTHUMBERLAND
Ashington
Morpeth
Newcastle upon Tyne
Tynemouth
South Shields
To Kristiansand and Bergen, Nor. and Esbjerg, Den.
TYNE AND WEAR
Sunderland
NORTH SEA
Carlisle
CUMBRIA
Cumbrian Mountains
LAKE DISTRICT NATIONAL PARK
DURHAM
Hartlepool
Middlesbrough
CLEVELAND
Darlington
Richmond
NORTH YORK MOORS NATIONAL PARK
YORKSHIRE DALES NATIONAL PARK
NORTH YORKSHIRE
Vale of York
Vale of Pickering
Scarborough
Harrogate
York
HUMBERSIDE
Kingston upon Hull (Hull)
Grimsby
To Rotterdam, Neth.
LANCASHIRE
Blackpool
Preston
IRISH SEA
Bradford
Leeds
WEST YORKSHIRE
GREATER MANCHESTER
MERSEYSIDE
Liverpool
Birkenhead
To Dublin
To Isle of Man
SOUTH YORKSHIRE
Sheffield
Stockport
PEAK DISTRICT N.P.
CHESHIRE
Chester
Stoke-on-Trent
DERBYSHIRE
Derby
NOTTINGHAMSHIRE
Nottingham
STAFFORDSHIRE
SHROPSHIRE
Shrewsbury
Wolverhampton
Birmingham
WEST MIDLANDS
Coventry
LEICESTERSHIRE
Leicester
NORTHAMPTONSHIRE
Northampton
HEREFORD AND WORCESTER
Worcester
Hereford
KILOMETERS 40
STATUTE MILES 20
areas shown

Stockport is in the left center area of this modern map of England. The Scottish border area where Sir Peter fought is a little bit up the coast from Berwick-upon-Tweed shown at top, near Edinburgh, Scotland.

DODGE FAMILY

Map of border area showing places near Edinburgh in southeastern Scotland where Sir Peter Dodge and his forces won the battles.


N
SCOTLAND
Edinburgh
Musselburgh
Dalkeith
Haddington
North Berwick
Tantallon Castle
East Linton
Dunbar
Cockburnspath
St. Abb's Head
Coldingham
Eyemouth
Burnmouth
Berwick upon Tweed
Duns
Lammermuir Hills
Lauder
Galashiels
Melrose
Smailholm
Kelso
Coldstream
Norham
Holy Island (Lindisfarne)
Farne Islands
Bamburgh
Flodden
1513
Jedburgh
Hawick
Cheviot Hills
The Cheviot
Peebles
Penicuik
Dalmeny
Leith
LOTH
BORDERS
NORTHUMB
Glasgow
Stirling
Perth
Dundee
St. Andrews
Firth of Forth
Firth of Tay
Carlisle
Dumfries
Newcastle
Hadrian's Wall
South Shields
Sunderland
Durham
Middlesbrough
NORTH CHANNEL
ISLE OF
York Moors

King Edward and Baliol. You can skip this section if you like. This is just a little over-simplified sketch of what led up to the wars on the Scottish Borders in which Sir Peter Dodge became involved.

Edward I inherited the throne of England and Normandy in 1272, roughly 200 years after his ancestor, William the Conqueror, came over from Falaise. He was in Sicily on his way back from the last of the Crusades with King Louis IX of France when he received the news of his father's death. At age 33, he had already waged a successful battle to put down an uprising against his father, Henry III; journeyed to the Holy Land to fight; and toured the Mediterranean. He was in no great hurry to assume the crown he knew would be waiting for him or the burdens of the reforms his father had begun, knowing that this would be an enormous task if he wanted to do it right. It took him two years to get back.

Then Edward went about establishing a much improved system of justice and a complicated code of laws, also many governmental reforms which were quite remarkable when you consider that his grandfather had been the notorious King John who had been forced to sign the Magna Charta. (All of this was a few hundred years too early in history for anyone to consider the "little guy," however.) He did improve the government.

In a few years he was interrupted by a serious uprising of the restless Welsh, who had always resented having an English king as overlord. It took a long time and a lot of hard fighting to crush the resistance in Wales, during which time he had many huge and spectacular castles built, especially on the north seacoast of that country, to rule and to defend his conquests. Some of them are in remarkable condition to this day.

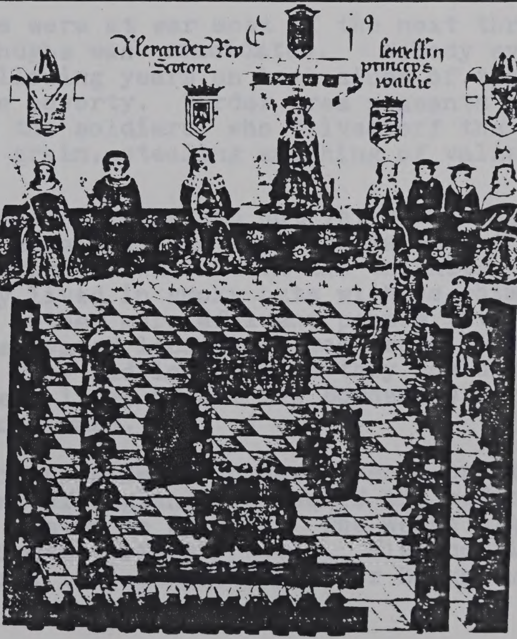
From the start, England wanted to own Scotland. Royal marriages helped maintain the peace for a long time, until little Margaret, "Maid of Norway" (1283-1290) became Queen of Scotland. The child was grand-daughter of King Alexander III of Scotland and a lineal descendant of William the Lion. Alexander named her heiress-presumptive of the throne when she was a year old. He died two years later and she was made queen under the regency. In an attempt to unite the two thrones, King Edward I of England arranged to have her betrothed to his own little son Edward II Prince of Wales, one year younger.

When Queen Margaret was seven years old, it was decided it would be nice for the young couple to meet, and that Margaret should journey to England to see her intended. Enroute she died of mysterious causes. Her death precipitated civil strife in Scotland over who should succeed her on the throne. There was a mad scramble of claimants.

Edward was disappointed that the two kingdoms would not be united by a royal marriage. However, he was not the type to let opportunity pass him by. He appointed himself arbiter in the dispute between the claimants, hearing all the sides. Actually he was searching for one he could dominate. He knew he must act quickly.

One of the claimants was John de Baliol, Jr., scion of an old Anglo-Norman family starting with Guido de Baliol who came with William the Conqueror. They owned huge estates in Durham and Northumberland near the border. John, Sr., founded Baliol College, one of the earliest of those comprising Oxford University. He claimed the throne through his maternal grandmother, who was descended from William the Lion's older brother. If that sounds sort of convoluted, it should be stated that relatives of Scotch monarchs usually did not live long, often meeting mysterious ends. Margaret had been the last of Alexander's descendants.

Left-Statue of Edward I as weeper at a funeral. Below-Edward meets his Parliament (notice Alexander III of Scotland and Llewelyn, Prince of North Wales).



Robert Bruce, Sir William Wallace, and others also were after the throne, but Edward thought Baliol would be the easiest to control, and chose him on the condition that he swear allegiance to Edward as overlord. Baliol was then crowned at Scone Abbey in the year 1292.

Edward I became a busybody, meddling in Scottish concerns. Soon the people chafed under that state of affairs. When the situation became intolerable Baliol revolted. He was imprisoned and compelled to abdicate. Edward then claimed sovereignty over Scotland for himself. He removed the Stone of Destiny on which Scottish kings had always been crowned from the Scone Palace and had it installed in Westminster Abbey.

Balliol died in Castle Gaillard in Normandy in 1299. About the time of his expulsion, it is said that Sir Pierre Dodge of Stopworth, County Chester, England was proclaimed to have shown great valor at the siege of Berwick and Dunbar in the service of King Edward I of England, and that he defeated the local Scottish Baron, Sir Richard Smaylhome of Coldingham, and usurped his lands as spoils of war, in lieu of a salary. He then became "Lord of Podenhughe and Baron of Coldingham." If his coat-of-arms were not awarded to him at that time (probably he already had them) at least they were taken favorable notice of and recorded by the heralds. The Dodge arms are among the oldest in the records.

After that the two countries were at war most of the next three centuries. Evidently Podenhughe was eradicated. Nobody even knows where it was. The following years on both sides of the border were times of extreme poverty. Border area peasants tried to hide from the barons and the soldiers, who "lived off the land" by eating their animals and grain, stealing anything of value.

The trees of the great primeval forests had not yet been destroyed so people hid in them, less afraid of the wild beasts than the even wilder thieves and cut-throats who hid in the thickets. Crime went unpunished. They lived in smoky huts with no chimneys, dirt floors, no sanitation. Other more affluent people lived in cold stone dwellings in elevated locations, too crude to be called castles but at least they had lookouts so they could spot approaching danger. The bleak lives of all the borderers were made worse still by the border wars.

Just so you know, Edward I is considered to have been a pretty good king from the standpoint of England because of the reforms he made, and of the justice system he started. The Welsh might argue about that, and the Scots certainly would. His Scottish victories were only temporary. (The land Baron Peter Dodge won reverted to Scotland.)

In the next generation Robert the Bruce and his son, David, became Scottish kings. However, the puppet Baliols still had not given up. Edward de Baliol, son of the man who died in the castle in Normandy, invaded Scotland as head of the barons displaced by Bruce. He landed at Fife, slew the regent Mar, and was crowned King of Scotland at Scone Abbey.

He did homage to Edward III (grandson of Edward I) to whom he surrendered ancient Lothian. Because he gave up such a vital part of Scotland, Scottish patriots forced him to flee to England for refuge. Edward III forced his restoration. Twenty years later this latest Baliol surrendered the entire Kingdom of Scotland to the English king in return for a pension of L2000. He died at Doncaster, Yorkshire, England, the last of his line.

The English monarch had finally won control of Scotland, but not the hearts of the people. Skirmishes continued long after, but the "evil Baliols" were gone forever.

Some references for background on Sir Peter Dodge and King Edward I are:

Genealogy of the Dodge Family of Essex County, Massachusetts - Professor Joseph Thompson Dodge, 2 Volumes, 1894 & 1898

Ancestors and Descendants of John Dodge 1816-1898 - Marilyn and Phillip Slinger, limited edition 1976

A History of England, Vol. I, Prehistory to 1714 - Clayton Roberts and David Roberts (Prentice Hall)

The Oxford Illustrated History of Britain - edited by Kenneth O. Morgan (Oxford University Press 1984)

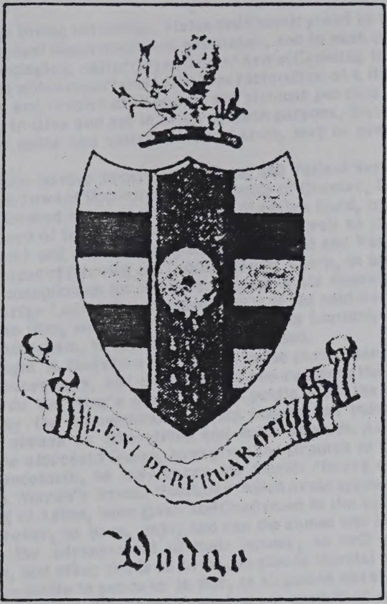
American Peoples Encyclopedia

English Social History - G. M. Trevelyan (Longmans et al, London 1946)

Discovering Britain & Ireland - National Geographic Society, 1985

Poems of Sir Walter Scott

THE DODGE COAT OF ARMS



Arms: Barry of six or and sable; on a pale gules, a woman's dugge distilling drops of milk proper.
Crest: A demi sea-lion azure, collared, maned, and finned or.

The first patent for the Dodge Coat of Arms was written in Norman French. We could not understand it. The photocopy on the next page is an exact translation. Actually the Dodge Arms were being used even before that, and the patent merely confirms them and records the granting of the barony to Sir Pierre Dodge.

The earliest arms were initiated by the military leaders, themselves out of necessity, rather than conferred by some monarch, so that their men could identify them in battle. A man covered head-to-toe with chain mail, or later with plate armor with only a slit to look out of, could not be recognized. They couldn't even see him. (A cloak covering metal also kept one from being cooked alive in the summer sun.) The wearing of the insignia on the knight's cloak and on his shield enabled his troops to follow him easily.

Even in prehistoric times some need for identification was necessary, even if it were only war paint and a few feathers.

DODGE FAMILY

First patent Coat of Arms, to Peter Dodge (translated from Norman French:

"To all Men loving Nobleness, Virtue and Chivalry: and to all Ladies, and maidens of honor, of honest deportment and gentilesse, and to each of them:

I, James Hedingley, called Guyen King of Arms: Greeting in Peace and good Speed. Above all, that which appertains to the honorable office of a Herald is first; to record the good fame and renown of all honest and virtuous persons. So, likewise it is suitable and fit, to Give and set in order to such persons, Ensigns and Arms of honor; so, that their noble and valiant deeds of arms, may be preserved in perpetual remembrance.

And therefore having regard to the loyal and Valiant service of PETER DODGE, a Native of the Town of Stopworth, in the County of Chester, Gentlemen: which he has done and performed to my most dear and Soverign Lord, by the Grace of God, King of England, Lord of Ireland, and Duke of Guyen, as well as in several battles against his great enemy and rebel, Baliol, King of Scotland and Vassal of England: as likewise at the seiges of Berwick and Dunbar: there, where, in his duty and valiant courage, he was conspicuous for the advancement of his renown and the good content of my said Soverign Lord, who, in recompence of his said service, and by his Special Grace, Gave to Him, and to his Heirs forever, the Lordship of Podenhughe, with the Barony of Coldingham, in the Kingdom of Scotland.

I have thought it therefore convenient in the performance of my office, to Grant him Arms accordingly, and specially for two reasons: the one for having valiantly served towards the King's peace and the public good: the other, that his heirs and successors by the remembrance of his honour and valor, may be encouraged to follow him, always in like virtue and noble conduct. And for which cause: Know Ye: That I, the aforesaid Guyen, have given and Granted to the said PETER DODGE, that from henceforth, he may carry his Shield: 'Barry of Six: Or and Sable: on a Pale gules, a Woman's Breast Gouttant:' which Arms appear, here in view depicted. I, Guyen King of Arms, have given and Confirmed to the said PETER DODGE and to his heirs forever, to have, enjoy and use the same: and in them to be adorned and clothed, for the advancement of their honour, as well in all Triphumps, Jousts, Tournaments, and other deeds of Arms, as also in Martial matters and enterprises, that may be requiste in peace or in war, in all places and at all times, according to their pleasure, without the impeachment of any person or persons.

In Testimony of which I have here Subjoined my Seal.

Given the 8th day of April, the Thirty Fourth Year of the reign of our said Soverign Lord, Edward, Son of King Henry; after the Conquest, the First of that name."

Second Patent, to John Dodge, Rotham, Kent:

"To all Nobles, and Gentles, Reading Hearing or Seeing these Letters present: Thomas Hawley, as Clarencieux principal Herald and King of Arms, of the South, East and West parts of the Realm of England from the River Trent Southwards, sendeth due and humble Commendation and Greeting; Equity willeth, and Reason ordereth, that men virtuous, and of noble courage be by their merits and good renown rewarded; not only their persons in this moral life, so brief and transitory, but also after them, those that shall be of their body descended: to the end that by their ensample, others may the more enforce themselves, to get the renown of ancient Nobles, in their Lines and posterities, and forasmuch as JOHN DODGE of Rotham in the County of Kent, Gentlemen is descended of a House bearing Arms, as appeareth by an ancient Patent of Arms, granted and given by Jacques (James) Hedingley as Guyen King of Arms the viiith day of April, in the xxxviii (sic) Year of the Reign of King Edward the First, to PETER DODGE, born in Stopworth, in the County of Chester, Gentlemen: then being as more plainly appeareth by the said Patent, of the which the said JOHN is descended. Therefore the said Clarencieux King of Arms by the authority and power annexed, attributed, given and granted by the King, our Sovereign Lord, by express words, under his most noble Great Seal, to me, and to my office of Clarencieux King of Arms; Do Ratify, Set forth, Confirm and Grant to the said JOHN DODGE, Gentlemen, for him, and his posterity the said Arms, with a Crest thereunder in manner as hereafter followeth, that is to say; Gold and Sable, Barry of Six pieces: on a Pale Gules, a Woman's pappe, gouttant, Situ. Upon his Helmet, on a Torse, gold and azure; a Demi-Lyon marym: Sable, langued and armed gules: about his neck a Gemmel Gold, manteld Gules, Dobled, Situ: as more plainly appeareth depicted in the margin. To have and to hold the said Crest and Arms to the said JOHN DODGE, Gentlemen, for him and his posterity, and they it to use and enjoy evermore.

In Witness whereof, I, the said Clarencieux King of Arms have signed this present Confirmation with my hand and set the Seal of my office of Clarencieux King of Arms. Given and Granted at London the xvith day of December, in the xxxviiith year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord Henry the Eighth, by the Grace of God, King of England, France and Ireland. Defender of the Faith and of the Church of England and Ireland, on Earth, the Supreme Head."

Coats of arms enabled the great landholders and their followers to distinguish one another in time of war, or keep the group together during the Crusades. There is no evidence that arms in the early days were granted by the Crown. They were adopted much as a tradesman adopts a trademark, and were regarded as a specie of private property, governed by custom rather than rules.*

The earliest government involvement may have been through legal suits of the type prosecuted nowadays to prevent infringement upon copywrights. The custom came into general use near the end of the 12th century. By 1245 the heralds in England were recording them on ancient rolls, and the Dodge arms were among the earliest recorded. The Heralds' College in England was not involved in issuing royal patents until the reign of Richard III (1483-5) and by then the whole system was an anachronism due to the new invention of gunpowder which somewhat changed the way of waging war.

The newly elaborate coats of arms (not nearly so beautiful as the more simple earlier ones) issued and recorded by the Heralds' College probably came about for two reasons: (1) The monarch need a way to record his potential troops for organizational purposes. (2) During the time of the Tudors especially, selling patents was a way to raise money when royal coffers ran low, as they often did due to excessive costs of the wars they were forever waging. (After the scare from the Spanish Armada, Elizabeth I did achieve a long period of peace, finally.)

A side effect of the granting of coats of arms to newly-rich royal subjects was that the new members of the elite tended to become strong supporters of the monarch. One of the reasons the Tudors were among the more successful monarchs as a class, is their final realization, after centuries of repression of the people by their predecessors, that they could collect more taxes from a prosperous populace. The Tudors encouraged commerce, trade unions and guilds, travel, manufactures, and entrepreneurs of every ilk. Thus encouraged, many became wealthy and wanted to be considered above the crowd. Some very creative pedigrees came about under King Henry VIII - the very king under whom the second patent for the Dodge Coat of Arms was granted to John Dodge, Gentleman, of Rotham, Kent.

Finally we are getting down to the reason the writer is making such a big fuss about this subject. Some people might even say it is irrelevant, but I think as a Dodge descendant, proud of the ancient coat of arms, you may as well be prepared to

---

* Recommended reading:
New England Register 82:146-7 "A Roll of Arms Registered by the Committee on Heraldry of the New England Historic Genealogical Society" - G. Andrews Moriarty

defend it. There are a good many "experts" running around out there, writing or lecturing on the subject, who say they "don't believe in a single one of the ancient patents!" Those people love to point out that under the Tudors the newly-rich could pay an exhorbitant fee and buy a fabulous past, then strut around having suddenly become one of the gentry. And you can say you know that, but the Dodges were using their coat of arms long before the Tudors came to the throne. There was no Heralds' College when those arms were first recorded. They go way, way back and they are real.

Now, having said all that, there were some very curious elements in that first patent. John Dodge, being an intelligent man, undoubtedly realized that. Possibly his centuries-old document had crumbled over the years, or the ink had faded over the years so that it could not be preserved and had to be copied a few times (like some old Greek copies of the Bible, for instance). Perhaps in the copying some comments were preserved in other copies, mistaking them for the original. Maybe there are better explanations not thought of. This writer has absolutely no expertise in that sort of thing whatsover and I can easily spot three problems. Perhaps you can spot others if you study the copy. Three I see are:

(1) The date of the first patent, 8 April 34 Edward I seems to be a mistake. (It translates to the 34th year of the reign of Edward I, or 1272 + 34 = 8 April 1306.) Edward died the next year. That is too late. It probably should have been dated about ten years before that, at the time Baron Peter Dodge won those battles in Scotland. Baliol died imprisoned in the castle in Normandy in 1299, so it had to be a few years before that.

(2) Another curiosity must be the reference to "James Hedingly called Guyen King of Arms." I looked up Guyen (also spelled Guienne) and learned that it used to be a small province in Southwest France (the Bordeaux area) which was part of the kingdom of Edward I of England and Normandy. The arms pre-dated the English Heralds' College. I suppose the inference is that some organization in France did it, instead. Having no way to check that out, it seems as though he was smart to have an English reconfirmation.

(3) Something is wrong with that last line of the old patent. Edward, during his lifetime would not have referred to himself as "...Edward....first of the name." People do not talk like that about themselves. He died the next year, 1307.

Anyway, John Dodge did get a nice new patent during the last year of Henry VIII's life, in 1547. It seems to have been a good move. After all the Dodges were an ancient and honorable family.

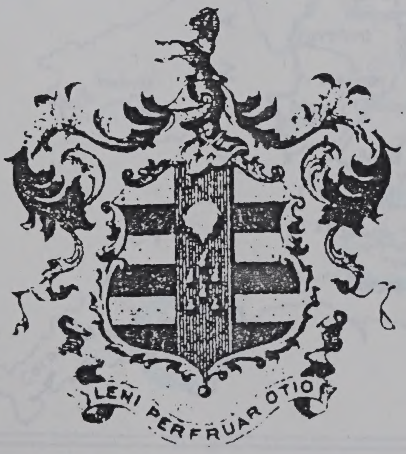
DODGE FAMILY

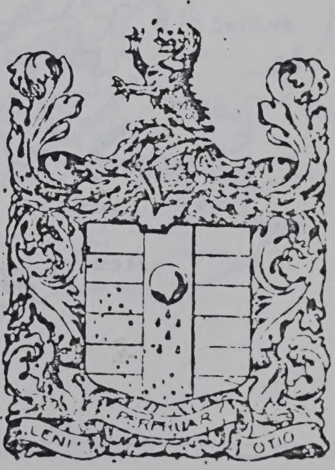
In the genealogy, Dr. J. T. Dodge quotes "Display of Heraldry" by "Old Gwillum," who says in that ancient book the inspiration for our coat of arms was the Bible, 2 Esdras 8 (Apocrypha, King James Version) "For Thous hast commanded out of the parts of the body, that is to say, out of the breasts, milk to be given, which is the fruit of the breasts, that the thing which is fashioned may be nourished for a time; till thous disposest it to thy mercy." The breast was a symbol of Sir Peter's sustenance of the troops, according to Gwillum, (and where the name came from?)

The name Dodge seems to be a shortened version of Doidge, taken from the ancient Anglosaxon word "Dugge," all three of these words pronounced the same way, with a soft "g." The Xeroxed translation of the patent on another page uses the phrase "a woman's pappe" which means exactly the same thing. Perhaps the word "dugge" was obsolete by the time the translation was done. The earliest coats of armor do show a nursing woman's breast with drops of milk coming from it. Later overly-fastidious men tried to change this to a weeping eye, as you see on the cover, but the pictures on this page are thought to be more accurate.

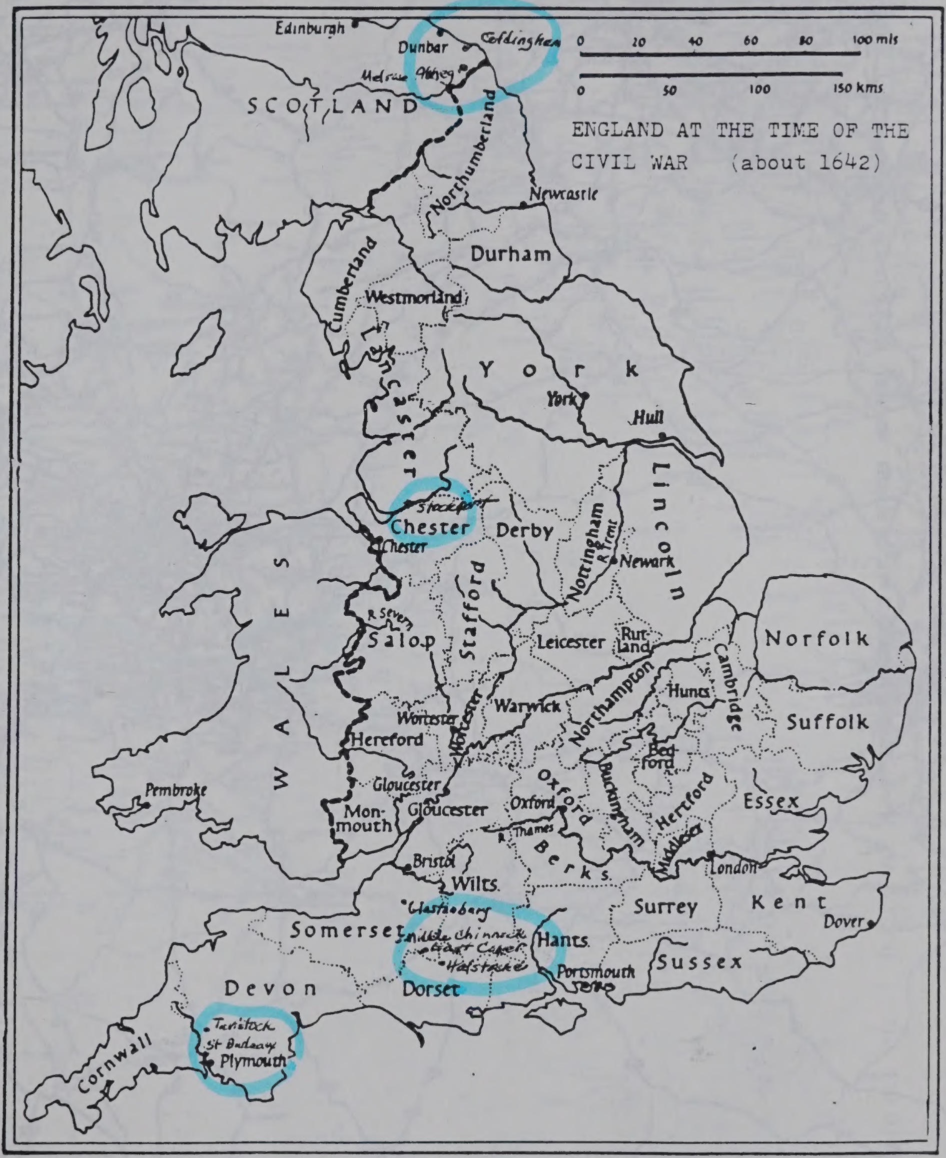
Arms: Barry of six or and sable. On a pale gules, a woman's dugge distilling drops of milk proper.
Upon his helmet (crest): On a torse gold and azure, a demi sea dog marym sable, langued and armed gules. About his neck a gemel gold, manteled gules.

The sea dog meant a beaver but they never drew it very well. The motto, "Leni Perfruar Otio" meant "Let me enjoy gentle ease."





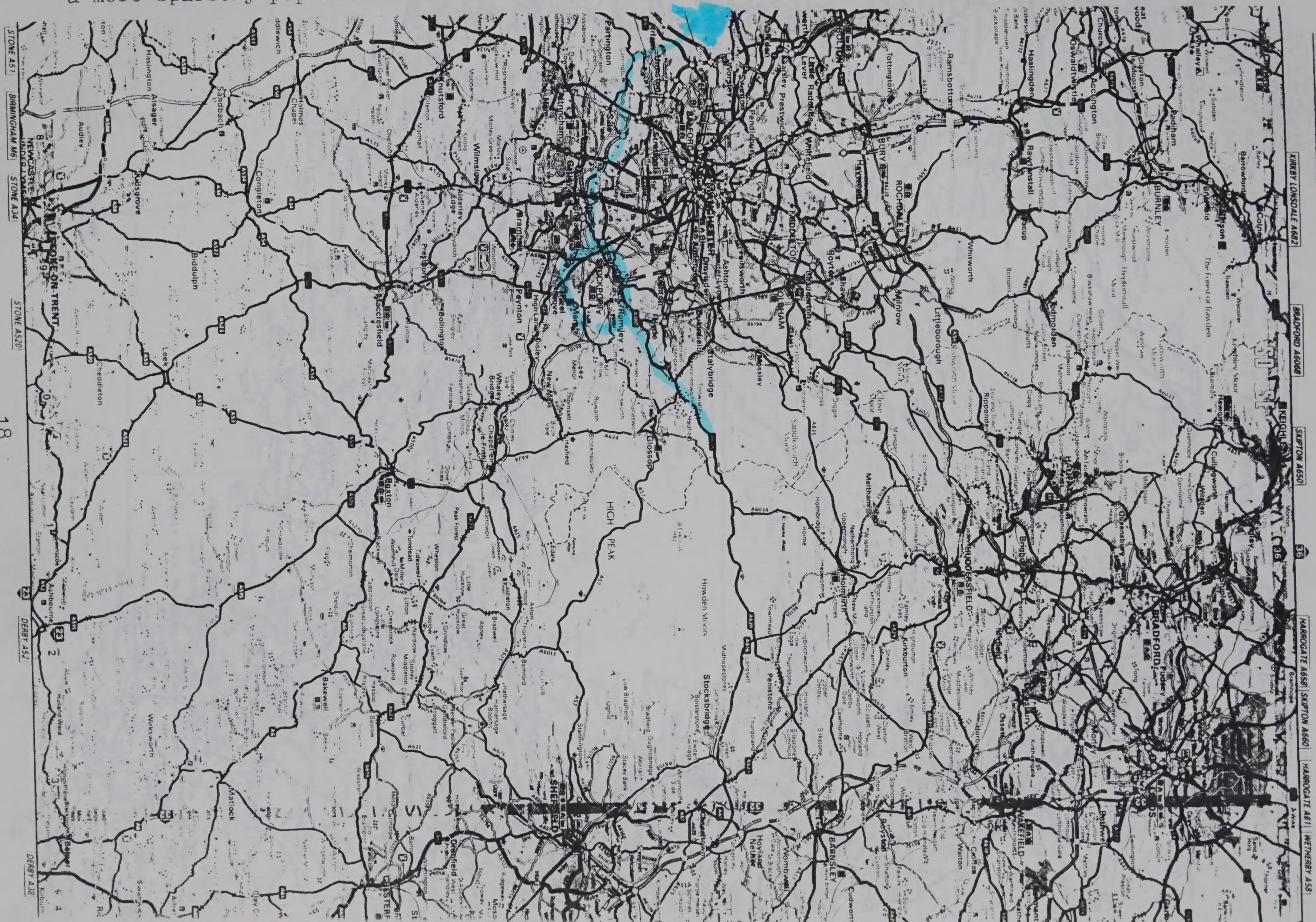
Map showing communities associated with our Dodge Family in England.



ENGLAND AT THE TIME OF THE CIVIL WAR (about 1642)

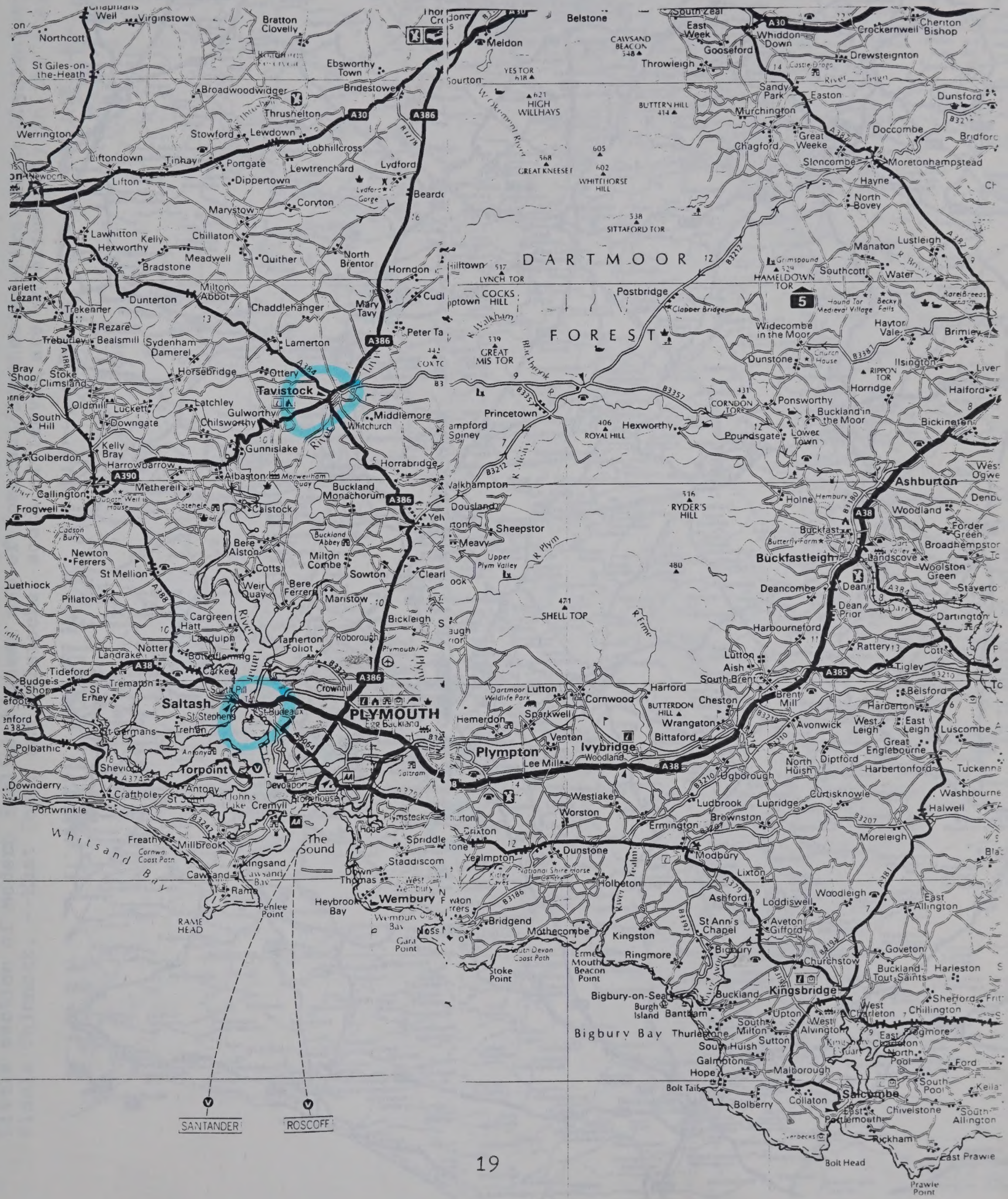
Edinburgh
Dunbar
Coldingham
Melrose
Ayton
SCOTLAND
0 20 40 60 80 100 mls
0 50 100 150 kms
Northumberland
Newcastle
Durham
Cumberland
Westmorland
York
York
Hull
Lancaster
Stockport
Chester
Chester
Derby
Nottingham
R. Trent
Newark
Lincoln
WALES
R. Severn
Salop
Stafford
Leicester
Rutland
Norfolk
Cambridge
Hunts
Suffolk
Northampton
Warwick
Worcester
Worcester
Hereford
Bedford
Essex
Hertford
Buckingham
Oxford
Oxford
Gloucester
Gloucester
Pembroke
Monmouth
R. Thames
Berks.
Middlesex
London
Bristol
Wilts.
Glastonbury
Somerset
Middle Chinnock
East Coker
Halstock
Hants.
Surrey
Kent
Dover
Sussex
Portsmouth
Devon
Dorset
Tavistock
St Budeaux
Plymouth
Cornwall

Modern English Highway Map shows Stockport (Stopworth of old) to be presently a Southeast suburb of Manchester. In the olden days it would have been a town in its own right, in a more sparsely populated area.


STONE A51
BIRMINGHAM M6
STONE A34
STONE A520
DERBY A52
DERBY A38
KIRKBY LONSDALE A682
BRADFORD A6068
SKIPTON A650
HARROGATE A658
SKIPTON A660
HARROGATE A61
WETHERBY A58
MANCHESTER
SALFORD
STOCKPORT
BOLTON
BURY
ROCHDALE
OLDHAM
MIDDLETON
HUDDERSFIELD
BRADFORD
BURNLEY
KEIGHLEY
WAKEFIELD
BARNSLEY
SHEFFIELD
STOKE-ON-TRENT
Macclesfield
Buxton
Leek
Congleton
Knutsford
Wilmslow
Glossop
Stalybridge
Hyde
Ashton
Romiley
Marple
Bramhall
Poynton
Altrincham
Partington
Sandbach
Biddulph
Cheddleton
Ashbourne
Bakewell
Matlock
Chapel-en-le-Frith
Whaley Bridge
New Mills
Littleborough
Todmorden
Halifax
Holmfirth
Penistone
Stocksbridge
Mossley
Whitworth
Ramsbottom
Haslingden
Accrington
Rawtenstall
HIGH PEAK
Howden Moors

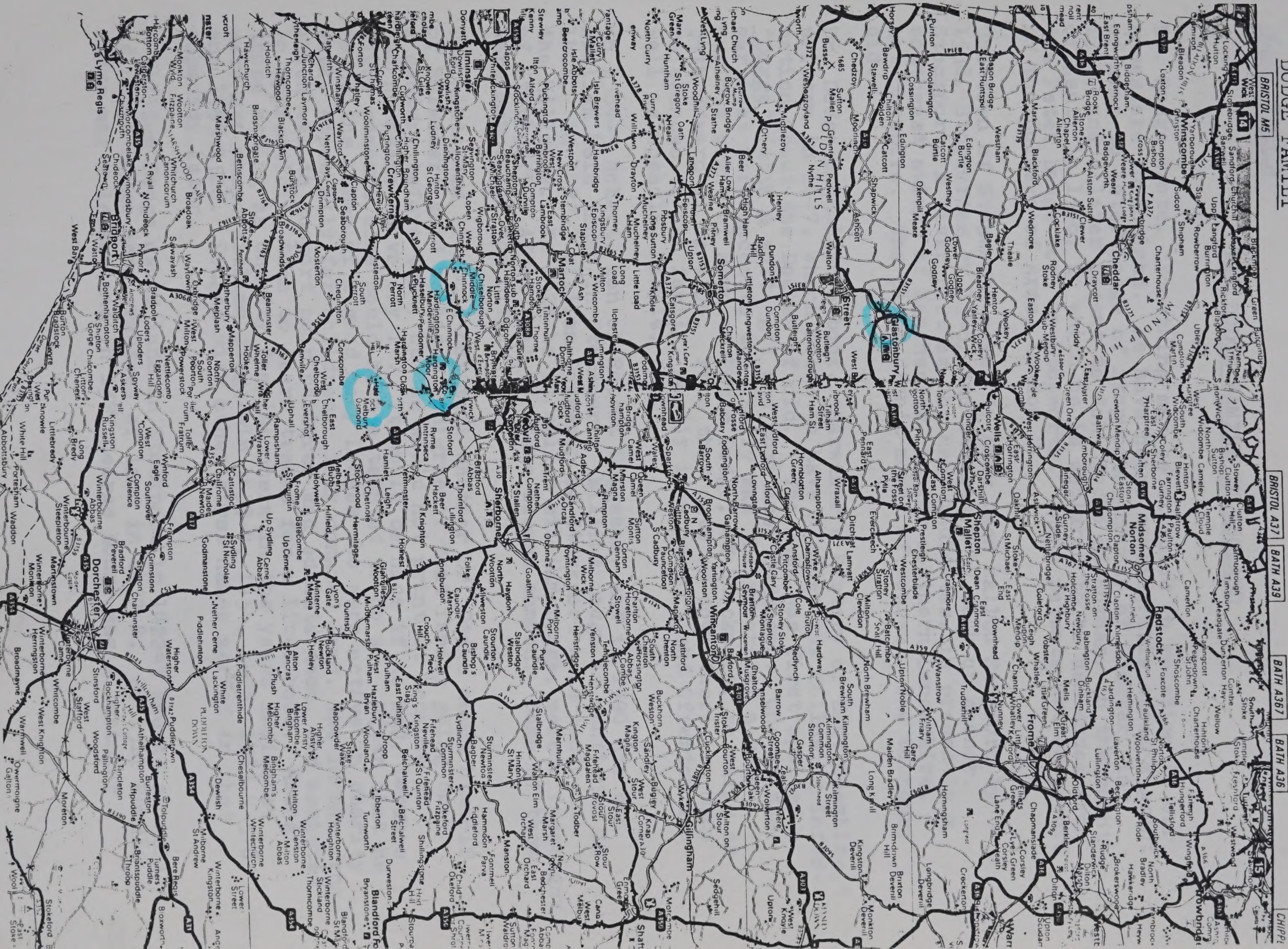
DODGE FAMILY

It is believed that Richard Dodge I was probably born at St. Badeaux, Devonshire, on the Tamar River just west of Plymouth. People who did for sure use the Coat of Arms were then residing at Tavistock, just a few miles north of there.



DARTMOOR
FOREST
Tavistock
PLYMOUTH
Saltash
St Budeaux
Plympton
Ivybridge
Kingsbridge
Salcombe
Ashburton
Buckfastleigh
Whitsand Bay
Bigbury Bay
The Sound
SANTANDER
ROSCOFF

Little section of modern English highway map of Somerset/Dorchestershire shows Glastonbury, Middle Chinnock, --East Coker and Halstocke, south of Yeovil, are unfortunately in the crease.



THE DODGE FAMILY IN ENGLAND

Dr. Dodge wrote, "Something may be expected in relation to our ancestors in England. We have heard considerable about a grant of arms to Peter Dodge of Stopworth, county of Chester, in 1306, and a later patent to John Dodge of Rotham, in the county of Kent, in 1546, in which he is declared to be descended from the Peter Dodge born in Stopworth. These patents are on record in the College of Arms, London."

The town of Stopworth seems to have been called Stopford by 1538, Stopforthe by 1545, and Stockport by 1644 or sooner. Stockport, a river port as the name indicates, is presently a southeast suburb of Manchester, in far southern Lancashire, not Cheshire. The place didn't move, of course. The boundary did.

Dr. Dodge consulted a book, "Earwaker's History of East Cheshire," written in 1877, which seems to have yielded the following information about the Dodges of old. The name was first spelled "Dogge" (with a soft "g") and sometimes Doggeson. One of the earliest references to the family was the record of a very curious grant of arms to Peter Dodge, of Stockport, so early as 34th Edward I, or 1306. From that date on down there are many references to the family, mostly in Stockport and Offerton as well as Cheadle, Marple, etc.

In 1384-5 Robert, son of Robert Doggeson, and in 1390 his son William held lands in Stockport. William Dodge is mentioned in 1408. In 1422-3 William Doggeson of Stockport held lands in the Hillgate. In 1428 he is called William Dogge, mercer (merchant) of Stockport. After that the name became common. Some of them were mayors of the city.

The historian (I could not tell whether Dr. Dodge meant himself of Earwaker) said he had a pedigree of that family going back a century before that, but he would not print it because he had no means to verify it. It would be nice if he had, because maybe someone else could have attempted to do so. After that he found the names of a good many Dodges who were active in charity work, especially for children. They donated land, the income from which was to support poor children and educate them, and assisted in apprenticing them to learn trades for a livelihood. Among those acting as Charity Commissioners in the years indicated were men named William Dodge--in 1433-4, 1454, 1475, 1483-4-5-6 and 1499-1500. Dodges with other first names served in that capacity later.

A William Dodge owned land in Stockport in 1422-3 and he as well as Ralph Dodge were grantees of land in 1437-8. By 1511 Rundle Dodge was a lessee and in 1577 George Dodge was a testator.

DODGE FAMILY

An area newspaper said a Dodge family held a small property in Offerton in the reign of Elizabeth I and were of Holliday Hill in that township for quite some time. Another hamlet in Offerton was called Dodge Fold, named for yeomen members of the family. (Since I do not see Offerton on the map, maybe the burgeoning sprawl of Manchester swallowed it up??) All of these places were in the old "county of Chester."

Since the name, Dodge--in whichever spelling--is so uncommon in England, it is pretty obvious all those people just mentioned were related to the venerable old baron. Likely that first Robert Doggeson (Dogge's son) who had the son Robert was Sir Peter's son or grandson, though it might be hard to prove it. At least it does show that the cradle of the Dodge family was indeed in Cheshire. It seems as though some of them might still be thereabouts. Since under the old English primogeniture system the manor and title usually went to the oldest living son, and especially if some families were large, it is only natural that they should disperse. Families who could afford it attempted to provide younger sons with good educations or apprenticeships in profitable trades so they could have bright futures, often leading them far away.

By the time the Tudors were on the throne many of the more prosperous families had their "London branch," for the sake of trade or to provide access to government circles. That would explain how the Rotham, Kent, family got from Stockport to London and thence to nearby Kent, where lived the John Dodge of the second patent of arms. Circumstantial evidence to support this conclusion may be found in a list of "marriages sanctioned by the Bishop of London," wherein it is stated that a certain Francis Champney, son or Sir John Champney, who died in 1556, married Mary, daughter of Edward Dodge of "Wrotham," Kent. That family would have been surnamed Champney, not Dodge, but this does prove the London-Kent connection.

How our Dodges migrated all the way from Stockport to Tavistock or Glastonbury is hard to know, or whether the move was by land or by water. Since some of the very early Dodges were mercers (merchants) living near a seaport, some of it could have been the result of trade by water routes. The genealogist carried on a correspondence with a man of his day, surgeon Dr. Maurice Doige, who was entitled to use the Dodge arms. He claimed descent from the Cheshire branch but lived in the Tavistock, Devonshire, area. He said most people in England spelled the name as he did. He said some of his ancestors took the motto, "Leni Perfruar Otio" ("Let me enjoy gentle ease") so literally that there was little of the fortune for the later Dodges to enjoy ease with.

DODGE FAMILY

John Dodge (sometimes spelled Doidge) was born in Southwest England during the middle of the reign of Queen Elizabeth I. Probable relatives, using the Dodge coat of arms, were living in the vicinity of Tavistock, Devonshire. Around the turn of the century 1600 A.D. or so, John married Margery (   ) whose maiden name and birthplace have not yet been discovered. Likely the wedding took place in her parish church, wherever that was. There is evidence this couple lived a while at St. Badeaux, Devonshire (now a western suburb of Plymouth) a seaport on the Tamar River about 15 miles or so south of Tavistock.

Other Dodges, probably older sons benefiting from the ancient laws of primogeniture under which the oldest living son inherited the manor house and all the perks of gentle birth, did remain "seated" in the Tavistock area for several hundred years after that, long after our Dodges were in America. They spelled the name "Doidge" and maybe some of them were a little extravagant, for eventually the Duke of Bedford bought the manor house and they dispersed--but even so, some of them continued to use the Dodge coat of arms. It is said that the branch of John Dodge of Wrotham, Kent, who had the patent reconfirmed, died out for lack of male heirs to carry on the name. All of those people claimed descent from the Cheshire branch and from the revered old baron Sir Peter Dodge.

John Dodge was not an eldest son of an eldest son, but he was prominent in his community, called "Mister," a title of honor in those days claimed by perhaps 1% of the population, including the sons, particularly William, after they settled in the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

The family seems to have been well off, and to have had a large flock of sheep. During Elizabeth's reign, England's greatest source of wealth was still derived from the woollen and cloth industries. Indirect written evidence also shows that they were painstaking yeoman farmers owning horses and oxen. (Horses for riding and oxen for farm work?) By the time John made his will near the close of his life, the parents were living in Middlechinnock, Somersetshire, and owned other property at Halstock, Dorsetshire very close by. Both places are just a little south of Yeovil. By then the oldest son, Richard, was already living near Glastonbury 25 miles or so north of them. All of these places are pretty far from Plymouth. It does show that if they could move all that way in one generation it would be no trick at all to migrate from Stockport, Cheshire, in over 300 years.

John Dodge of Middlechinnock, Somersetshire, England, made his will on 2 April 1635. It was proved 15 October 1635, so he must have died in late summer or early fall. Abstract of his will, which was printed over a hundred years ago (1890) in the New England Historic and Genealogic Register, follows on the next page.

"To be buried in churchyard there. To the church 10 shillings. The same to the poor of the parish. To the minister for preaching funeral sermon, ten shillings. Wife Margery shall hold and enjoy one tenement in the parish of Halstocke, Co. Dorset, containing by estimation ten acres more or less, during her life natural if my sons Michael and William shall happen so long to live. To Wife Margery forty pounds and the bed that I now lie in and the bedstead and all things belonging thereunto. I give and bequeath unto her so much of my other household stuff as she shall think most needful and useful for her.
Item. I give and bequeath unto my son William forty pounds more, over and above that portion which I have already given him. To my son Richard one sheep and to take his choice in my whole flock; and to John son of said Richard forty shillings. To Mary my daughter twenty shillings and to her son John twenty shillings. And my will is that all these goods shall be delivered half a year after my decease.
Item. All the rest of my goods unmentioned I give and bequeath unto my son Michael whom I make and ordain the executor of this my last will and testament."

The witnesses were George Parsons, clerk; William Dodge, William Templeman. It would appear that John was also a Puritan, for he asked for a minister to preach at his funeral, not an Anglican Mass. When Mother Margery died, or any copy of a will evidently have not been found.

Children of John and Margery (?) Dodge:

Richard	(ca 1602-15 Jun 1672)	m. ca 1631	Edith (______)	(1603-1678)
William	(1604-1692)	ca 1635	Elizabeth(___)	( )
Michael	(16)	?		
Mary	(16)	?		

All we know about Mary is that she had a son John and that she and the son were living in England when her father died.
Michael lived and died in East Coker, Somerset, was church warden, and had five children. His son William came to Beverly, Massachusetts Bay Colony before 1665 when he married Elizabeth Haskell there. He was given the nickname, "Coker William" to distinguish him from "Farmer William," thus avoiding confusion. When his Uncle William died in 1692, Coker William demanded that the heirs give him 15 acres of land which he said his uncle had promised him if he would come to New England. They claimed this was the first they had heard of that and wondered why he had waited 27 years to mention it. Perhaps he thought the land would be willed to him.

The heirs were not sure what to think. For the sake of their father's good name they compromised and gave him half of what he asked, or 7½ acres of land.

DODGE FAMILY IN AMERICA

In 1629 a heavily-loaded fleet of five sailing ships left England for the avowed purpose of establishing a colony in the New World. One of them, called the Lyon's Whelpe, carried a young man, William Dodge, brother of our ancestor, Richard Dodge I.

Great care had been taken by the London Company to make this venture a success. Five years earlier the Plymouth Company (of Mayflower fame) had failed in their attempt to set up a colony at Cape Ann, for by 1626 most of those settlers had gone on to other places, some even to Virginia or back to England, leaving few there besides a grieving Reverend John White, who ministered to the Indians at "Naimkeke" (or Naumkeag, later renamed Salem).

This time the London Company worked hard to have ample provisions and otherwise lay firm groundwork to ensure success. During preparations they wrote to Governor Endicott, requesting that he "....show all lawful favor and respect unto the planters that come over in the Lyon's Whelpe out of the counties of Dorset and Somerset; appoint unto William Dodge, a skilful and painful husbandman, the charge of a team of horses..." There were five vessels in"The Fleet."

Talbot - 300 tons, 10 guns, 30 men, 100 planters, 6 goats, 5 pieces of ordnance, 12 months' food--mostly grain, pease, etc.
Lyon's Whelpe (also called George Bonaventure) - 120 tons, 8 guns, many mariners, 40 planters, 4 goats, provisions - 125 people total
Four Sisters - 300 tons, many "cattell", passengers and provisions.
Mayflower - Yes, the same! Freighted with emigrants and supplies.
George - 300 tons, 20 guns, 30 men, cattell, 12 mates, 30 kyne, some goats, 52 planters and many provisions.

Emigrants added up to 60 married and unmarried females, 26 children, and 300 men, 386 persons in all, with supplies of food, arms, tools, and 140 head of cattle (and obviously horses and other animals). The Lyons Whelpe loaded up with provisions in the Thames in April. By May 8 it docked at Yarmouth, a port on the NW part of the Isle of Wight--that is probably where the passengers from the West of England boarded. By May 11th they were on their way, and arrived at Naumkeag on 29 June 1620 according to the calendar, Old Style.

William settled in what is now called Beverly but until 1668 was part of Salem called the Bass River side, separated from Salem proper by the Bay. His name does not appear on the records of the first church of Salem; but it is said they did not require membership as a prerequisite for voting rights, grants of land or public office; he did join the second church many years later. Out of a list of the first 400 early settlers of Salem, only seven were called by the respectful title of "Mister," and he was one of them. That custom did not change for at least two more generations, and then only gradually. William was the trailblazer of the family. He was sought after as an extremely desirable settler and served in many public offices and responsibilities, seemingly always elected and always in demand.

William and Elizabeth Dodge had four children:

Capt. John who married Sarah Proctor. 7 children
Capt. William who married 1-widow Mary (Conant) Balch. 2-widow Joanna (Hale) Larkin. 3-widow Mary Creatty. He was a hero in defense against Indian massacres at Bloody Brook. 9 children.
Hannah who married 1-Samuel Porter, a seaman who died aboard a ship bound for the Barbadoes leaving her with a baby son. 2-Thomas Woodbury, a farmer. 9 children
Probably Josiah Dodge who was killed by the Indians in King Phillips War.

Page 9 of the Dodge Genealogy says the following: "The fact that William Dodge came to Salem nine years earlier than Richard gave him more prominence in the community, but the same fact implies a greater degree of enterprise, if not ability, than was shown by the act of following where another had led the way. Hence, William has sometimes been called the father of all the Dodges. The records, however, indicate that the descendants of Richard Dodge are much more numerous than those of William, as might be expected since the latter left but two sons while Richard left five."

That can be taken for what it is worth. Probably they simply had different priorities, with the gregarious William liking politics and the more retiring Richard loving the land and peace and quiet. William's wife Elizabeth seems to have been religious but he did not join until the second church was built a great many years later. Richard and Edith joined very soon and were liberal contributors. But then, Richard was financially very prosperous. He also placed great value in education, for when it was time to build Harvard College he pledged ten times more than anyone else in his vicinity.

It appears that earlier generations enjoyed contrasting the brothers. Another of those colorful traditions some descendants held was that William was tall in person with black hair and a dark complexion. Richard's descendants are of sandy hair and complexion, or "speckled," and John's descendants are of light hair and complexion, or blonds. Since the person who related that thought William was married in Lancashire, that might someday provide a link between our branch and the Stockport people, if it can be substantiated.

Because most early immigrants to Massachusetts arrived in the 23-year period before Cromwell came to power in 1643, those of us with New England ancestry can usually trace it back to a very few very prolific families. The thin, rock-strewn soils of New England with their short growing seasons did produce a bumper crop of one thing--babies. The typical family had about a dozen. Many infants did not survive, but those who did were amazingly healthy.

The surname "Dodge" with all its various spellings still is not very common in England. As we have seen "Coker William" had no sons who lived. Nearly everyone of the surname in America today is sprung from the two brothers Richard and William, and from a Tristan Dodge who settled early on Block Island in the state of Rhode Island. Tristan seems not to have been from Southwest England but he, also, claimed descent from the early Cheshire branch.

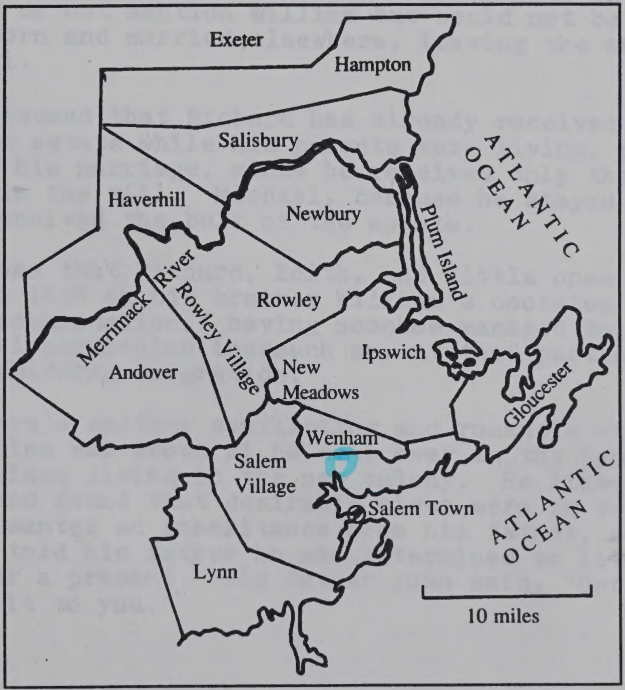
DODGE FAMILY

Seems like everyone wants to claim Baron Peter Dodge!

Despite all the speculation in print about the personalities of Richard and William Dodge, the known facts point to one inescapable conclusion--theirs was a close-knit family and the brothers cared very much about each other's welfare. One wonders whether, looking down from their Puritan heaven, they would approve of all the stories contrasting them. Somehow I doubt it.

Some of the source material used so far includes the following:

New England Register 44:297 - Henry F. Waters "Gleanings in England"
"Ancestors & Descendants of John Dodge 1816-1898" - Marilyn and Phillip Slinger (1978)
"Genealogy of the Dodge Family of Essex County, MA" - Joseph Thompson Dodge, Ph. D. (2 Volumes 1894 and 1898)


Exeter
Hampton
Salisbury
ATLANTIC OCEAN
Haverhill
Newbury
Plum Island
Merrimack River
Rowley Village
Rowley
Andover
New Meadows
Ipswich
Gloucester
Wenham
Salem Village
Salem Town
ATLANTIC OCEAN
Lynn
10 miles

Essex County and the towns of Hampton and Exeter in 1643.

Richard Dodge[1] was born about 1602 or earlier, probably at St. Badeaux, Devonshire. It may be that he was a little older than is generally assumed, as one of the later discoveries was that in 1616 he went from St. Badeaux to East Coker, Somerset, but since the writer does not know whether he was taken there as an adolescent or moved there as an adult, will leave the story stand as earlier reported.

About 1626 or 7 he married Edith (________) whose last name has not been learned. The marriage most likely took place in her home parish, probably in Southeast Somerset or a short distance away in Dorsetshire, for they lived near the boundary and the family also had property there. It would be awfully nice to know more about her.

In 1633 he was admitted as a "tenant by entry-hold"(which I take to be a very long-term lease, perhaps a hundred years? if not an outright purchase) of lands in Helyar Manor at East Coker which had come into possession of a Helyar family in 1616. Richard farmed at the manor for about five years. He still retained that property or other property in England and did not sell it when he sailed for New England; for he drew rents from lands in England all the rest of his life, willing that revenue to Edith when he passed away.

Records have been found of the birth of Michael's and Richard's first four children, two of whom died as infants in East Coker. The records do not mention William but would not be expected to if he was born and married elsewhere, leaving the area when he was about 21.

It can be assumed that Richard had already received his portion of his father's estate while his parents were living, probably about the time of his marriage, since he received only the token bequest of a sheep in the will. Michael, because he stayed in England, naturally received the bulk of the estate.

The story goes that Richard, Edith, and little ones John and Mary, showed up in 1638 on his brother William's doorstep in Salem "desiring accommodation," having somehow managed to cross the ocean without royal permission inasmuch as, at that particular time, the King was forbidding emigration.

However, there's another conflicting and romantic story that when brother William was about 21 he came over in the Lyon's Whelpe to see how he liked living in the new colony. He liked it fine, but was lonely and found that desirable wives were in very short supply. Besides, he wanted an inheritance from his father, so he went back to England, told his father he was determined to live in America, and asked for a present. His father John said, "Get married and I will give it to you."

William wanted a wife, anyway, so he tried but met with two refusals. Few young ladies wanted to leave the comfortable life of Somersetshire for a rugged life in the distant wilderness. He finally met Elizabeth (last name unknown, not Haskell) and they fell in love. He got his wedding present, a fine pair of bulls which came in very handy in New England. Adding some plausibility to that story is the signature of a William Dodge as witness to his father's will in 1635.

The story continues that when William returned to Naumkeag (Salem) he brought back with him his brothers Richard and John. If the word "brother" is interpreted in an ancient way as "kinsman" that makes sense. The only possible John Dodge they could have meant was Richard's small son, born in England in 1631, named for his grandfather.

The reason Richard Dodge, at least 36 years old, and his family left their comfortable manor home in England may never be known for sure. Likely they were under pressure because of their Puritan religion. At any rate we learn that the ship they came in arrived in July, 1638. Contrary to the popular impression, others came at the same time, "requesting accommodation." Translation: requesting grants of land on which to build homes, and farmland. That meeting of the town fathers did not occur until 29 October, so we are told that they stayed on land belonging to his brother for the rest of summer and early fall, which makes sense.

Sidney Perley, in his Salem history, tells about the others who were fellow petitioners at that meeting. The reader will probably enjoy hearing a little about that. One newcomer was George Curwin, a man of education and property born 1610 in Cumberland County, England. He and his wife and two children were admitted. He wore a seal ring cut with his coat of arms. He became a merchant and his son, Hon. Jonathan Corwin, merchant, was one of the judges at the later Salem witchcraft trials. A grandson, Capt. George Corwin, was a sheriff who executed the witches.

Also requesting admittance was Robert Buffum, about the same age, many of whose descendants later became Quakers. Also Mark Vermais and the widow Alice Vermais, probably his mother. (Perley did not say so but the Vermais family was probably related to Mrs. Joanna Towne whose daughters, Rebecca Nurse, Mary Easty and Sarah Cloyce, were accused of witchcraft and the first two executed. Over a hundred years later Richard Dodge V married Mrs. Towne's descendant, Lois Towne.)

The other petitioners are listed as Robert Penn, Joshua Verin, Thomas Truslar, and Henry Cooke, a butcher.

So you can see that this "request for accommodation" was not an isolated event as some of the Dodge genealogies make it out to be. During that meeting he was officially received as an inhabitant. Very shortly after he received ten acres. Within a month he and

his brother were granted 80 acres more. In three years they gave him 40 acres more. In June 1646 during a special ceremony he was made a freeman. Later he purchased another 40 acres from Roger Haskel, a relative of "Coker William's" wife.

The land the family settled on was called "Dodge's Row" in East Wenham. They later donated land there for a village cemetery. Perley says the house was not really large, being two stories high and having a parlor, and that it stood on the south side of what is now Dodge Street in East Beverly (boundaries having changed) It was about a quarter of a mile easterly of Alewive Brook. He says the house went to son Joseph^2 and then Dr. Joseph^3 and then it burned 29 May 1736. That would be a discrepancy with other reports, which say the property has remained in possession of male Dodge descendants ever since over these many centuries "although the house has greatly changed with a one-time cabinet shop turned around and enclosed within a dwelling"--except that neither report says the original structure is still standing. However, the house is at the original site. The house now there is ancient.

Richard had a very high regard for the value of education. When a collection was taken to raise money to build Harvard College, he gave ten times as much as the next largest contributor in his area.

After a quiet but financially successful life this devout and generous Puritan ancestor, Richard Dodge I, died on 15 June 1671, age about 69 years or perhaps more. He left a large estate of L1764 s2 but more importantly seven fine living children to produce future Dodges. Edith survived him, living another seven years to 27 June 1678, age 75.

Photocopies of their wills are included in an appendix. They were buried in that same cemetery that he donated to the town. However, in 1962 a Dodge descendant living in New England visited the cemetery and found no gravestones then marking their graves. He and his helpers cleaned up the old part of the cemetery and treated the markers that were there to make them readable. He decorated the Revolutionary War veterans' graves, and had a huge rock brought in, inscribed as a memorial. For anyone who would like to visit, it is Lot #63.

Children of Richard I and Edith Dodge:

Richard	1628- died young		
Margery	1630- 2 Feb 1631		(age 4 months)
(Lt)John	1631-11 Oct 1711	m. ca 1660	Sarah (______)(1646-1706)
Mary	1632-18 Aug 1710	1653	Zechary Herick (1636-1695)
+RichardII	1642-13 Apr 1705	23 Feb 1667	Mary Eaton (?1645-1716)
Sarah	1644- ? 1726	Jul 1667	Peter Woodberry (1640-1709)
Samuel	1645- 4 Dec 1705	ca 1667	Mary Parker (1647-1717)
Joseph	1651- 1 Aug 1716	21 Feb 1671	Sarah Eaton (1650-1714)
Edward	165--14 Feb 1727	30 Apr 1673	Mary Haskell (1660-1737)

The first four of the children were born in East Coker, Somersetshire. The oldest two died very young. John and Mary came with their parents on the sailing ship from England. The rest of them were born in Salem (or North Beverly dependent on boundary changes). They all settled near the parents. As you can see from the father's will, he provided well for their mother, who lived with two amicable youngest sons, Joseph and Edward who shared the home estate, valued at about L1000, with their mother until she died seven years later. The other sons each received farms worth at least L100 and the daughters, who married neighbors, were given nice doweries.

Since this account follows our ancestor, Richard II, thumbnail sketches about his brothers and sisters are below:

Probably because he was the oldest second-generation Dodge in this country and the only male born in England, a great deal was expected of John. At any rate, he seems to have taken after his Uncle William in his willingness to serve the public and was on many committees, etc., a list of which took two full pages. No wonder generations to come were confused, considering him one of the immigrant brothers.

John settled in Beverly and built a saw mill and (probably) the grist mill at Wenham Neck which was in use until 1822. He received 80 acres of land near his mill from his father, and another 5 acres of meadow. Besides being a deputy to the court and selectman, he was a military lieutenant, probably in 1683, age about 53, when he became standard bearer of a squadron of troops from Beverly and Wenham. No combat duty was mentioned, or else the writer did not find it.

It is really too bad that the last name of John's wife, Sarah, has not been found. She was a spirited lady who fought for what she believed in. The town of Wenham annexed their home in North Beverly much against the family's wishes and those of most of their close neighbors. They protested by refusing to pay taxes to Wenham. Troopers from Wenham went to their home while her husband was away and seized pewter platters and other valuable items for taxes over the objection and resistance of Sarah, whom they threw down and hurt her. A neighbor and his son tripped them up and so saved her. A trooper, Thomas Hobbs, age 48, later testified, "She took me by the hair of the head and did strike me." A brother-in-law, Zachariah Herick, saw her the night of the fray and said she was much bruised, that they had struck her a blow to the head of which she much complained. The couple had 8 children.

Mary Dodge may have been the Marie who was baptized in England in 1635, though her reputed age at death in 1710 was given as 78 years. Her husband, Zachary Herrick, was the man present after the fray at his sister-in-law's house. The couple lived on a farm given to him by his father, at Birch Plain. He was a carpenter. He had some slight connection with the witchcraft delusion of 1692. The couple had 8 children.

DODGE FAMILY

Sarah Dodge married Deacon Peter Woodbury as his second wife and raised his two-year old son as well as the nine children they had together. Their home on the street called Dodge's Row, was still in possession of the Woodbury family up to this present century.

Very little has been reported about Samuel except that he appears to have been a prosperous farmer. They had 9 children.

Edward Dodge is described as having had a kindly disposition. He served on various committees, was at times constable, tax collector, highway surveyor, selectman and so on. His wife, Mary Haskell, was related to "Coker William's" wife. 8 children.

Joseph married Sarah Eaton of Reading, undoubtedly at least a distant relative of his brother, Richard's wife, our ancestor Mary (Eaton) Dodge. Joseph and Edward jointly inherited their father's homestead which they divided amicably, in writing. His son, Dr. Joseph Dodge, inherited the house part which is still in the possession of his descendants. The couple had 10 children.

Some references for sections on William and Richard Dodge[1] are:

Town Records of Salem, Vol I

New England Historic and Genealogical Register XV:254-5, XLIV:297-8, XLVI:383-91

Vital Records (separately) of Wenham, Beverly, Reading MA

Essex Probate Court Records II:230-3, III:198-9
Quarterly " " I:96, IV:404-6, 452

Pope's Pioneers p.141 - Charles H. Pope, Gen Pub Co. 1900, repr 1991 (plus other pages for non-Dodge connecting lines)

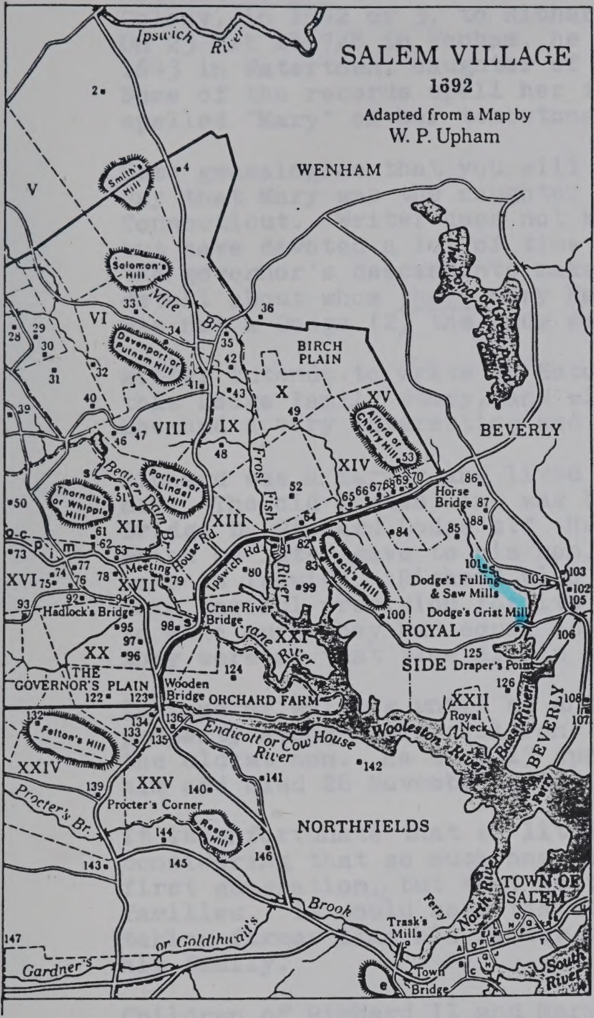
Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines - Mary Walton Ferris

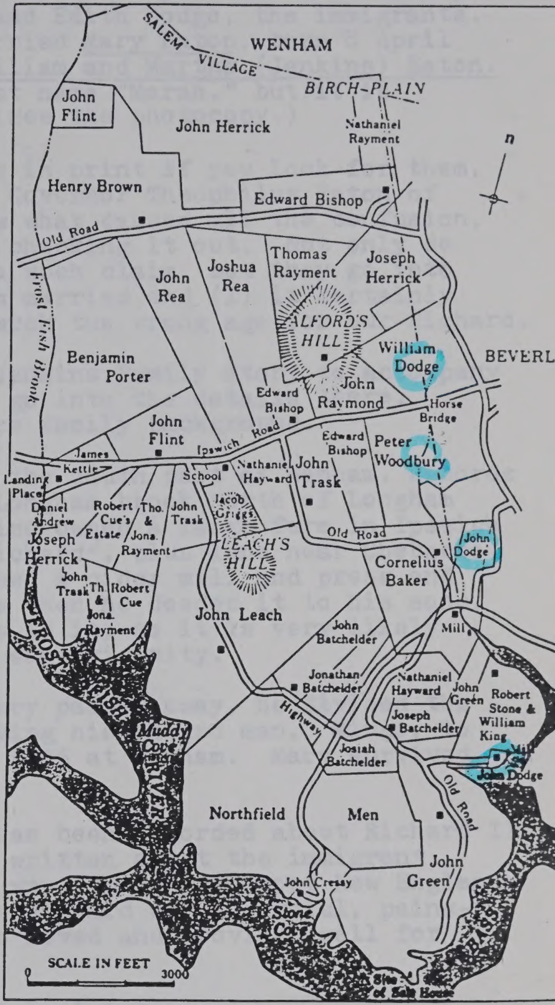
History of Salem Vol II:38-45, etc. - Sidney Perley

New England Marriages Prior to 1700 - Clarence Almon Torrey, GPC 1985

Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620-1700 - Frank R. Holmes

Search for the Passengers of the Mary & John 1630, Vol. 18-West Country Ancestries pages 43-5, etc. - Mary & John Clearing House, Toledo, Ohio, 1992


SALEM VILLAGE
1692
Adapted from a Map by
W. P. Upham
Ipswich River
WENHAM
Smith's Hill
Solomon's Hill
Davenport or Putnam Hill
Mile Br.
BIRCH PLAIN
The Pond or Great Pond
Alford or Cherry Hill
BEVERLY
Frost Fish Br.
Porter's or Lindal Hill
Thorndike or Whipple Hill
Beaver Dam Br.
Meeting House Rd.
Ipswich Rd.
River
Leach's Hill
Horse Bridge
Dodge's Fulling & Saw Mills
Dodge's Grist Mill
Crane River Bridge
Crane River
ROYAL SIDE
Draper's Point
Hadlock's Bridge
THE GOVERNOR'S PLAIN
Wooden Bridge
ORCHARD FARM
Royal Neck
Bass River
BEVERLY
Endicott or Cow House River
Wooleston River
Felton's Hill
Procter's Corner
Procter's Br.
NORTHFIELDS
Read's Hill
TOWN OF SALEM
Ferry
North River
Trask's Mills
Brook or Goldthwaits
Gardner's
Town Bridge
South River
V
VI
VIII
IX
X
XII
XIII
XIV
XV
XVI
XVII
XX
XXI
XXII
XXIV
XXV
87
101
102
106
127


SALEM VILLAGE
WENHAM
BIRCH-PLAIN
John Flint
John Herrick
Nathaniel Rayment
n
Henry Brown
Edward Bishop
Old Road
Frost Fish Brook
John Rea
Joshua Rea
Thomas Rayment
Joseph Herrick
ALFORD'S HILL
William Dodge
BEVERL
Benjamin Porter
Edward Bishop
John Raymond
Horse Bridge
John Flint
Ipswich Road
Edward Bishop
Peter Woodbury
James Kettle
Landing Place
Nathaniel Hayward
John Trask
School
Daniel Andrew
Robert Cue's Estate
Tho. & Jona. Rayment
John Trask
Jacob Griggs
LEACH'S HILL
Old Road
John Dodge
Joseph Herrick
Cornelius Baker
John Trask
Th. & Jona. Rayment
Robert Cue
John Leach
Mill
John Batchelder
FROST FISH RIVER
Jonathan Batchelder
Nathaniel Hayward
John Green
Robert Stone & William King
Joseph Batchelder
Highway
Muddy Cove River
Josiah Batchelder
Mill
John Dodge
Old Road
Northfield
Men
John Green
John Cresay
Stone Cove
BASS RIVER
SCALE IN FEET
3000
Site of Salt House

*Adapted from maps by Sidney Perley.

The right map is a closeup of the one at left. Both show where some of the second generation Dodges lived. #87=Deacon Peter Woodberry. #101=Capt. John Dodge. #102=Herrick Family. #106=Haskells. #127=Parkers. Zachary Herrick's farm was at Birch Plain. Richard II lived just across the line in Wenham near Zachary.

We had many ancestors living in Salem (Rea, Flint, Leach to name a few) who will be told about in other parts of this book.

Richard Dodge^2 (Richard^1) was born in Beverly, Massachusetts Bay Colony, in 1642 or 3, to Richard and Edith Dodge, the immigrants. On 23 Feb 1667/8 in Wenham, he married Mary Eaton, born 8 April 1643 in Watertown, daughter of William and Martha (Jenkins) Eaton. Some of the records spell her first name "Marah." but it is spelled "Mary" on her tombstone. (See the photocopy.)

Some genealogies that you will see in print if you look for them, say that Mary was the daughter of Governor Theophilus Eaton of Connecticut. Writer does not know what caused all the confusion, but have devoted a lot of time to checking it out. Not only do the governor's descendants make no such claim, but they go into detail about whom their Mary Eaton married and (1) it certainly was not a Dodge (2) the lady was much the wrong age for our Richard.

Writer intends to write an Eaton-Jenkins Family story to accompany this Dodge Family story, and will go into the details there. She had a very interesting and nice family background.

Richard was a farmer and lived in the south part of Wenham. Records say, "The old Wenham line was by Longham brook North of Longham Bridge by Richard Dodge's." He also owned a large farm in Ipswich which he later gave to his son, Richard^3, plus land near Chebacco Lake in Ipswich. Richard also owned a cider mill and press and make careful provision for its use when he deeded it to his sons, to make sure they had equal access to it, so it is very likely they were at that time all in the same vicinity.

Instead of waiting until he and Mary passed away, he divided the property among their children, giving his "negro man," Mingo, to the oldest son. He died 13 April 1705 at Wenham. Mary survived him and died 28 November 1716.

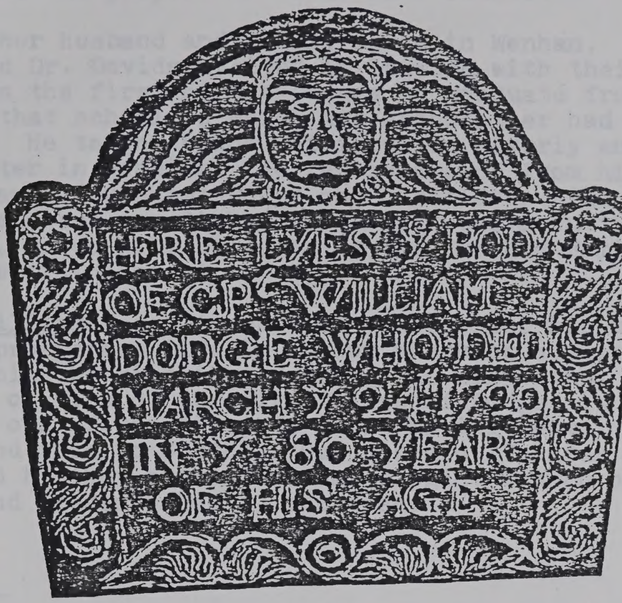
It is unfortunate that so little has been recorded about Richard II considering that so much has been written about the immigrant first generation, but that is the way it was with most New England families. It would seem that this Richard was a careful, pains-taking farmer like his father, who loved and provided well for his family.

Children of Richard II and Mary (Eaton) Dodge:

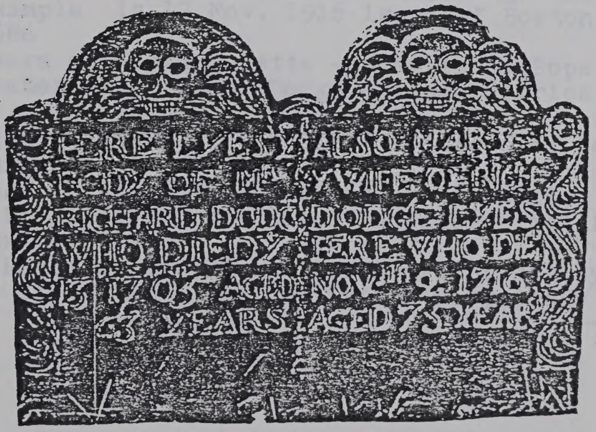
+Richard^3	12 Jul 1670-	7 Jul 1739	m. 16 Nov 1694	Martha Low
Mary	30 Mar 1672-	17	1705	Charles Gott
Martha	7 Jun 1674-	1736	31 May 1705	Dr John Davidson
Daniel	26 Apr 1677-	30 Apr 1740	26 Jun 1706	Joanna Burnham
William	1678-	20 Oct 1765	27 Jul 1699	Prudence Fairfield (1)
			aft.1737	Abigail Giddings (2)

DODGE FAMILY

Below are photostatic copies of three gravestones. The top stone is that of Captain William Dodge, son of William the Immigrant. Beneath are the stones of our ancestors, Richard II and Mary (Eaton) Dodge.


HERE LYES Y BODY
OF CPt WILLIAM
DODGE WHO DIED
MARCH Y 24 1720
IN Y 80 YEAR
OF HIS AGE

BEVERLY.


HERE LYES Y BODY OF Mr RICHARD DODG WHO DIED Y 15 1705 AGED 73 YEARS
ALSO MARY Y WIFE OF RICH DODGE LYES HERE WHO DE NOVbr 2 1716 AGED 75 YEAR

NORTH BEVERLY.

Since we will follow Richard III, a word or two about the others:

On 31 May 1705 Richard, Daniel, William, and Mary (who had not yet married Mr. Gott) joined in a deed of 4½ acres of marsh land in Chebacco-Ipswich to John and Martha Davidson to carry out what they alleged was the purpose of their late father.

Mary and her husband and family lived in Wenham.
Martha and Dr. Davidson lived in Ipswich with their family.
Daniel was the first of the Dodges to graduate from Harvard College in 1700--that school to which his grandfather had made such a large donation. He taught school at first in Beverly and by 1715 was schoolmaster in Reading. He received land from his father. He and Joanna (Burnham) Dodge had 6 children. (We haven't gotten to that yet, but our Richard IV's wife was a Tuttle and her mother a Burnham, so we will be covering the Burnham Family as one of our Dodge ancestral lines.)

Brother William Dodge (named, of course, for his uncle) spent a long and prosperous life in Wenham where he acquired a large amount of land which he distributed among his many sons. Interesting from the point of view of our direct line of Dodges is that his son, Isaac was one of the first to start moving West. He moved to Boxwood and then to Sutton. Our Richard IV later moved there, surrounded by that prosperous and elegant branch of the family. William and Prudence had 10 children.

Sources:
Two bad examples showing wrong ancestry of Mary Eaton Dodge:
  Colonial Dames of America Ancestral Records & Portraits, p.201
  Current (1992) Ancestral File printout--Latter Day Saints
  (Writer is confident they will soon change that.)
A correct example is 13 Nov. 1916 issue of Boston Transcript Item #5686
Pope's Pioneers of Massachusetts - Charles H. Pope
  See alphabetically under Dodge, Eaton, Herrick, Haskell, Woodbery, etc.
Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England - James Savage
Ships Passenger List of the Hercules, which sailed 11 May 1637
History and Biography of the Eaton Families - Nellie Z.R. Molyneaux (1911)
New England Register 37:378 and 76:54 are primarily about the ancestry of Martha (Jenkins) Eaton, Mary Dodge's mother.

Richard Dodge^3 (Richard^2 Richard^1) was born in Wenham, Essex County, Massachusetts, on 12 July 1670, to Richard and Mary (Eaton) Dodge. On 16 November 1694, he married Martha Low born 10 Mar 1669 daughter of Deacon Thomas and Martha (Boreman) Low in Ipswich. Data about the Boreman and Low Families will also be provided separately. Deacon and Mrs. Low had another daughter, Joanna, who married Richard's cousin, Antipas^3(Samuel^2 Richard^1) Dodge.

Richard was a prosperous farmer who received a very good start in life from his father who deeded him on 1 Dec. 1703, more than a year before his death, "the house, barn and outhousing in Ipswich which said Richard dwells in; also the farm on which it stands, viz., 100 acres which I bought of Mr. Hincksman, excepting just twenty acres to be cut off from the western end of said land by a line dividing said land and from White's land; also six or seven acres of low marsh that has been in his occupation for divers years, being part of what I purchased of James Burnham of Ipswich; also so much as is bounded on east side by widow Fellows' marsh, south by creek, west by Lieut. Ingall's, and north by my brother, Samuel Dodge's, marsh. Also one third part of upper marsh I bought of Mr. Wade; also one third part of one acre I bought of Mr. Wise; also the privilege of grinding apples at my mill, not injuring my sons, Daniel and William, of making their cider; also the right of passage through my cow pasture; also my negro man, Mingo."

Maybe we should not be so surprised about Mingo, considering that Salem, so close by, was already a center of commerce with its very profitable sailing ships--rum to Africa for slaves for the West Indies paid for by molasses which they had made into rum in Salem or Newport to pay for more slaves. Such was the state of civilization that the whole world thought that was okay, including, obviously, the Dodges. I'd better leave this subject, just hope they were gentle with Mingo!

Another indicator of the times was that Richard and Martha's young adulthood was during the period of witchcraft hysteria that swept through their area. It does not appear that they or any of their children were involved in that sorry mess though, as we shall see, their grandson Richard V married Lois Towne whose family had been one of the greatest sufferers of all. Writer does not know how much credence to place in it, but an interesting book I own postulates that people from southwest England, which the Dodges were, were more inclined to scoff at the idea of witches whereas people from the Norfolk area (as were the Townes and some of their accusers) with their Viking ancestry were much impressed with the spirit world, their ancestors having seen a troll under every bridge. Martha (Low) Dodge's ancestors came from the south coast of England and from the Banbury area.

"Albion's Seed--Four British Folkways in America" by David H. Fischer Oxford Univ. Press (1989)

Son Barnabas married in 1728 and Paul in 1732. Two years later the youngest son Richard became serious about a young lady named Sarah Tuttle. The parents decided it was time to set their sons up with farms of their own. So on 3 July 1734 Richard III deeded each of the two oldest a third each of a large farm he had purchased of John Quarles. He waited until 2 October 1734 after Richard IV had married in August to give him his portion.

Then in 1737, two years before his own death and when most likely the mother, Martha, was seriously ill, more property went to the three sons by deed of division. In 1740, evidently on administration of his estate after his death (and Barnabas having died two months after his father) more property was divided between Paul and Richard IV.

Richard the father died 7 August 1739, age 69. Evidently Martha died first, for though the date on her stone is illegible, it says she was 68 years and 9 months. Knowing her birthdate, it would have been late in 1737. Both of them are buried in the cemetery on Dodge's Row.

Children of Richard III and Martha (Low) Dodge:

Martha	29 May 1696-05 Oct 1721 m		Rev. John Conant
Nathaniel	08 Oct 1698-died young		
Lucy	31 May 1700-	23 Jan 1716/7	Daniel Conant
Nathaniel	01 Dec 1701-died young		
Margaret	02 Sep 1702-no record		
Barnabas	1706-11 Oct 1739	27 Sep 1728	Martha Perkins
Paul	1708- 3 Jan 1773	(1)19 Nov 1732	Jerusha Dodge
		(2)25 Feb 1735	Faith Jewett
+Richard	11 Nov 1710-17 Oct 1776	16 Aug 1734	Sarah Tuttle

Since we follow Richard^4 here are some notes on some of his brothers and sisters. One will notice that as we go along the amount known gets more and more sparse.

Martha married Rev. John Conant, son of John and Bethia Conant, born 7 July 1686. Lucy married his brother, Daniel. Since they were not our ancestors, no attempt to research the Conant family has been made. It is thought that the second Nathaniel also died young but no further record was found on him or Margaret.

The part about Barnabas is sort of sad. He had a pretty good start in life with a generous gift of land from his parents. He was doing well financially before he died at the relatively young age of 33, leaving behind a widow Martha (Perkins) Dodge, toddler Martha, Jr., and baby Lucy yet unborn. His estate came to L1444, 3s. The widow was named administratrix and guardian of the two infant daughters.

Four little daughters and one baby son had already died, three of them in 1736 alone. One can only speculate about what caused so much tragedy to this young family in those years when people knew nothing about germs. In 1740/1 Martha married a widower, Barnabas's first cousin Jacob^4 (William^3 Richard^2 Richard^1) Dodge. They had two children, the first named Barnabas in honor of the man who died and Tabitha. Both of those children lived, with Tabitha marrying a Nathaniel Fairfield with whom she settled in New Hampshire, and Barnabas marrying a Lydia Woodberry in Beverly, Massachusetts and staying in the area.

The tragedy was not over, for Martha (Perkins)(Dodge) Dodge herself died about 1751. The two youngest stayed with their father, who married an Elizabeth Crowell in 1752 with whom he had several more children. Our ancestor, Richard Dodge IV was then made guardian of Martha, 14 and Lucy, 12. Whether they stayed with their stepfather or went to live with Uncle Richard is not clear, probably the latter. Both girls married at the early ages of 18 and almost 17. (By the way, the distinguished old Perkins family is one of our ancestral lines through Lois (Towne) Dodge, wife of Richard V, so you will find a Perkins family story in the collection.

Paul married first Jerusha Dodge who died soon thereafter. Her parentage was not given. The only other Jerusha Dodge that young was Jerusha^4 Elisha^3 Joseph^2 Richard^1 Dodge born 24 May 1711 whom they say "probably died young." One wonders whether, instead, it "probably could have been" this Jerusha. She seems not to have left any living children. Paul married second Faith Jewett of Rowley. Besides the legacy from his father, they received another from her father, Maximillian. He was involved in many real estate transactions, also sawmills and gristmills. He died in 1773 and is buried in Hamilton cemetery. Faith survived him and was living with her son, Paul Jr., in New Castle ME in 1784. 8 children.

Dr. Dodge wrote that, "The families of Paul and his brother Richard are of more than usual interest, not only for their mental and physical energy, but for the many descendants who have deserved and attained considerable distinction." I'm not sure whom he was referring to but will take him at his word.

There are many fine references on the ancestors of Martha (Low) Dodge, whose parents were Deacon Thomas Low and Martha (Boreman) Low. Those references will be cited in the sections on those families, but the two best which I have found are:

For Boreman (later descendants changed the name to Boardman) an excellent book, "Boardman Genealogy 1525-1895" by Charlotte Goldthwaite(1895).

For Low, "Ancestry of Phebe Tilton" (1947) is very readable. Another book, "Ancestors of the John Lowe Family Circle" by Ellen M. Merriam (1901) is nice but out of date because so much has been discovered since then.

Richard Dodge^4 (Richard^3 Richard^2 Richard^1) was born 11 Nov 1710* in Hamlet Parish of Ipswich (now Hamilton, Essex County) MA to Richard III and Martha (Low) Dodge. About 16 August 1734* published date he married Sarah Tuttle born 5 August 1716 in Ipswich to Charles and Mary (Burnham) Tuttle. As reported before, the couple was given a good start with land from his father.

After brother Barnabas died, Richard acquired his share, evidently through purchase from the widow, Martha, and later became guardian to the couple's two little girls, Martha, Jr., and Lucy, the widow apparently having died - though in the meantime she had married Richard and Barnabas' cousin Jacob Dodge, and had two other children who stayed with their father.

About eight years later, Richard sold his land to this same cousin, Jacob Dodge, for L906. (This, incidentally, shows fluctuation in the value of money, for the land had once sold for much more.) On the date he sold to Jacob, he bought from Jacob's brother, Isaac of Sutton, 100 acres of land in Sutton, paying him L213. (If you are following this, Isaac and Jacob were both Richard's first cousins.) Three days later he bought 200 acres more for L300, lying partly in Sutton and partly across the town line in Uxbridge.

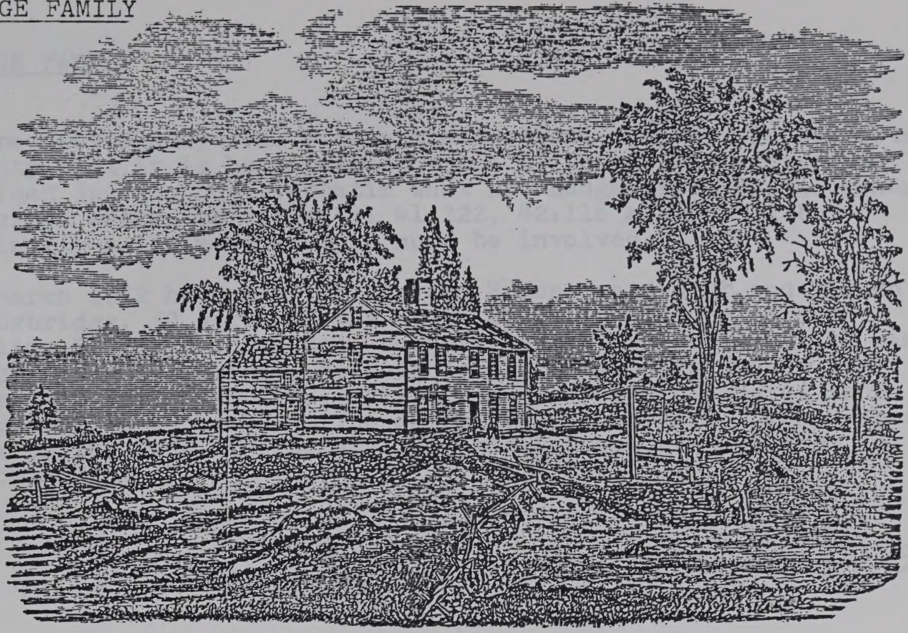
There is not room enough here to go into the history of the Sutton/Uxbridge area, except to say that there had been settlers much earlier who had been driven out or massacred by the Indians, and the land had reverted to nature. The French and Indian Wars were still going on when they moved there in 1759. They were fortunate their area in southern Worcester County near the still contested Connecticut border was not attacked. Much fierce fighting was taking place in the Berkshire Hills only slightly west. Some people in families they later intermarried with were soldiers in that war.

It is a bit ironic, if that is the right word, to hear that the "Dodges were a warlike breed of men, starting with Sir Peter Dodge, who won a barony for his heroic deeds fighting for a Norman king," for, to tell the truth, our Dodges, so far as I can tell, mostly stuck to their farms whereas the families they married into were replete with heros from all of the wars in defense of our country. Perhaps I've overlooked someone; if so would like to know whom.

The family started sort of a new Dodge Family settlement in Sutton. Cousin Isaac was there. Cousin Jacob's oldest son, Richard Hubbard Dodge and his pretty wife established an elegant residence there and were social elites who did a lot of entertaining.

---

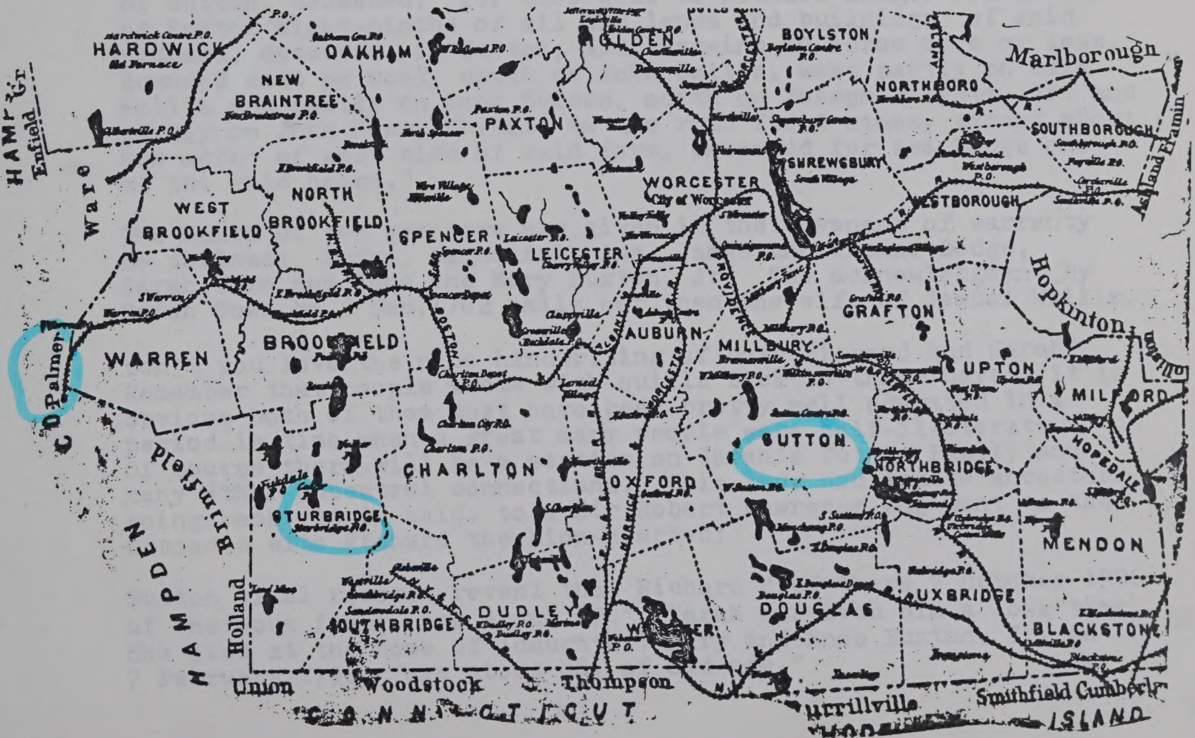
* Conflicting dates have appeared in print for both Richard's birthdate and the date of the marriage to Sarah Tuttle. The dates given here cannot be very far off--at the very most two years in each instance.



The Dodge Homestead in Sutton, Mass., erected previous to 1750. Owned by Benjamin J. Dodge

TOP--The illustrated house belonged to Richard IV's cousin.

BOTTOM--Map of the southern half of Worcester County. Richard IV settled in Sutton. Dwight was born in Sturbridge. Later Dodges kept returning to Palmer (Hampden Co.) at left side of map.


HARDWICK
OAKHAM
HOLDEN
BOYLSTON
Marlborough
NEW BRAINTREE
NORTHBORO
PAXTON
SOUTHBOROUGH
SHREWSBURY
WORCESTER
City of Worcester
WESTBOROUGH
NORTH BROOKFIELD
WEST BROOKFIELD
SPENCER
LEICESTER
Hopkinton
GRAFTON
AUBURN
MILLBURY
UPTON
MILFORD
WARREN
BROOKFIELD
Palmer
SUTTON
NORTHBRIDGE
HOPEDALE
CHARLTON
OXFORD
STURBRIDGE
MENDON
UXBRIDGE
DOUGLAS
DUDLEY
SOUTHBRIDGE
WEBSTER
BLACKSTONE
HAMPDEN
Brimfield
Holland
Ware
Enfield
Union
Woodstock
Thompson
CONNECTICUT
Burrillville
Smithfield
Cumberland
ISLAND

DODGE FAMILY

There are so many real estate transactions recorded in Worcester County that it is hard to keep track of them. The writer has decided just to copy verbatim what Dr. Dodge wrote in the genealogy. He cited Worcester deeds Vol 41:222, 42:118 and 90:332 but obviously a lot more sources must be involved:

In March 1782 he deeded to his son Rufus, carpenter and yeoman of Uxbridge, 50 acres of the above 200. In 1765 he sold to William Batchelor of Upton, cooper, another 50 acres of the same tract, with buildings. He sold to his son-in-law Reuben Town, farmer of Sutton in 1767, 1772 and 1775, three pieces of land amounting to 69 acres. The signature of his wife, Sarah, appears last on the deed of February 1767 and his own appears last in March, 1775.

Richard Dodge Sarah Dodge

Before 11 April 1777 Richard and his son-in-law Town were both dead, for we find as follows: "We, Rufus Dodge and James Dodge of Gageborough, Berkshire County; Nathanial Dodge of Brookfield; Asa Dodge, Sarah Town widow, Enos and Mary Buxton, all of Sutton; Thomas Dodge of Dudley, Worcester county - all of Massachusetts - heirs to the estate of our Honored father, Richard Dodge, late of Sutton, deceased, for L200 sell to Richard Dodge, husbandman of Sutton 'eight-ninths of all the lands and buildings' of said Richard, deceased, in Sutton, and contains 60 acres more or less, bounded east on road, south on John Wallis, west partly on said Wallis and partly on John Burden, north on Joseph Ellyott, Jr. and partly on John Henry Shiddle to the road first names, except about ten acres of west side of said farm, reserved for Asa Dodge one of the said heirs."

The names of the grantors are given in the covenant of warranty as follows: Rufus, Nathaniel, Asa, James and Thomas Dodge, Sarah Town and Enos and Mary Buxton, Jr. The acknowledgment by Sarah Town on 2 Dec,1782 calls her then the wife of Samuel Wallis.

Don't you love the nice handwriting of both Richard and Sarah? Remember that people wrote with quills back in those days. It is obvious both of them must have been pretty well educated in a period in time when a great many people were half-illiterate. Of course there will be a section on Sarah's Tuttle Family and many other ancestral connections. This lady had remote ancestors going back, it is said, to a Sir Robert Lawrence who went to the Crusades with Richard the Lion-Hearted!

Sutton vital records reveal that Richard died there 7 October 1776 of "nervous fever, age about 67." Sarah survived him a long time. She died at the home of (daughter) Mary and Enos Buxton, Jr. on 7 February 1796, "age about 88, of old age."

DODGE FAMILY

Children of Richard IV and Sarah (Tuttle) Dodge:

Rufus	b 14 Mar 1736	m 28 Oct 1756	Elizabeth Dodge
Richard	21 May 1738		died young
Nathaniel	9 Dec 1740	26 Jan 1763	Sarah Dodge
Asa	ca 1743	9 Feb 1779	Lydia Buxton
James	ca 1745	?	?
Sarah	ca 1847	7 Jul 1767	(1) Reuben Towne
		by 1782	(2) Samuel Wallis
Mary	ca 1749	3 Jun 1775	Enos Buxton
+Richard V	25 Apr 1752	19 Jul 1770	Lois Towne
Thomas	ca 1759	23 Feb 1779	(1) Abigail Putney
		11 Aug 1802	(1) Abigail Hooper
		5 Apr 1807	(3) Sarah Worth

A cursory glance at this chart will show how the records suffered as the family expanded to the west. It is thought that most of the children were born in the Hamlet Parish area (now Hamilton) of Essex County, Massachusetts. If someday this writer runs into vital statistics showing more exact birth or other dates, they will be inserted or a postscript added. There could also be unrecorded births of other children, especially between Richard and Thomas. We may assume that the first little Richard died after James was born and before our ancestor, Richard V. They would have kept naming a child that until one lived, having kept that name in the family for so long. Historians assumed Thomas was born in Sutton but gave no reason. You will notice the trend toward very young marriages, a change from the custom on the East Coast.

As radical as the idea of moving west to Sutton in Worcester County may have seemed to their parents, when the children in this family matured New England was already starting to run out of farmland for its abundance of young men who wanted to start their own farms. Our Dodges had always loved the soil. Where to go? It was difficult if not impossible to buy land in New York and anyway the adjacent part east of the Hudson was hilly, too. One could rent, but most of the land had been granted to only a few "patroons" who would not sell. West of there the land was held and dominated by the savage and angry Iroquois Indians.

Until after the Revolutionary War, the only places really left for expansion were the hilly Berkshire areas of northwestern Massachusetts and New Hampshire/Vermont. (Vermont was not then a state but an area hotly contested between New York and New Hampshire--but developed mostly under grants issued by the governor of the latter state.)

The family of Richard and Sarah underwent a dispersal as the adult children matured, with some staying in the area and others going to the places just mentioned. We lost track of some of them. Since we follow Richard V, here is a little of what we know about the others.

As you read this, keep in mind that these children were born into a Colonial family though their attitudes may have broadened. The idea of uniting the colonies into states had not yet occurred to anyone, and they would have rejected it as fantastic and undesirable. These Dodges would have been staunch Congregationalists who looked askance at the attitudes of the Anglicans in the southern states. Things changed by the ends of their lives, however. They eventually became citizens of the United States.

As far as writer knows, none of the children fought in the Revolutionary War. If any military records are uncovered, that information will be incorporated later on. See footnote, end of Chapter.

Rufus Dodge, the oldest son, married Elizabeth Dodge. The books do not say who she was, but I believe she was Elizabeth Dodge^5 (Francis^4 Jonathan^3 John^2 William^1) and thus only distantly related to Rufus through his great-great-great grandfather John Dodge in England. Elizabeth was born 3 March 1736 and lived in Brookfield a few miles west of Sutton. All we know further about the couple is that as of 1777 they were living on the frontier in Gageborough, Berkshire County MA.

Nathaniel Dodge was a farmer. He married Sarah Dodge, sister of Rufus' wife Elizabeth. These sisters had a brother Francis who moved to Berkshire County, also a brother Daniel who served in the French and Indian war when he was very young, and another sister Hepzibah. Nathaniel, by the right of his wife, inherited part of her father's estate and also bought out the portions of some of the others. (Temple's History of North Brookfield has her listed with the wrong father.) The couple had 10 children but at least 4 of them died young.

Asa Dodge may have been married to Elizabeth Knapp of Northbridge (published 30 April 1777) but if so she soon died because on 9 Feb 1779 he married Lydia Buxton of Sutton-possibly the sister of Mary's husband, Enos Buxton. When the division of his father's estate occurred in 1777, he was living in Sutton and chose to retain his 1/8 portion. Ten days after his marriage to Lydia this couple as well as her brother David Buxton of Brandon, Vermont, sold their property in Sutton. They all moved to Brandon, which is on the western side of the Green Mountains. Later they purchased land in Weybridge, VT which they sold when he became an invalid and they went to live with their son, Asa, Jr., and his family. They had one other son, John, who married but had no children.

We know very little about James Dodge. It seems as though he married and went to Gageborough to live near his brother Rufus.

Sarah Dodge, named for her mother, married first Reuben Towne of Sutton, kinsman of our ancestress Lois Towne who married her brother Richard. Reuben was living in 1777 but died before December 1782 when she was wife of Samuel Wallis (who probably had been the couple's next-door neighbor). They lived in Sutton.

Mary Dodge, the other sister, married Enos Buxton and they lived on a farm in Sutton with their children. Enos was brother of the other Buxtons mentioned on the previous page. When Richard IV died, it was Mary and Enos who took her widowed mother into their home and cared for her, until Sarah died twenty years later, at the age of 88. So it seems the other siblings owed a debt of gratitude to Enos and Mary Buxton, for being good to their mother.

Thomas Dodge, the youngest, was probably born in Sutton about 1759. He married first Abigail Putney of Dudley. They had five children in the Dudley-Sturbridge-Charlton area (all near Sutton). Then they moved to Norwich, Connecticut, where they had three more. After that they migrated to distant Barre, Vermont, where she died of childbirth in January 1802. (It is a chilling thought to think of her dying in the Vermont wilderness in January, probably away from adequate medical care though, of course, that might be an exaggeration.) The baby, Eleazer, survived until age 20 when, though young, he already had his own brisk boot and shoe business in Montpelier. By the time the mother, Abigail, died two little daughters had already died. Little Rufus, born in Norwich, died in 1804--two years later. The others seem to have done well.

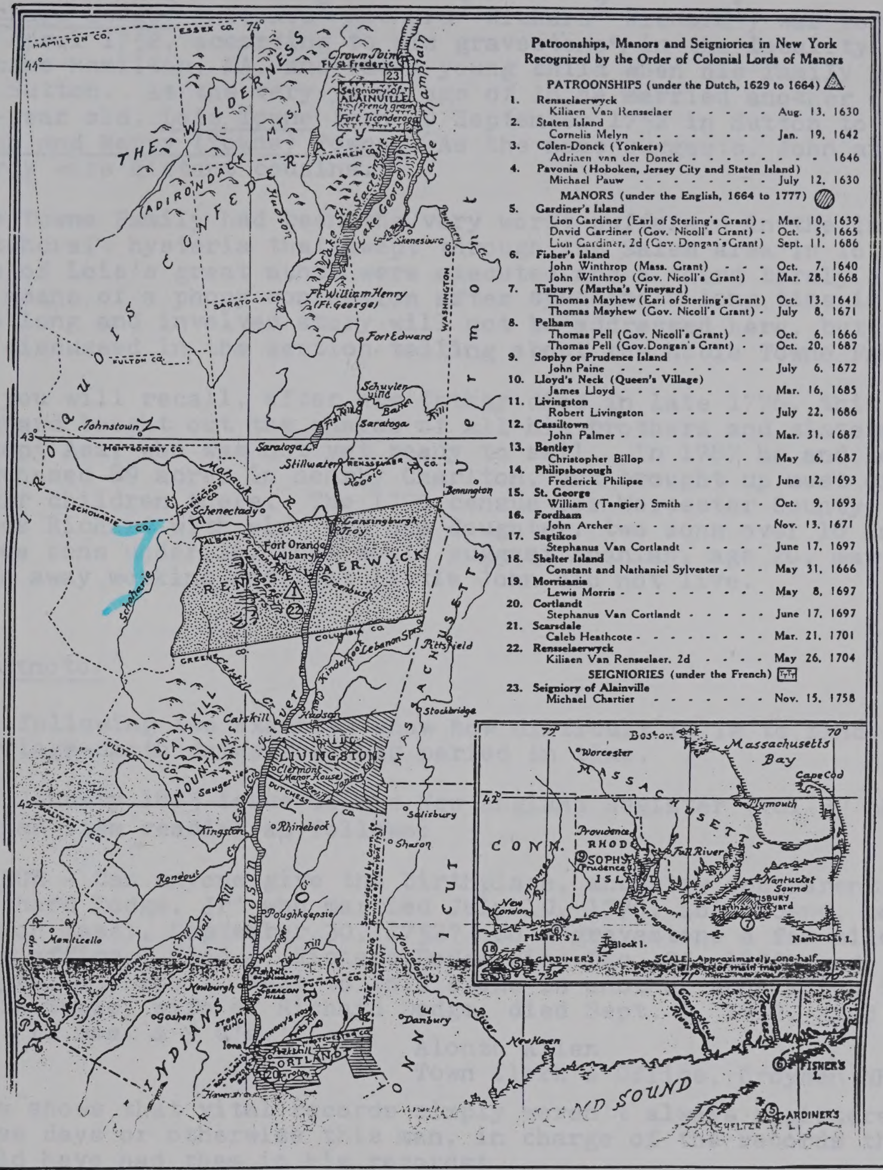
Thomas married second Abigail Harper of Barre, who had come there from Brookfield, MA, and had one child, Asa; and she also died of childbirth. They didn't say whether the baby lived. He married third Sarah Worth of Middlesex (what state?) and had four children. He died age 68 at his farm on the road from Barre to Montpelier about a mile below what became Barre Station. The widow lived to be 92.

Sources for the segment on Richard IV and Sarah (Tuttle) Dodge include the following:

Sutton Vital Records to the Year 1850
History of Sutton, Worcester County, Massachusetts (1878)
History of Worcester County, Massachusetts (1879) Two volumes,
for background on the townships. (The first 2 mention Dodges)

There are many Tuttle Family information sources. The one reaching far enough down in time to list our Sarah and saying she married Richard is "Tuttle & Tuthill Lines in America" by Alva M. Tuttle (1968) That book is more of a compendium than a family story. Other sources will be cited in the Tuttle Family section.

Footnote:
It seems some have confused Capt. Richard Dodge of Wenham (1732-1802) who fought in the Lexington Alarm & the Revolution with our Richard IV or V. That would be easy to do. He was Richard^5 (Richard^4 William^3 Richard^2 Richard^1). Our line is all Richards, to that point. Any of our line could join the DAR, etc., through Captain Samuel Ellis, grandfather of Keziah (Ellis) Dodge, wife of Levi & mother of Dwight.


Patroonships, Manors and Seigniories in New York
Recognized by the Order of Colonial Lords of Manors
PATROONSHIPS (under the Dutch, 1629 to 1664)
1. Rensselaerwyck
Kiliaen Van Rensselaer - - - - - Aug. 13, 1630
2. Staten Island
Cornelis Melyn - - - - - - - - - Jan. 19, 1642
3. Colen-Donck (Yonkers)
Adriaen van der Donck - - - - - - - 1646
4. Pavonia (Hoboken, Jersey City and Staten Island)
Michael Pauw - - - - - - - - July 12, 1630
MANORS (under the English, 1664 to 1777)
5. Gardiner's Island
Lion Gardiner (Earl of Sterling's Grant) - Mar. 10, 1639
David Gardiner (Gov. Nicoll's Grant) - Oct. 5, 1665
Lion Gardiner, 2d (Gov. Dongan's Grant) Sept. 11, 1686
6. Fisher's Island
John Winthrop (Mass. Grant) - - - Oct. 7, 1640
John Winthrop (Gov. Nicoll's Grant) - Mar. 28, 1668
7. Tisbury (Martha's Vineyard)
Thomas Mayhew (Earl of Sterling's Grant) Oct. 13, 1641
Thomas Mayhew (Gov. Nicoll's Grant) - July 8, 1671
8. Pelham
Thomas Pell (Gov. Nicoll's Grant) - - Oct. 6, 1666
Thomas Pell (Gov. Dongan's Grant) - - Oct. 20, 1687
9. Sophy or Prudence Island
John Paine - - - - - - - - - - July 6, 1672
10. Lloyd's Neck (Queen's Village)
James Lloyd - - - - - - - - - - Mar. 16, 1685
11. Livingston
Robert Livingston - - - - - - - - July 22, 1686
12. Cassiltown
John Palmer - - - - - - - - - - Mar. 31, 1687
13. Bentley
Christopher Billop - - - - - - - - May 6, 1687
14. Philipsborough
Frederick Philipse - - - - - - - - June 12, 1693
15. St. George
William (Tangier) Smith - - - - - - Oct. 9, 1693
16. Fordham
John Archer - - - - - - - - - - Nov. 13, 1671
17. Sagtikos
Stephanus Van Cortlandt - - - - - - June 17, 1697
18. Shelter Island
Constant and Nathaniel Sylvester - - - May 31, 1666
19. Morrisania
Lewis Morris - - - - - - - - - - May 8, 1697
20. Cortlandt
Stephanus Van Cortlandt - - - - - - June 17, 1697
21. Scarsdale
Caleb Heathcote - - - - - - - - - Mar. 21, 1701
22. Rensselaerwyck
Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, 2d - - - - - May 26, 1704
SEIGNIORIES (under the French)
23. Seigniory of Alainville
Michael Chartier - - - - - - - - Nov. 15, 1758
THE WILDERNESS
ADIRONDACK MTS.
IROQUOIS CONFEDERACY
Crown Point
Ft. St. Frederic
Seigniory of ALAINVILLE (French grant)
Fort Ticonderoga
Lake Champlain
Lake George
Ft. William Henry (Ft. George)
Fort Edward
Schuylerville
Saratoga
Johnstown
Mohawk R.
Schenectady
Schoharie
RENSSELAERWYCK
Fort Orange (Albany)
Troy
Lansingburgh
Bennington
Pittsfield
CATSKILL MOUNTAINS
Catskill
Hudson
LIVINGSTON
Kingston
Rhinebeck
Poughkeepsie
Newburgh
Goshen
CORTLANDT
Danbury
New Haven
MASSACHUSETTS
CONNECTICUT
LONG ISLAND SOUND
Massachusetts Bay
Boston
Worcester
Cape Cod
Plymouth
Providence
RHODE ISLAND
Fall River
Nantucket Sound
New London
FISHER'S I.
GARDINER'S I.
SHELTER I.
SCALE: Approximately one-half of main map

Map shows only some earliest NY patents but may help you see why early Dodges had to go north rather than west to buy land. Patroons were happy to rent on terms which made tenants serflike, but would not sell. Lands to the west of them was held by fierce and angry Iroquois Indians. Palatine Germans settled on the Schoharie River south of the Mohawk. When the British occupied Rhode Island during the Revolution, many Rhode Islanders moved to Schoharie, the scene of fierce fighting but not occupation. That is indirectly the reason Lydia (Pearce) Dodge came to be born there.

Richard Dodge^5 (Richard^4 Richard^3 Richard^2 Richard^1) was born 25 April 1752, according to his gravestone*, in the locality which became Hamilton, MA, and was a young child when his family moved to Sutton. At the very young age of 18 he married another 18-year old, Lois Towne born 30 September 1752 in Sutton to John and Mercy (Towne) Towne. As the name suggests, John and Mercy were distant cousins.

The Towne Family had been the very worst sufferers in the infamous witchcraft hysteria that swept through the Salem area in 1692. Two of Lois's great aunts were executed and a third barely escaped by means of a phony confession after spending a long time in jail. The long and involved story will not be addressed here, but will be discussed in the section telling about the noble Towne Family.

As you will recall, after his father died in late 1776, this young Richard bought out the shares of all his brothers and sisters except Asa, who was not yet ready to sell. In 1787 he and Lois purchased 89 acres in nearby Charlton, and brought up most of their children there. The 1790 census for Worcester County, MA, shows Richard with wife and one daughter, two sons over 16 and three sons under 16. That would suggest Ananiah, age 20, may have been away working and that little John did not live.

---

*Footnote:

The following two examples show how difficult it is to find birth-marriage-death dates for this period in time.

The January 1883 issue of the New England Register (Vol 37 p88) has an item reading as follows:

"DODGE - Can anyone give the birthplace, ancestry and parentage of 'Richard Dodge, Jr' who married July 19, 1770, Lois Towne, born in Sutton Mass., September 30, 1752? On a gravestone a few miles from this office I find - 'Richard Dodge died Dec. 25, 1833 aged 81 yrs. & 8 mos.' Next to this stone is another upon which is 'Lois Towne, wife of Richard Dodge, died Sept. 9, 1812, aged 59 yrs. 11 mos. & 9 d's.'"

Alonzo Allen
Town Clerk's Office, Croyden NH

This shows that vital records simply weren't always registered in those days or otherwise this man, in charge of the records there, would have had them in his records!

The other example is that the extremely thorough "Tuttle-Tuthill Lines" cited on a previous page lists the same first marriage dates for all of Richard IV and Sarah Tuttle Dodge's children, and the same three birthdates we have here. No marriage at all is listed for Richard V. Seemingly Alva Tuttle assumed he died young but found no death listed. The parents' marriage date was given as 27 November 1734 in Ipswich.

By the time Richard V was in his middle 40's he might have been content to stay put, but his older sons must have been anxious to move to New Hampshire, especially Stephen. Perhaps he and Lois were also, though even the trip there was arduous not counting the back-breaking toil involved in taming wilderness land for farming. But they had many sons all wanting farms of their own. Farmland was by then scarce in Massachusetts, and prohibitively expensive, so they decided to go. Like so many New England families, they joined the great outward migration. We read the following:

"It is shown by the record of deeds in Cheshire County, NH, that Richard and Stephen Dodge of Charlton, Mass. (probably father and son), bought 24 Aug. 1796 of Robert Duncan, gentleman, of New Grantham, NH for 250 dollars, lot 32, first division of New Grantham, being 100 acres, the right of Theodore Atkinson.

"August 28, 1802, Richard and Stephen Dodge of New Grantham sold for 90 dollars to Richard Dodge, Jr., of New G. one half of lot 32 as above, and on the same date Richard Dodge, Jr. for 8 dollars gave a life lease to Richard Dodge for twenty acres, which appears to have been reconveyed to Richard Dodge, Jr., on the 5th February, 1820 for 150 dollars. On the last occasion the town was called Grantham."

From the fortunate letter of Alonzo Allen, Croydon Town Clerk. recorded on the previous page, we have found out that the mother, Lois (Towne) Dodge, passed away on 9 Sept 1812, age not quite 60. Life on the frontier was probably hard on her. A grandson (Ellis Dodge) reported that later Richard V married another lady, and that he was buried "between his two wives." If so, Mr. Allen must have missed that. No one seems to have found out who the lady was. It sounds as though Richard, age 68 in 1820, sold the land back to Richard VI for $150, finding himself too old to manage his own farm. He lived another 13 years, passing away on Christmas Day 1833.

I was delighted to discover a printed copy of the "Second United States Census - 1800 - New Hampshire - Heads of Families, Cheshire County" showing New Grantham. It shows:

Dodge, Richard - man & woman over 45, 2 sons under 10, one son between 10 & 16, one son over 16 and one daughter over 16. I take these to be Richard and Lois with Joshua 5, Amasa 8, Parly 12, Lois Jr. 17 and Simon 19.

Also reflected are Ananiah Dodge 30, Wife Elizabeth 28, William 5, and Cheney 1.

Levi (our ancestor) 28, Keziah 20, Charlotte 4, Dwight 2 (our ancestor) and tiny baby Jedediah are also shown.

Stephen and Richard VI, then young men, were probably on that date living in a nearby township.

DODGE FAMILY

SECOND UNITED STATES CENSUS — 1800 — NEW-HAMPSHIRE — HEADS of FAMILIES

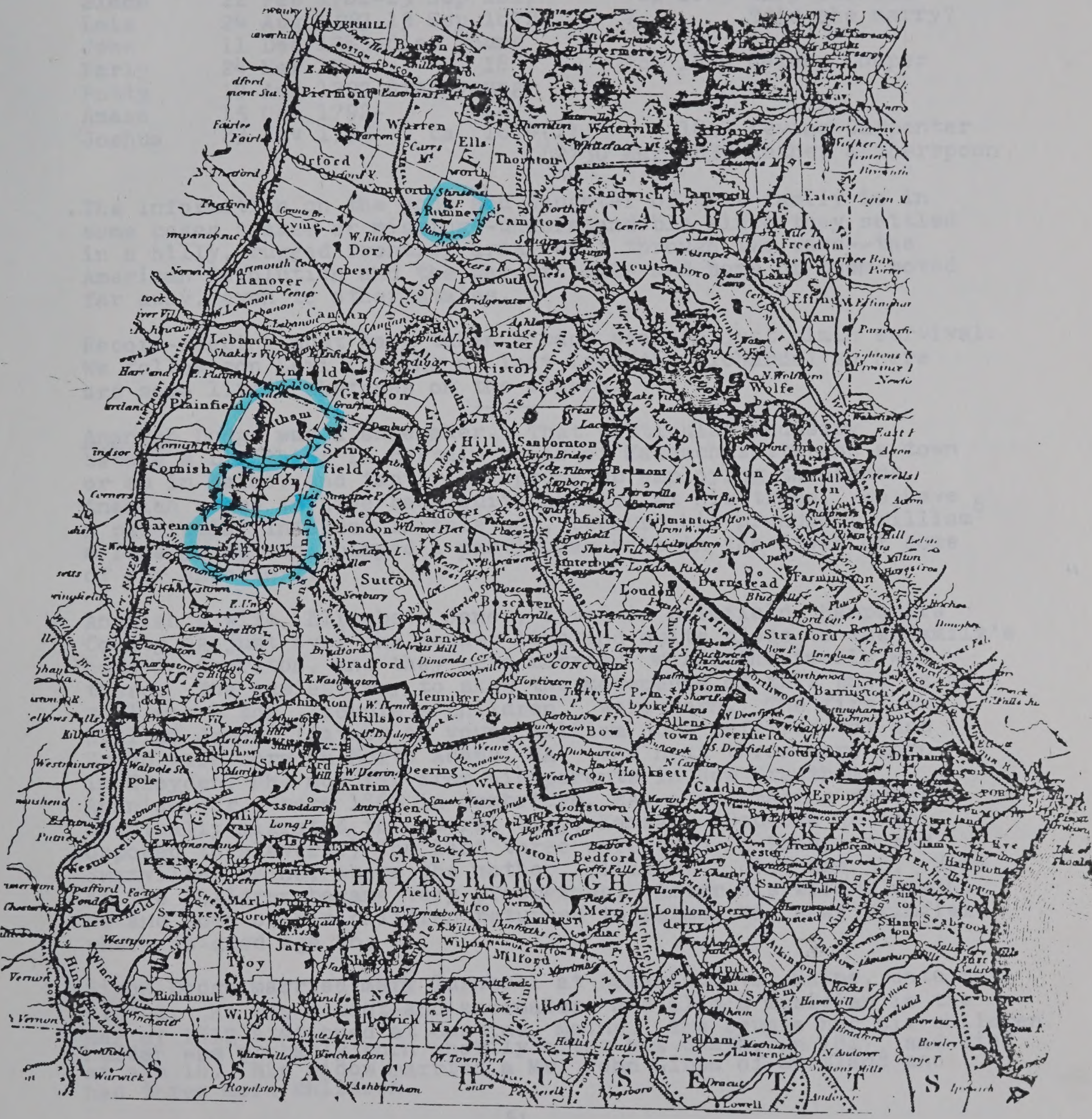
CHESHIRE COUNTY

NAMES of HEADS of FAMILIES	FREE WHITE MALES					FREE WHITE FEMALES					
	Under 10 years of age	Of 10 & under 16	Of 16 & under 26 including heads of families	Of 26 & under 45 including heads of families	Of 45 & upwards including heads of families	Under 10 years of age	Of 10 & under 16	Of 16 & under 26 including heads of families	Of 26 & under 45 including heads of families	Of 45 & upwards including heads of families	All other free persons except Indians not taxed
NEW GRANTHAM											
Alexander, Samuel	3	1		1		1			1		
Bachelder, Amos	3			1			1		1		
Baker, Thomas		1		1		2			1		
Ballow (?), Jeremiah	1	1	1		1			1		1	
Bachelder, Jonathan	1	1		1		2			1		
Bean, Samuel		2	1			1	1	2			
Bixbee, Amasa				1					1		
Brown, Jonathan		1	1		1	2	2	1		1	
Brown, Jonathan Jr.	2			1		1			1		
Brown, John	1			1		1			1		
Burbank, Ebenezer	1			1					1		
Burr, Ebenezer	2	1	1		1	1	1	1		1	
Burr, Seymour			1		3			1			
Busswell, Ezra	2			1		2	1		1		
Calf, Nathaniel	2			1		2		1	1		
Carr, Parker			2		1	3	1	1		1	
Clement, David			1		1			1	1		1
Clement, David Jr.	1		2	1		3	1		1		
Clement, Jonas	1		1	1		3	1	1	1		
Clement, Jacob	1			1		3			1		
Cotton, Lemuel	2			1					1		
Co(illegible), Joel	3			1	1				1	1	
Crocker, John	1			1					2		
Davis, Jeremiah		1	2		2			1	2	1	
Delano, Moses	1			1		3	1		1		
Dodge, Richard	2	1	1		1			1		1	
Dodge, Ananiah	2			1		1			1		
Dodge, Levi	2			1		1		1			
Dunbar, Ezekiel			1		1		1	1		1	
Dunbar, John		1	2		1		1			1	
Dunbar, Ansel			1					1			
Duncan, Robert	2	1		1	1	1	1	2	1		
Dutton, Silas			1		1			1		1	
Dutton, Silas Jr.				1				1			
Dutton, Oliver	3			1				1	1		
Eastman, William				1		1		1		1	
Eastman, Henry	3			1		3			1		
Eastman, Stephen				1				1			
Emerson, Moses			1			2		1			1
Fraser, Moses			1		1		1			1	
Gale, Francis	1	2		1		3			1		
Gage, Stephen	1			1		3			1		
Gile, Richard	1			1		1		1			
Gill, True				1					1		
Gleason, Elijah	2	1	2		1		1	2		1	
Gove, John	2			1			1	1	1		
Gould, Samuel			1	1					1		
Griffiths, William	2				1	1	1		1		
Hall, Hezekiah	1				1		1	1		1	
Hail, Nathaniel	1		1					1			
Hardy, Tristam	1			1		2			1		
Hardy, Eldad			1			1	1			1	
Herriman, Leonard	1		1	1				1			
Hopkins, Ruth		1					1	1		1	
Hopkins, Gardner		1		1		1		1			
Howard, Henry	2	1		1		2			1		
Hunter, William	1	1			1	2	1			1	
Fifield, David	3			1		4			1	1	
Huntington, William		3	1	1		1			1	1	
Huntoon, Caleb	1				2		3			1	
Huntoon, Charles		1			1	4	2	1	1		
Jenne, James			1		1	1	1			1	
Jenne, Isaac		1	1		1	1	1	2		1	
Jenne, Thomas	1			1				1			
Jennings, Stephen		1			1		1			1	
Jennings, Sylvester	1			1		2		1			
Johnson, Abner	3	2	1	1		2			1		
Johnson, Benjamin	1		1	1		2	1		1		
Judkins, Stephen				1		2		1			
Kenyon, Alexander	2	1		1		2	1	2	1		
King, Peter	1	2	1		1	1				1	
Lamberton, Obed.	1	2			1	2	1			1	
Lamberton, Obed. Jun.				1				1			
Leavitt, Nathaniel					1					1	
Leavitt, Nathaniel Jun.	2			1		3	2		1		
Leavitt, Dudley	3		1	1		2		1			
Leavitt, John	1			1		1			1		
Leavitt, Jeremiah	2	1		1		2			1		
Lewis, Lyman	1		1					1			

NAMES of HEADS of FAMILIES	FREE WHITE MALES					FREE WHITE FEMALES					
	Under 10 years of age	Of 10 & under 16	Of 16 & under 26 including heads of families	Of 26 & under 45 including heads of families	Of 45 & upwards including heads of families	Under 10 years of age	Of 10 & under 16	Of 16 & under 26 including heads of families	Of 26 & under 45 including heads of families	Of 45 & upwards including heads of families	All other free persons except Indians not taxed
NEW GRATHAM (cont.)											
Little, James		1		1		1		1			
Little, Ebenezer			1					1			
Malavery, Abraham			1	1					1		
Marsh, Jesse	2			1		1			1		
Massey, Willard	3	1		1		1		1	1		
Merrill, Obadiah	3		1	1		2	1		1	1	
Merrill, John	2	1	1	1			1	1			
McFarland, James				1						1	
Morse, John				1		1		1			
Moulton, William	1			1		2			1		
Newell, Isaac	1			1		1		1			
Newton, Francis	1	1			1	1		1		1	
Newton, Francis Junr			1			2		1			
Parker, Stephen		1			1				1	1	
Peck, Joseph	2	1		1		1	1		1		
Phillips, Jacob	2			1		1			1		
Pierce, John					1			1		2	
Pierce, Daniel	1	1		1		3			1		
Pierce, Job	2			1		3	1		1		
Pierce, William	2			1				1			
Pilsbury, Benjamin			1		1					1	
Prentice, John	3		1	1	1	1		1		1	
Quimby, John	1			1		3			1		
Read, Paul				1		1		1			
Sawyer, Elias	1	1		1		4	1		1		
Scott, Charles	1		2	1		2		2	3	1	
Shartliff, Lathrop	2	1	1	1	1		1	2		1	
Skinner, Joseph					1					1	
Skinner, Joseph, Jr	2	1		1		2	1		1		
Smith, Richard	2	2		1		2			1		
Smith, James	1	1		1		2			1		
Spaulding, Amos	1	1	2	1	1	1	1	2		1	
Spaulding, Daniel				1		1		1			
Stone, Daniel				1		2		1			
Storey, Cyrus	1			1		1			1		
Storey, Isaac				1		2			1		
Stowell, Isaac					1	1			1	1	
Stowell, Ebenezer	3	2	2	1			1		1		
Thompson, Ralph	1	1			1		1			1	
Thrasher, Jacob	2	1	1	1		3	1	1	1		
Underhill, John.				1		1			1		
Woodman, Benjamin.	2	2		1		2		1	1		
NEWPORT											
Atwood, Moses	1			1					1		
Atwood, Daniel.	2			1		2			2		
Atwood, John					1	1	1			1	
Atwood, Caleb		1	2		1			1		1	
Atwood, Stephen	1		2			1		1			
Allen, Gideon		1	1	1	1			1		1	
Buel, Aaron	1			1		3			1		
Buel, Gurden		1	1		1		1	1		1	
Buel, John		1		1	1					1	
Brown, John			1					1			
Brown, Baxter			1			1			1		
Bowman, Abethar	2	2	1	1		2	1		1	1	
Bliss, Henry	1			1		2	2	1	1		
Bimis, Daniel	3	1	1		1	2	1		1		
Buel, Joseph			1		1			3	1	1	
Buel, John				1		1		1			
Buel, Joseph Jr.	3	1		1		3			1		
Bascon, Joseph	2			1		1		2			
Bascon, Reuben	3	1	1	1		2	1		1		
Brown, Jona.	1	1		1		1	1	1	1		
Brown, Elijah	2	1	1	1		3	1	1	1		
Brown, John	1			1		2			1		
Carpenter, Elkanah				1					1		
Church, Saml.		2	3		1		1	3		1	
Cutter, John	2		2	1		2		1	1		
Cumstock, Jona.		2	2	1	1	1	1	1		1	
Curren, Timothy			1					1	1		
Chapin, Phinehas	2	1		1		1	2		1		
Chapin, Daniel	3	1	1	1		2			2		
Corbin, James	2		1	2		3		1	1	1	
Chamberlin, Ralph	1		1			1	1	1			
Cutten, Zebelan	3	2			1	2		1	1		
McCollister, Wm.	1		1			1		1			

DODGE FAMILY

Below is copy of a modern map showing the southern part of New Hampshire. When our Dodges lived there, New Grantham (now called Grantham) and Croydon where they first settled, were part of Cheshire County. Dwight's younger sister Charlotte, and brother Ellis, whose stories are told, lived for some time at Rumney.


Haverhill
Piermont
Warren
Orford
Wentworth
Rumney
Campton
Thornton
Sandwich
CARROLL
Hanover
Lebanon
Canaan
Enfield
Grafton
Plainfield
Grantham
Cornish
Croydon
Claremont
Newport
Sunapee
Bristol
Hill
Sanbornton
Belmont
Gilmanton
Barnstead
Strafford
MERRIMACK
CONCORD
Bradford
Henniker
Hillsborough
Deering
Weare
Goffstown
Bedford
HILLSBOROUGH
ROCKINGHAM
Keene
Chesterfield
Troy
Jaffrey
Milford
Derry
Pelham
MASSACHUSETTS

DODGE FAMILY

Children of Richard V and Lois (Towne) Dodge:

Ananiah	23 Nov 1770-26 Dec 1846	m 29 Aug 1792	Elizabeth Janes
+Levi	23 Jun 1772- 8 Dec 1835	15 Mar 1796	Keziah Ellis
Stephen	24 Oct 1774-	10 Nov 1799	Mary Dunbar
Richard 6	2 Mar 1779-11 May 1872	29 Nov 1802	Levina Ellis
Simon	22 Feb 1781-23 Sep 1817	?ca 1805	Mary Turnbull
Lois	24 Aug 1783-13 Sep 1872	?	?did she marry?
John	11 Dec 1785-died young		
Parly	24 Mar 1788- 18	?ca 1810	Helena Cooper
Patty	10 Aug 1790-died young		
Amasa	15 Oct 1792- 18		
Joshua	23 Nov 1795 ca 1874	(1) 1817	Levina Carpenter
		(2)30 Mar 1837	Esther Wetherspoon

The information on the sons and daughter of this family is in some cases sparse or missing--understandable since they settled in a hilly, rugged frontier area, went through two wars--the American Revolution and the War of 1812--and some of them moved far away, even to other states.

Record-keeping must have taken a back seat to just plain survival. We follow son Levi (having at last left the Richards) so here are some little sketches on the others.

Ananiah Dodge was a shoemaker. That particular industry became a big thing in certain areas of Massachusetts and a town or so in Maine, and factories sprung up employing thousands. Ananiah seems to have been quite skilled at his trade. We have a particular interest in this son, because his grandson, William[8] a fine young man, played a particular role in the lives of some of our ancestors.

Ananiah's wife, Elizabeth Janes, lived in Brimfield, Hampshire County MA just over the county line and quite close to the family's home in Charlton, and they were married while the family was there. The easiest way to show the movements of this unit is to tell where the couple's children were born. The first two, William Janes[7] (father of young William just referred to) and Susan were born in North Adams, MA. The next three were born in Croyden, NH, not far from his parents in New Grantham. Ananiah, Jr., born 1805 in Cambridge, MA, a shoemaking center, eventually migrated to Neutral City, Kansas. (Because he was opposed to slavery?) The last three were born in Prospect and Swanville, Maine, where the mother, Elizabeth, died age 58. Some of the children became very prosperous. After his wife's death, he and some of his children returned to Palmer MA, near Brimfield, where he died age 76.

Simon Dodge married Mary Turnbull at Damariscotta, Maine, date not stated. He was a boot-and-shoemaker, and also a musician in the War of 1812 stationed at Castine, Maine. The couple had six children. Huldah was probably born shortly after his death, in 1817, and died at age 14. His widow married a Mr. John Gibbs of Scotland and had three more children.

DODGE FAMILY

Stephen Dodge was born, it is said, in Royalston which is strangely far north. Perhaps they meant Boyl ston which is closer. He migrated with the family to New Grantham and married Mary Dunbar there, who had been born at Bridgewater MA. They had 11 children but not all lived. The last two, Susan and Mary Jane, were born at Sand Lake, Rensselaer County, New York--the first of our near line to live in New York. That is in the Albany/Troy area, where several of them later lived. Stephen served in the War of 1812.

Richard Dodge VI was a farmer. The Dodge genealogy gives his birth and death date--he lived to the ripe old age of 93--and mentions him buying and selling land from and to his father and that is all. But in researching the Ellis Family because our ancestor, his brother Levi, married Keziah Ellis, I found in the Sturbridge MA vital records, not only his brother's marriage but his as well, for he married Keziah's sister, Levina. They were specific enough to say, on page 192 under Ellis, "Levina & Richard Dodge, Jr of New Grantham (int adds Vt) Nov 29, 1802." Not only is it nice to know that, but it adds to our understanding of the family as you will see later on. It is frustrating not to know whether he and Levina had little Richard VII, for it seems logical they would have. It would seem they prospered there in New Grantham.

Lois Dodge, we are told, was born in 1783 and died 13 Sept.1872, at the age of 89. Whether she stayed single or married and raised a family was not told.

Parly Dodge, born in Sutton, married Helena Cooper of Croyden NH who was "descended from the Leland family." They had three children, the oldest of whom was deputy sheriff and auctioneer. The youngest was a teacher in Boston.

Nothing but birthdates were given for John and Patty. By the censuses we can tell they died very young, probably as babies.

Joshua Dodge, the youngest, was a year or two old when they moved to New Hampshire and likely that was the only kind of life he knew. He became a farmer. It was told of him that he was "of more than medium size with great strength and vigor, characteristic of his immediate relatives."

The reason that was underlined was in case it describes his brother Levi, our ancestor, and his son Dwight who migrated to Missouri. It might. They were both blacksmiths. Joshua married twice and had eight children.

References:

Sturbridge Vital Records to 1850

Notes and Memoranda Relating to Persons of the Name of Towne - by William B. Towne, first published in the New England Register beginning in October 1866 (Vol XX:367)

There are many Towne sources. Almost every book about the Salem Witchcraft Trials mentions Rebecca (Towne) Nurse.

Levi Dodge^6 (Richard^5 Richard^4 Richard^3 Richard^2 Richard^1) was born 22 June 1772 in Sutton, Worcester Co., MA to Richard V and Lois (Towne) Dodge. On 15 Mar 1796 in Sturbridge MA, age 23, he married 16-year old Keziah Ellis born 15 February 1780 to Jedediah and Martha (Freeman) Ellis.

Of course, histories on the Ellis and Freeman Families will be included as part of this set. Keziah's grandfathers were war veterans. Samuel Ellis was a Captain in the Revolutionary War and Samuel Freeman was a Lieutenant in the French and Indian War.

Levi and Keziah soon had two little babies in Sturbridge, Charlotte the oldest then Dwight, our ancestor. In 1799 they took those little ones with them to New Hampshire. As their youngest son, Ellis, born 26 years after they moved there, told it, his grandfather Richard (and probably Stephen though he did not say so) moved to New Grantham in 1798 and the rest of the sons and daughters followed him the next year. One would imagine the mother, Lois, also stayed behind for some of the children, such as Joshua, age 2½, were quite young at the time. Anyway, he said "they moved with ox teams about 125 miles through the wilderness to an unbroken tract where everything was to be done. Levi built a home on his father's land, near his father, and remained on the same farm until his death."

We are lucky that Ellis told all this to the historian, or else we probably would know almost nothing about the lives of Keziah and Levi. However, he may have related the information in a way hard to understand, or Dr. Dodge may have misinterpreted some of what was told to him. Also, since all this happened 26 years before Ellis was born, he was relying on what people had told him when he was little. I think some of it was misconstrued, for it was told that he said "Keziah's two unmarried sisters, Olive and Dorothy Ellis, went along" to live with them. The way it was told, it seemed that the sisters were young ladies.

I don't doubt those girls did go, though their presence is not reflected on the 1800 New Hampshire census. No wonder, because in studying Sturbridge vital records I found that Dorothy Ellis was born 18 December 1792 and Olive 2 December 1794. In the summer of 1799 they would have been 6½ and 4½. They did not go at that time. In November 1802 their older sister, Levina, married their already-brother-in-law, Richard Dodge VI, of New Grantham. No reason to go yet.

But some terrible sickness must have struck their family, perhaps an epidemic, because on 9 May 1804 their mother, Martha age 47, died. A month later on 14 June 1804, their father Jedediah Ellis, age 53, also succumbed. So Olive age 9½ and Dorothy age 11½ obviously went to live with their sisters in New Hampshire because they were orphans! Little sister Lucreatia, born 28 Feb 1798, who was then 6 years old probably stayed with other relatives in the area and married Reuben Lealand of Grafton in 1817. Maybe he

was related to Parly Dodge's wife of the previous generation? We won't go into who Keziah Ellis Dodge's other siblings were, just mentioned these because of the little girls who went to live with the Dodges in New Hampshire.

Levi and Keziah and all the others probably thought it was a great opportunity to acquire new homesteads in New Hampshire, not realizing that the type of agriculture they were used to did not work so well on rocky, timber-covered hills in a cooler climate. At any rate they went and settled on land belonging to his father. No doubt they wore themselves out clearing raw land, hauling stones, and trying to eke out a living for their family there. She must have missed her parents at first and mourned their early death. Bearing 12 children probably weakened her.

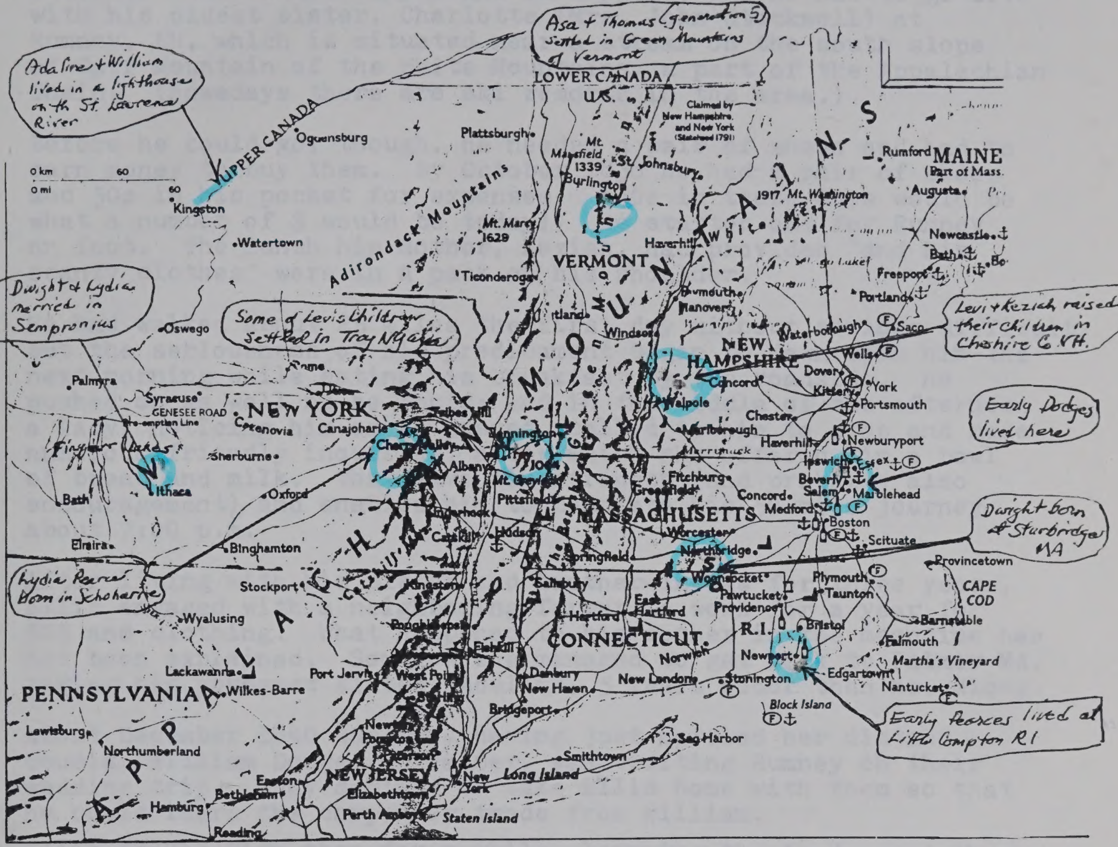
Levi was a blacksmith, and probably also a farmer. He died 8 Dec. 1835 at Croyden, Cheshire County (now Sullivan) NH, two years after his father. Keziah was left with no income and the children were not entirely grown. She probably had medical and funeral expenses to pay. They did not own the farm they were living on. There is no doubt the years had taken their toll on her health. She certainly could not carry on her husband's blacksmith business. More of the story will unfold as this progresses. She finally went back to Palmer, near Sturbridge, where she had relatives, and died there 4 February 1845, age 65.

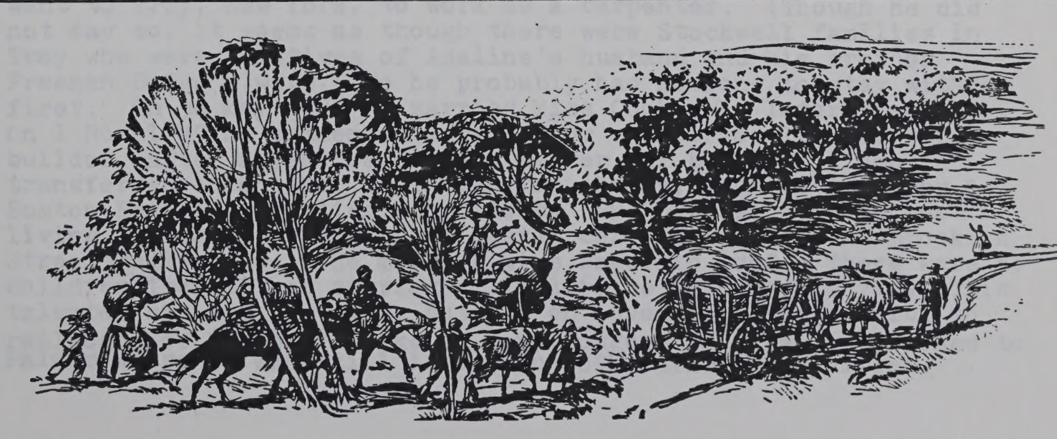
Children of Levi and Keziah (Ellis) Dodge:

Charlotte	9 Jun 1796- 8 Dec 1866	m 18	John Stockwell
+Dwight	28 May 1798-23 Aug 1869	(1) 21 Dec 1817	Susanna Monroe
		(2) 9 Dec 1830	Lydia W. Pearce
Jedediah	7 Mar 1800-20 Aug 1825	ca 1822	Martha Blanchard
Levi Jr.	17 Mar 1802- 1862	ca 1824	Olive Blanchard
Keziah Jr.	27 Aug 1804-22 Mar 1875	(1) 18	Nathan Holbrook
		(2) 18	Cyrus Olds
John	17 Jan 1807-26 Feb 1807		infant
Freeman	17 Feb 1809-15 Jan 1886	24 Oct 1830	Candace Stockwell
Simon	6 Jul 1811- 8 Sep. 1811		infant
Silas	21 Feb 1814- 1 Oct 1818		age 4
Samuel Orison	19 Apr 1818- 7 Oct 1839		age 21
Adaline	2 Apr 1820-living 1898	23 Nov 1840	William Dodge
Ellis	7 May 1825-living 1898	(1) 30 May 1846	Ellen Jane Cook
		(2) 11 Sep 1862	Edna Louise Wager

Since we follow Dwight Dodge, the next step, of course, is to give short sketches of what we know of the lives of the others. In this one case, however, we will break with tradition and tell about the youngest son, Ellis, first, then start with the oldest, Charlotte, on down. The reason for this unusual procedure is that he was the one who gave all the information to the historian, and events in his life shed so much light on the activities of the others that the story will be clearer this way.

Map charting some early Dodge & Pearce family migrations.


Asa + Thomas (generation 5) settled in Green Mountains of Vermont
Adaline + William lived in a lighthouse on the St. Lawrence River
Dwight + Lydia married in Sempronius
Some of Levi's Children settled in Troy NY
Levi + Keziah raised their children in Cheshire Co. N.H.
Early Dodges lived here
Dwight born at Sturbridge MA
Lydia Pearce Born in Schoharie
Early Pearces lived at Little Compton RI
LOWER CANADA
U.S.
UPPER CANADA
VERMONT
NEW HAMPSHIRE
MAINE
NEW YORK
MASSACHUSETTS
CONNECTICUT
R.I.
PENNSYLVANIA
NEW JERSEY
APPALACHIAN MOUNTAINS
Adirondack Mountains
White Mts.
CAPE COD
Long Island



Ellis Dodge said the family moved 125 miles to New Hampshire by ox cart.

Ellis Dodge, the youngest, born 7 May 1825 in Croydon, NH, reported that the death of his father in December 1835 when he was ten years old, left him without any means of support; and he had to go live with his oldest sister, Charlotte (Mrs. John Stockwell) at Rumney, NH, which is situated near a stream on the south slope of Carr Mountain of the White Mountains, a part of the Appalachian Chain. (Nowadays there are ski resorts in the area.)

Before he could go, though, he needed a pair of shoes and had to earn money to buy them. By October 1836 he had a pair of shoes and 50¢ in his pocket for expenses. (50¢ in those days would be what a number of $ would be today!) He started out for Rumney on foot. The lunch his mother, Keziah, had provided "and his scanty clothes" were in a pack on his shoulder.

He had walked about 25 miles the first day without serious difficulty but the seriousness of his predicament began to dawn upon him the next morning while eating his breakfast by the roadside. He pushed on as well as he could; and in the middle of the afternoon a lady, noticing him as he passed, called to him to stop and made numerous friendly inquiries, after which she offered him a bowl of bread and milk. That gave him strength (and probably also encouragement) and enabled him to complete his 50-mile journey about 7:00 p.m.

After living with his sister and brother-in-law for three years, Ellis engaged with a neighboring farmer to work for a year for $25 and clothing. What happened to his mother in the meantime has not been explained. Somehow she managed to get back to Palmer MA, taking his youngest sister, Adeline, 5 years older than he, along.

About December 1840 Adeline, having just married her distant cousin, William Dodge, in Palmer, was visiting Rumney on their wedding trip. They decided to take Ellis home with them so that he could learn the carpenter trade from William.

Ellis stayed with them for a while, learning the trade, and then went to Troy, New York, to work as a carpenter. (Though he did not say so, it seems as though there were Stockwell families in Troy who were relatives of Adaline's husband and his brother Freeman Dodge's wife.) So he probably had someone to stay with at first. On 30 May 1846 he married Miss Cook, who later died. On 1 Nov 1849 he commenced working for a railroad line as car builder, after a year becoming a master car builder. Then he transferred to another train line at Albany; then to the Troy & Boston Railroad, getting promotions. By November 1855 he was living in Brooklyn working as master car builder for the Brooklyn Street Railway Co.. He married Miss Wager in 1862. There were no children from either marriage. In 1869 he returned to Troy. This talented man took out four patents on inventions very useful to railroads of his day. Like so many Dodges, he finally returned to Palmer where he was still living in 1898, drawing royalties.

Charlotte Dodge, oldest of 12 children, was born 9 June 1796 in Sturbridge to a 16-year old mother. When she was only three, her parents took her and her little brother with them 125 miles through the wilderness by ox team to a hilly farm they were trying to carve out of the upper Connecticut River Valley frontier. She grew up there and married John Stockwell in Croydon, NH. John was probably related to her brother Freeman's wife, Candace.

The couple went to live at Rumney, NH. Modern maps show Rumney situated near a stream on the south slope of a mountain in the White Mountain range. They raised three children we know of, and took in and cared for her young brother Ellis when her father died and her mother could not care for him. Possibly two of their daughters were Laura Davis and Martha Davis?? Like so many in the clan, this family wound up in Palmer. She died 8 Dec 1866, age 70.

Jedediah Dodge, named for his Grandfather Ellis, married Martha Blanchard. They lived in Croydon where they had two children, Martha and Martin. He died 20 Aug 1825, age 25, when his son was three months old.

Levi Dodge, Jr., born 17 Mar 1802, married Olive Blanchard of Croydon, probably sister of Jedediah's wife. They lived at Grantham, Chelsea, then Randolph. He died in 1862. Four sons:

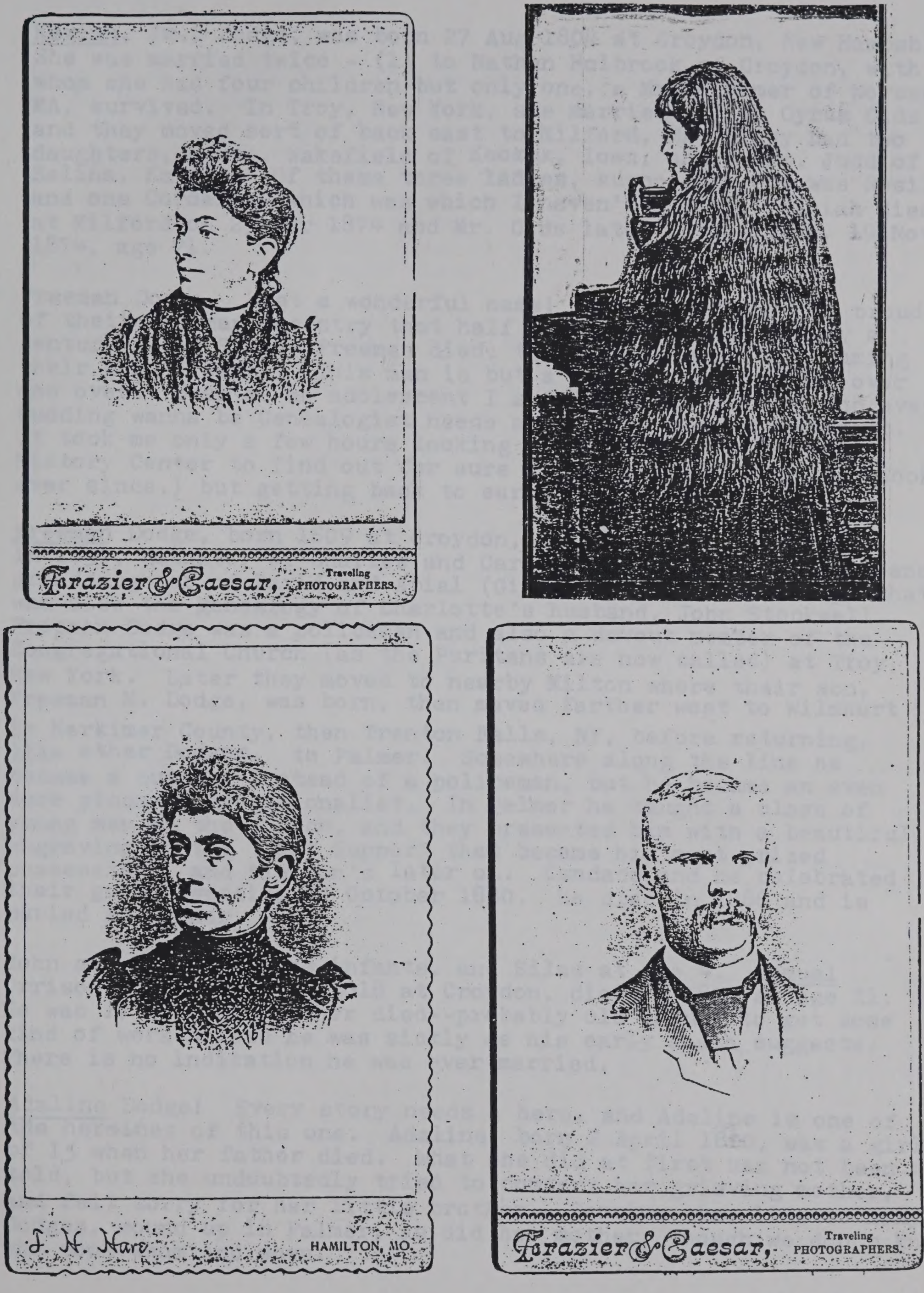
Elias who lived in Lowell MA
Elbridge who migrated to Wisconsin
Austin who migrated to Missouri
Henry who migrated "out west."

This is going to be out of chronological order, but we are very interested about that third son, Austin, born Jan 1831 in NH, because he came West to join his Uncle Dwight and his cousins in 1869. Dr. Dodge says he brought his widowed mother, Olive (Blanchard) Dodge with him, though this writer did not see her name on the 1870 census. He brought his wife, Mary Letitia (Lillie?) Dodge born 1842 in NY State, and a tiny daughter, Nellie N. Dodge born 31 Oct 1867, who died that fall, less than two years old. One can't help but wonder if the hard journey had anything to do with that.

Austin was a blacksmith and Letitia was a milliner. They lived in town in Hamilton, Missouri. They had another little girl, Effie, but he did not live to see her grow up, for he died soon--on 4 Apr 1875, and is buried in the oldest Hamilton cemetery beside the first little daughter.

On 20 Jan 1876 the widow, Mary Letitia Dodge, married Dr. Ray D. Dwight. I do not know whether they had any children, but little Effie grew up to be a winsome lass with long, beautiful hair. Letitia must have enjoyed making pretty hats for her. Effie married a personable young man named George Fine, and probably moved to Muskogee, Oklahoma with him. (according to George Dodge's notes--though somebody misinformed George that Austin was the son of Keziah Dodge, Jr., whose sketch follows next.)

DODGE FAMILY


Frazier & Caesar, Traveling PHOTOGRAPHERS.
J. H. Hare HAMILTON, MO.
Frazier & Caesar, Traveling PHOTOGRAPHERS.

TOP - Effie (Dodge) Fine, daughter of Austin Dodge, an early-day settler. Austin was nephew of Rev. Dwight Dodge. BOTTOM - Letitia Dodge, Effie's mother, who later married Dr. R. D. Dwight; and Effie's husband, George Fir

DODGE FAMILY

Keziah, Jr., Dodge, was born 27 Aug 1804 at Croydon, New Hampshire. She was married twice - (1) to Nathan Holbrook of Croydon, with whom she had four children but only one, a Mrs. Palmer of Worcester, MA, survived. In Troy, New York, she married (2) to Cyrus Olds and they moved sort of back east to Milford, MA. They had two daughters, a Mrs. Wakefield of Keokuk, Iowa, and a Mrs. Judd of Salina, Kansas. Of these three ladies, supposedly one was Rosilla and one Cordelia--which was which I haven't a clue. Keziah died at Milford on 25 Mar 1874 and Mr. Olds later in the year, 19 Nov 1874, age 71.

Freeman Dodge. What a wonderful name! The Dodges were so proud of their Freeman ancestry that half a continent away nearly a century after Samuel Freeman died, the Dodges were still naming their sons Freeman. This man is but a sample, it occurred over and over. Even as an adolescent I suspected that was so and every budding wanna be Genealogist needs a success for encouragement. It took me only a few hours looking at microfiche at a Family History Center to find out for sure it was so, and I've been hooked ever since.) but getting back to earth--

Freeman Dodge, born 1809 at Croydon, married Candace Stockwell in 1830, daughter of Charles and Caroline (Bellows) Stockwell and granddaughter of David and Abial (Giles) Stockwell. Perhaps that was also the genealogy of Charlotte's husband, John Stockwell. Freeman Dodge was a policeman and also a devout member of the Congregational Church (as the Puritans are now called) at Troy, New York. Later they moved to nearby Milton where their son, Freeman M. Dodge, was born, then moved farther west to Wilmhurt in Herkimer County, then Trenton Falls, NY, before returning, like other Dodges, to Palmer. Somewhere along the line he became a butcher instead of a policeman, but he became an even more pious Congregationalist. In Palmer he taught a class of young men at the church, and they presented him with a beautiful engraving of the "Last Supper" that became his most prized possession , and his son's later on. Candace and he celebrated their golden wedding 24 October 1880. He died in 1886 and is buried at Palmer.

John and Simon died as infants, and Silas at age 4. Samuel Orrison Dodge, born in 1818 at Croydon, died in 1839 at age 21. He was 17 when his father died--probably old enough to get some kind of work unless he was sickly as his early death suggests. There is no indication he was ever married.

Adaline Dodge! Every story needs a hero, and Adaline is one of the heroines of this one. Adaline, born 2 April 1820, was a girl of 15 when her father died. What she did at first has not been told, but she undoubtedly tried to comfort her grieving mother, and felt sorry for her little brother. Somehow she, like so many Dodges, wound up in Palmer, as did her mother, though we don't know who took whom and when.

What we do know is that Adaline had a big heart and that the young man she married just couldn't have been nicer. Her husband, William Dodge^8 (William Janes^7 Ananiah^6 Richard^5) was cousin of Adaline Dodge^7 (Levi^6 Richard ^{5}) in that her grandfather was his great grandfather. A little sketch about his grandfather, Ananiah, appears on page 51. Our William was the second oldest of the 14 children of Ananiah's son William Janes^7, a tanner and shoemaker. William must have learned cooperation very early, and his father must have made many shoes to support a family like that.

Though William was born in Maine, he was working as a carpenter in Palmer when he and Adaline met and married. This 22-year old young man took the 15-year old boy from New Hampshire to his own home and taught him to be a good carpenter who succeeded very well. He must have realized Ellis was bright and hard working. Perhaps he thought he could assist him in his own business. More likely he had a kind heart and loved his wife so wanted to make her happy.

Besides being a carpenter, he was a tax collector and census taker. They probably moved to Troy, New York, with Ellis, for William served in the Civil War from 1862-64 as a Captain in the New York Volunteers. After the war he and Adaline were keepers of a lighthouse on Sister Island on the St. Lawrence River. They had four children. Baby Charlotte died age 2. Flavius and William Orrison lived near them in New York. Ellen Jane lived near, too, but across the river on the Canadian side.

Footnote: You will understand this better as the story progresses, but William and Adeline kept in touch with their Missouri relatives. Perhaps duties at the lighthouse left them with ample time for correspondence. It appears William did much of the writing. Our cousin George was privileged to see, or was told of, some of the letters. His notes mention two of them. One was from William O. Dodge, Sister Island Light Station, on St. Lawrence River (return address) dated 15 April 1880 to John Dodge and his wife. In it he mentioned two of Charlotte's daughters and (George's) Aunt Keziah's daughters Rosilla and Cordelia, also his brother, Flavius. (The writing or reporting was bad--William had no brother Flavius. He did have sister Flavilla and son Flavius.)

The other letter, dated 9 July 1880, appears to have been sent to Susanna McCollum, daughter of Dwight's son Silas. William mentioned Charlotte's daughters Laura Davis and Martha Davis, also Letitia Lillie (apparently in Missouri, and probably Austin's wife-pages 57-8.) He also gave his regards to nephews John and Silas.

DODGE FAMILY

References:

Virkus Compendium of American Genealogy Series Vol 7 Page 142
  This is a series of abbreviated genealogical tables. The first column goes from Immigrant John Ellis (Ellice) to John Ellis brother of our Captain Samuel Ellis (Keziah's grandfather).
  The second column goes from Immigrant Samuel Freeman to Lt. Samuel Freeman (her other grandfather), and also reveals her Mayflower ancestry.
Vital Records to the Year 1850 of (separately) Sturbridge, Charlton, Southbridge, Palmer, Newton, Needham, Medfield, Medway and others
Massachusetts Soldiers & Sailors in the War of the Revolution (under E's) Page 315, third entry from top-Capt. Samuel Ellis of Sturbridge
Massachusetts Officers in the French & Indian Wars 1748-1763 by Voye Entry #2080 is Lt. Samuel Freeman of Sturbridge
Freeman Genealogy - by Frederick Freeman (1875)
  Volume I - Memorial of Edmund Freeman of Sandwich and His Descendants
  Volume II - Memorial of Samuel Freeman of Watertown and His Descendants
  Keziah was descended from both of these men.
First Census of the United States--Worcester County, MA
Early Connecticut Marriages Prior to 1800 - Frederick W. Bailey
History of Worcester County, Massachusetts, Vol II - Section on Sturbridge especially, and of Sutton, Charlton, etc incidentally. (1879 and other editions)
History of Sturbridge and Southbridge
New England Register Vol 65:155 - Interpretation of Woodward's and Saffery's Map of 1642, or the Earliest Bay Path - by Levi Badger Chase, esq. of Sturbridge, Mass. (this is not must reading since it covers such an early date, but gives good background on the locale and its effect on those who settled there, including our people who were pioneers)

No printed Ellis genealogy reaches far enough down in time to help us much, so the Ellis Family segment will be the result of years of hard work capped off by the accidental discovery of an unpublished paper by a descendant of Keziah (Ellis) Dodge's granduncle. Checking that paper for accuracy helped prove our own line.

Dwight Dodge^7 (Levi^6 Richard^5 Richard^4 Richard^3 Richard^2 Richard^1) the second of twelve children, was born 38 May 1798 in Sturbridge* to Levi and Keziah (Ellis) Dodge when his mother was 18. Next year, when he was a year old, his parents took him and his three-year old sister along with the family group 125 miles by ox cart "through the wilderness to an unbroken tract where everything was to be done." The usual route, and that which they probably took, was a road over what had been an ancient Indian path to Springfield MA, and thence up a trail paralleling the Connecticut River to Western New Hampshire, stopping before they had quite reached the White Mountains.

Not that they were the first in Cheshire County. There had been some people there for many years, including Dodges not closely related to them, but until the land crunch few had stayed. The land was more suited to sheep raising, or to the dairying industry now prevalent in that area, than the general farming-grain raising they had in mind. During the frontier days it was too difficult to get to market. The land Dwight's grandfather purchased was full of timber to be cleared and unbroken to the plow. Some of the acreage may have been on what there was of a Connecticut River flood plain, but most was hilly, rocky, and the growing season short.

Not much was said about their family life there. Views of the nearby mountains may have been breathtakingly beautiful but that does not put food into hungry young mouths. Levi was probably a very good blacksmith. He taught the trade to Dwight, who used it to good advantage. Levi did not own his farm--his father did. As the preceding pages have shown, most of the sons and daughters--and all of them appear to have been bright and capable--settled someplace else, in Maine, Massachusetts, Troy NY, or even in a lighthouse on an island in the St. Lawrence River. They became shoemakers, carpenters and so on. Freeman the policeman-turned-butcher who started out in Troy, NY, wound up as a religion teacher in Palmer. You can tell this family was religiously-inclined.

Our ancestor, Dwight, a blacksmith like his father, was extremely religious, too, and became a minister of the Gospel, most likely during his early twenties.

The family Bible says he married on 21 Dec 1817, Susanna Monroe, born 10 August 1799 in Croyden, Cheshire County, New Hampshire. The 1800 census shows a Mr. & Mrs. Nathaniel Monroe. Maybe they were her parents. One might take it for granted that they married in New Hampshire, but the usually detailed Bible is silent about that one place. Dr. J. T. Dodge reported Dwight "married in Sempronius, New York, a lady from Croyden, New Hampshire."

---

*The Dodge Family Bible says "Dwight Dodge was born in Stirbridge State of Massachusett County of Wossester May the 28th 1798."

Though I have never run across that, it has been said that a book reported he was born in New York.

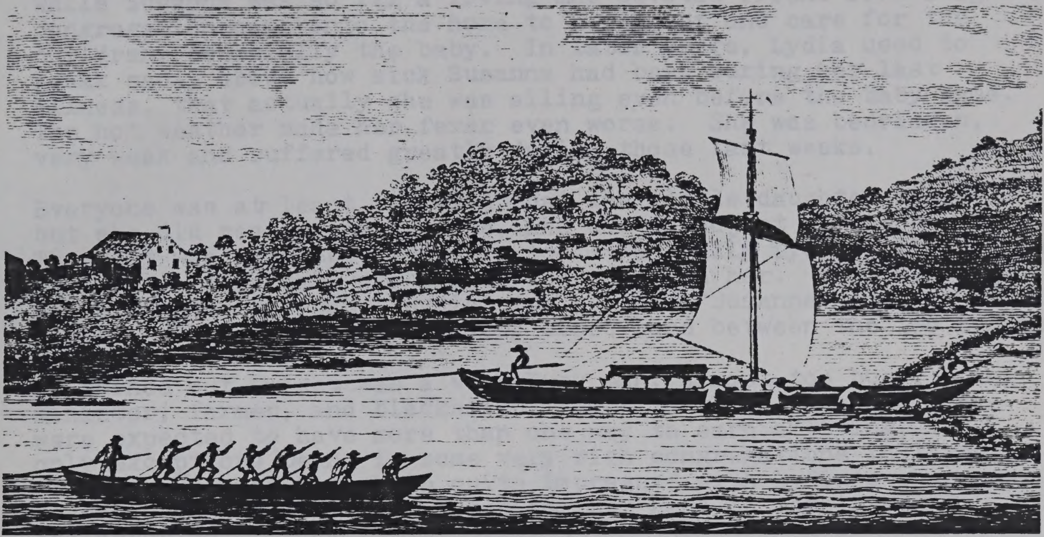
Perhaps these youngsters, ages 18 and 19, each came west separately seeking opportunity and were delighted to meet again. Several Dodge families were already in the area. No one has said whether they were distant cousins or if Dwight made contact with them. The prosperous Finger Lakes region was already settled, this being in the military district set aside for land grants for Revolutionary War veterans.

The "History of Cayuga County" says that the Indians who had previously occupied the Finger Lakes region had been "civilized" for centuries to the point where they lived in longhouse villages, not teepees, and planted fine fields of squash, corn, and vegetables, that they were not such fierce warriors as the tribes who roamed the eastern part of the state. The land was already cleared when the white settlers got there.

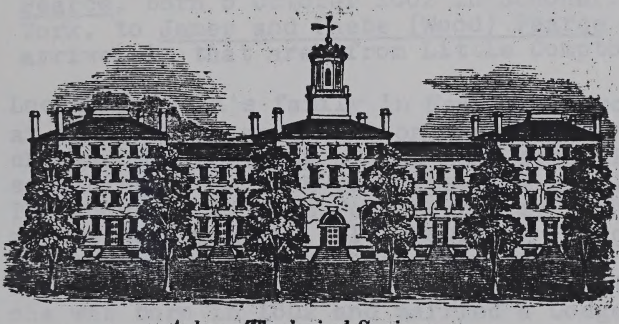
It was easy to get to that place from New Hampshire. A picture on the next page shows boats on the Mohawk River in 1810. They came seven years later when transportation was even better. Originally the only really difficult part of the journey was caused by swift currents at the juncture of the Mohawk and the Hudson, necessitating a very long portage. To reach the Hudson from New Hampshire, most travelers took a pretty good road going east-west across far southern Vermont, widened from an old Indian trail that had been used for centuries. Highway 9 now approximates that route. The reason to think they went that way is that most everybody did.

So, perhaps Dwight and Susanna met again in Sempronius, fell in love, and got married--but ancestor sleuths have to be nosy people, otherwise we would never learn anything. It looks to me as though Dwight and the neighbor girl eloped. Adding to that suspicion is the fact that eight months later their oldest child, Silas Dwight, was born in Sempronius, but when the next child, Lucy, came they were back in Newport, New Hampshire. That suggests probably her parents were there and she wanted to be near them when the baby came, especially if the first birth was slightly premature. The family does show up on the 1820 New Hampshire census. They were back in New York soon after. Little Levi Freeman Dodge was born in Sempronius but died in 1822, aged one year and three days.

About this period in time, exact date unknown, Dwight became a minister of the Gospel. He soon had a sizeable congregation. Susannah's health seems to have been delicate, but they had two more children, John Freeman in 1824 and then Lydia Susanna on 13 July 1830. Three weeks and two days later Susannah died - on 5 August 1830, age 31. She probably died of pueperal fever or a body damaged in previous child bearing. People still did not know about germs in those days. Even if they had they might not have been able to save her life.



A View of the Boats and Manner of Navigating on the Mohawk River, 1810



Auburn Theological Seminary.

The *Auburn Theological Seminary* was established by the synod of Geneva in 1819, and by the act of incorporation, in 1820, was placed under commissioners, chosen by the synods of Genesee, Geneva, and Oneida. There are four professors in the institution. Over 300 clergymen have been educated since its establishment. In 1839, the number of students was 71. The principal building is of stone, presenting a front of 200 feet. The library exhibits a valuable collection of choice theological works, and contains upwards of 5,000 vols. No charge is made for the use of the library, rooms, or furniture. The *Methodist Episcopal* society was organized in 1821; their house, on Chapel-street, was erected soon after, and has been since sold to the Catholics; their present stone chapel, on North-street, was erected in 1833. The *Baptist* society was organized in 1825, and built a church on South-street, (since sold to the Universalists,) in 1829; their church on Genesee-street was erected in 1834. The *Second Presbyterian* society was organized in 1829, and the foundation of their house laid.

ABOVE--Before the Canal. There was no such thing as the Erie Canal when Dwight or Lydia first lived in New York State but it was being used actively by the time they left.

LEFT--It may well be that Dwight never set foot in the seminary depicted here, but at least the family was familiar with it, for this is how it looked while they were living not so very many miles south of there. (written 1841)

While Susanna was so ill a loving and devoted friend from Dwight's congregation came into the home to nurse her and care for the children, especially the baby. In later years, Lydia used to speak sadly about how sick Susanna had been during her last illness, that actually she was ailing even before the baby came. The hot weather made her fever even worse. She was bedridden, very weak and suffered greatly during those last weeks.

Everyone was at least relieved that the little daughter lived but she did require extra care, and had to adjust to cow's milk. The heat was difficult for her, too. Naturally Lydia fell in love with the little baby who was so dependent on her. The baby's parents named the baby "Lydia" for her and "Susanna" for her own mother. There was always a very close bond between the two Lydias.

It turned out Dwight was a very busy man, almost too busy, being minister, farmer, and blacksmith. Back in those days ministers were expected to have more than one way to earn a living, the only exceptions being in some very rich congregations in large cities. He must have been quite impressed with Lydia's character and devotion, for he soon asked for her hand in marriage and she accepted.

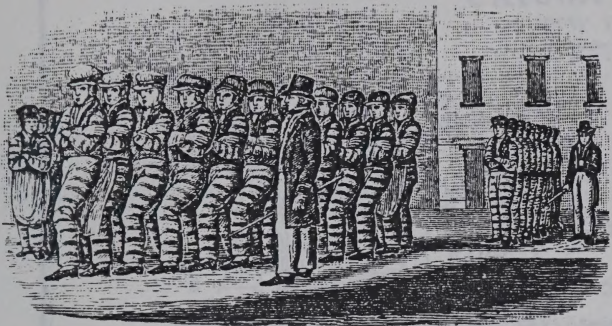
On 9 December 1830 (Reverend) Dwight Dodge married Lydia Woodman Pearce, born 6 October 1802 in Schoharie, Schoharie County, New York, to James and Phebe (Wood) Pearce who had only recently arrived in that area from Little Compton, Rhode Island.

Locating Lydia's family in New York records was a little complicated at first until we caught on that when they changed states they also changed the spelling of the name from "Pearce" to "Pierce." It had something to do with politics--I'm still fuzzy about the details. The Dodge Bible says Pearce, but my mother used to point indignantly at the word and say, "It should be Pierce. I'm positive of that!" There are two rather comprehensive genealogies of the Pearces but by the time they get down to her details get sparse. One said she was born in 1802 and married a Dodge, nothing about leaving Rhode Island. The other does say she was living in Kingston, Mo. They definitely give her ancestry back to the early 1600's.

The 1810 Schoharie NY census, page 034 shows James Pearce, man & wife over 45, boy -10, boy & 2 girls 10-16, 2 boys & girl 16-20, young lady 26-45 which fits our family except Lydia was 8, not 10.

James Pearce died 22 July 1820. By 1830 Lydia & her mother Phebe were living with her older brother Giles and his family in Sempronius page 311 of the census; her brother George & family on page 337; and Dwight Dodge & family page 309. Several families of both surnames were there. I am not sure when they moved to Cayuga County but they must have been there several years, for they had been enthusiastic members of Dwight's congregation by then.

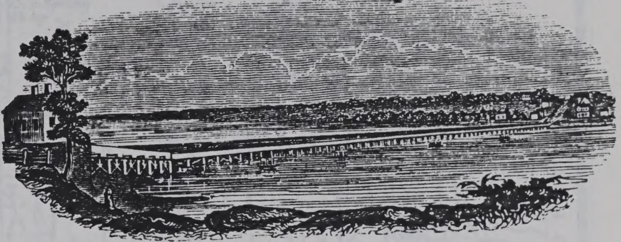
Engravings from "Historical Collections of the State of New York" - J.W. Barber et al, Tuttle, printed 1841 while our Dodges were living there.



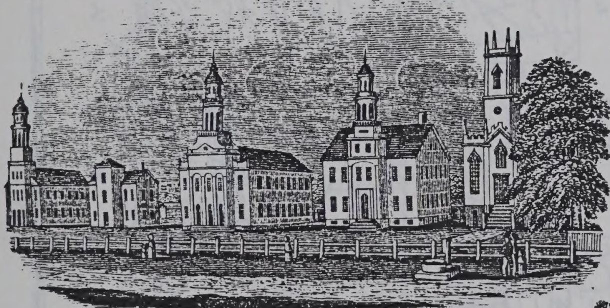
Prisoners at the State Prison at Auburn.

All these pictures were from woodcuts. Photography had not yet been invented.

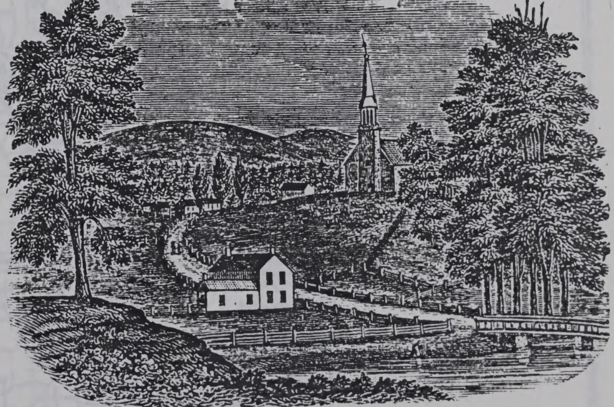
Prisoners would cry foul at such treatment nowadays but back then jail was for punishment.



Cayuga Bridge.



Public buildings in Homer.

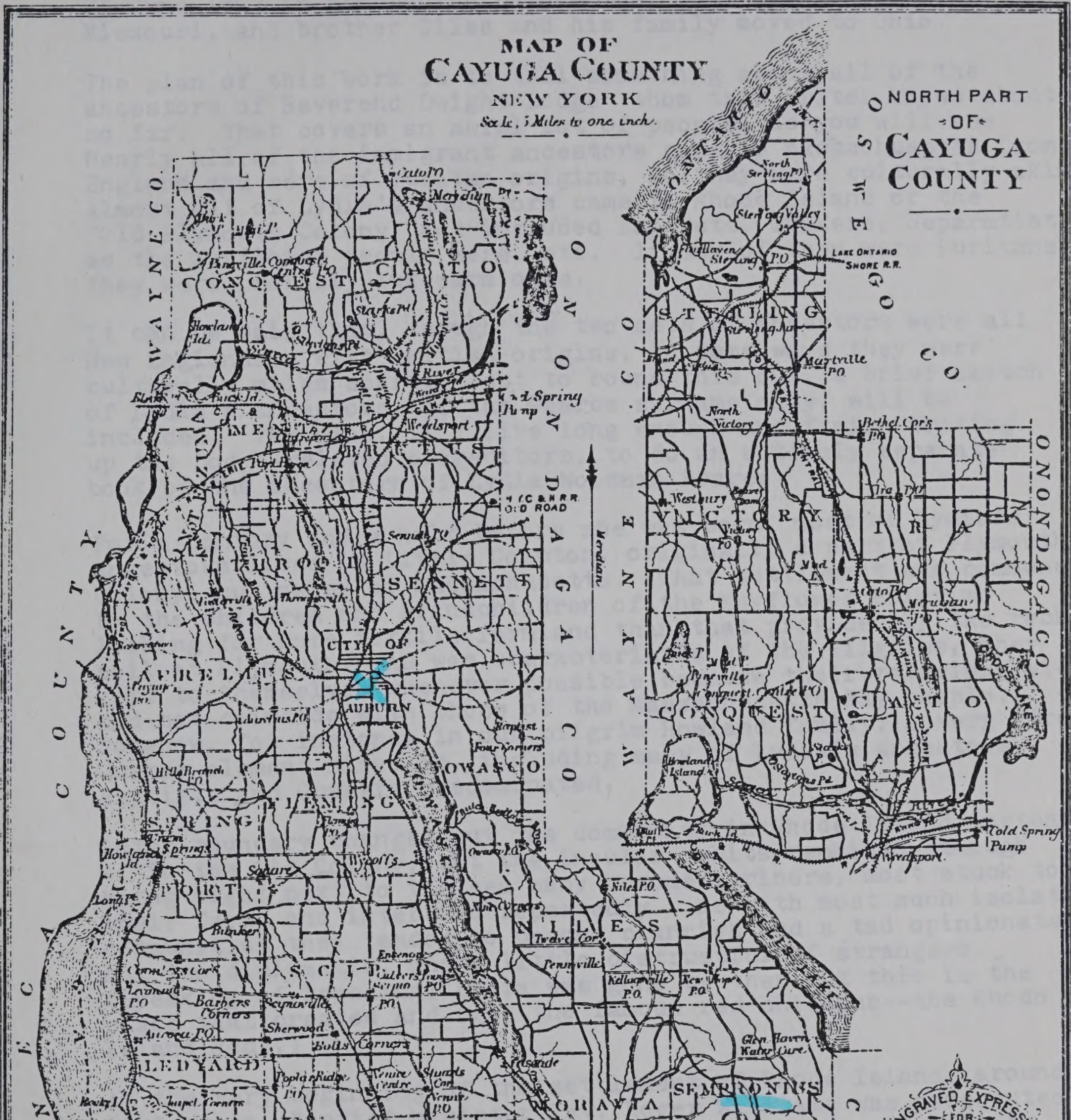


Ancient stone church in Schoharie.

Though the buildings and bridges may not be modern by today's standards, they were lovely, don't you agree? They were more advanced than the more primitive surroundings of early settlers in their part of Missouri.

DODGE FAMILY

Rev. Dwight and Lydia Dodge raised their family here. Homer, in Cortland Co., would be just beyond the SE border on the map.


MAP OF
CAYUGA COUNTY
NEW YORK
Scale, 5 Miles to one inch.
NORTH PART OF CAYUGA COUNTY
ENGRAVED EXPRESSLY FOR THE CAYUGA COUNTY HISTORY
ONTARIO
OSWEGO CO.
ONONDAGA CO.
WAYNE CO.
SENECA COUNTY
CORTLAND CO.
TOMPKINS CO.
LAKE ONTARIO SHORE R.R.
STERLING
VICTORY
IRA
CONQUEST
CATO
MENTZ
BRUTUS
THROOP
SENNETT
AURELIUS
CITY OF AUBURN
OWASCO
FLEMING
SPRINGPORT
NILES
SCIPIO
LEDYARD
VENICE
MORAVIA
SEMPRONIUS
GENOA
LOCKE
SUMMER HILL
Homer

Just so you know, Phebe (Wood) Pearce, Lydia's mother, died 25 June 1842 in Sempronius before the Dodge family moved to Missouri, and brother Giles and his family moved to Ohio.

The plan of this work is to tell something about all of the ancestors of Reverend Dwight Dodge whom this writer knows about so far. That covers an awful lot of people, as you will see. Nearly all of the immigrant ancestors came to Massachusetts from England and were of Puritan origins, so they were culturally akin. Almost all of Lydia's ancestors came to Rhode Island or the "Old Plymouth Colony" and included Baptists, Quakers, Separatists as the Mayflower people were, etc. If any of them were Puritans, they were probably lukewarm ones.

It can be said that, though the two sets of ancestors were all New Englanders with British origins, in some ways they were culturally miles apart. Just to round this out, a brief sketch of Lydia's ancestors, of the Pearce surname only, will be included. The plan, if I live long enough and finish writing up the Dodge-related progenitors, to do an entirely separate book of the ancestors of Lydia Woodman Pearce.

For a century and a half before she was born, most of Lydia's ancestors lived in Little Compton, originally a part of Plymouth Colony, but never of Massachusetts. That settlement was commenced by the children and grandchildren of the Mayflower Pilgrims looking for more fertile farmland than that provided by the rocky soil at Plymouth. As was characteristic of the Pilgrims, they kept to themselves whenever possible because their religious views did not coincide with those of the Massachusetts Bay people. Somehow, for instance in our pilgrim Howland family, a very strong Quaker element mixed in, including many of Lydia's ancestors. Baptists and Quakers predominated.

Later boundary changes put the community in Rhode Island instead of in the Old Colony, but the insular habits remained--though being right next to the sea many became mariners, most stuck to their farms and interbred repeatedly. As with most such isolated communities they tended to become clannish and a tad opinionated, not too diplomatic, and a little distrustful of strangers. (Speaking of breeding, Lydia was gone by then but this is the place that created and bred the famous red chickens--the Rhode Island Reds.)

At the very beginning of the settlement of Rhode Island, around 1640 or so, Baptist minister Rev. Roger Williams was persecuted out of the Massachusetts Bay Colony by the Congregationalists (Puritans). They wanted him to either repent or perish but instead he was invited to stay by friendly Indians. That infuriated his persecutors who then did everything they could to take

over Rhode Island and rule it their way. They could not because Rev. Williams was bright enough to secure a royal charter. But you do see from this why all Rhode Islanders, not just Little Compton, should be distrustful of strangers, especially Congregationalists. It just so happened, of course, that was exactly what the Dodges had been almost up to Dwight's generation. After the Revolutionary War the age of revivalism swept the country. Levi Dodge's children - some of them - were among those converted to other forms of Protestantism, in Dwight's case with such enthusiasm that he became a minister. But Puritanism was the force that brought the Dodges to these shores in the first place.

All the foregoing, of course, is over-simplification, told just to demonstrate the differences in the Dodge and Pearce family backgrounds. It gets yet more dramatic when one remembers that Lydia, herself, was born in Schoharie, New York, a 3rd-generation Palatine German community. They clung to the German language so long that some of them were still speaking it when she was a child. It seems the Pearces moved there around the turn of the century, but other Rhode Islanders went there when the British occupied their part of the state as part of a naval blockage during the Revolution. Schoharie was the scene of some very bloody battles. They appreciated all the help they could get. The Pearces were among the Rhode Islanders attracted to the place as their first New York home.

The story of why the Palatines happened to be there is a long story in itself. In the early 1700's the Palatines started to flood other parts of Europe, such as England, to flee intolerable conditions at home. The British decided to take advantage of some of them, transporting them to New York forests in a scheme to get them to manufacture naval stores--turpentine, pitch, timbers and so on for the use of the British navy, at a cheap price. They started out enthusiastically--only problem, the people hired to supervise didn't know how to do the work! The plan fizzled and the poor Germans were abandoned without provisions, in the winter in the woods among wild Indians, to shift for themselves.

Many of them did starve to death. The story of their struggles makes interesting reading for anyone who wants to look it up.* Their troubles would break your heart, but through frugality and stubbornness some of them managed to survive and build a neat, thriving community over time, many of them in Schoharie. It is not surprising they were sometimes blunt in their dealings with others, saying exactly what was on their minds.

Lydia, of course, was not German, but her early formative years were among those people's grandchildren. Don't you imagine she picked up many of their ways, such as matter-of-factness rather than tact?

---

*One such reference is "Westward Expansion" pp. 97-8 by Ray A. Billington et al (5th Ed. 1982 - McMillan)

DODGE FAMILY

Dwight and Lydia Dodge were my great-great grandparents, and I grew up hearing about them. Their youngest daughter, Emma Adelia, was my great grandmother whom I remember from early childhood. My grandmother, Mary Lydia, used to take us children to Sunday School to the very same Christian Church congregation he began in Kingston. Sometimes after the services elderly people used to come up to us and tell what a fine person Reverend Dodge was. It made us proud. They also mentioned Emma's late husband, Dr. Dunn, who they said was especially nice, too.

This first story about Dwight Dodge when he was a boy was repeated to us many times when we were little. I always wished that somehow those same circumstances would happen to me, so that I could pull the same neat trick he did.

It seems that when Dwight was a boy he was walking past an apple orchard in New Hampshire. He observed some especially beautiful, delicious looking apples, and he was already hungry. As boys will sometimes do, he helped himself to one. Upon observing that, the farmer who owned the orchard got mad. He wanted no more of thieving boys, so he sicced his dog on him. Young Dwight, seeing the dog advancing, pointed still farther on and said, "Go, boy! Go, boy!" and the dog kept going on past him. The farmer, provoked as he was, could not keep himself from grinning. He scolded the boy, but commended him for his "Yankee wit."

Dwight grew up to be a congenial and caring person, but at the same time he must have been a "work-a-holic" and perfectionist. The following story illustrates that. Skipping ahead some thirty-odd years, the Reverend Dwight Dodge went through a very stressful period. He was probably trying to do too much, keeping up his blacksmith business and farm while at the same time caring for a sizeable church congregation. The strain of always being on call for his people, visiting the sick, counseling or consoling the troubled, preaching at funerals and coming up with new material for weekly sermons started to get to him. He was beginning to get "burned out" as they say nowadays.

At that time little Emma Adelia was five. Silas, the oldest, was newly married and had gone to live in Missouri. Some of the Hulls (Silas' in-laws) had either joined them or were getting ready to. They were painting a glowing picture of the undeveloped northwest Missouri countryside and all the opportunity waiting there. Son John, already a young man, was chafing at the bit to get started, wanted his parents to go along, but would go anyway if they did or not. Martin and Lucy (Dodge) Streeter were toying with the idea but had not yet decided. Most of the children were eager for new adventure.

Dwight was hesitant. Probably Lydia was, too. They were settled and well liked in a beautiful area in New York State. They were secure financially, and he felt his congregation needed him or he would not have been so active trying to meet their needs. He was in his late 40's, slightly past the age when limitless energy pushes one on to new fromtiers. Though it was true his grandfather, Richard V, had done it at the same age, unlike Richard he felt stressed out. He sort of doubted he had the stamina to undertake a trip like that, to say nothing of the physical demands he knew were necessary to get started in an undeveloped rural area.

About that time Reverend Dodge got so depressed and wound up that he started mumbling in his sleep. Lydia did not know what to make of it. She also was tired. She had a big family to care for, and duties as a preacher's wife made extra demands on her time, too. Her life was not necessarily a picnic. If Dwight could not sleep and mumbled, she could not get any rest, either.

When the mumblings turned into actual sermons, it was just too much for her. Talking about it did no good. Finally she confided in friends who, of course, were members of his church. They did not know how to help. What's more, they thought surely she must be exaggerating. Mumbling, yes--but preaching sermons in one's sleep was just too strange. By then Lydia was in a state of confusion so she let some people observe. Sure enough, he started preaching--but upon awakening and finding out what had happened behind his back, he felt he had been betrayed.

Dwight never preached in his sleep again--but he did decide to move to Missouri.

One might say that the story about the boy, the apples, and the dog sound suspiciously like George Washington and the cherry tree, or like something a minister such as Reverend Dodge would say during a sermon to hold the attention of his congregation. However, his descendants did believe it, so maybe the boy did exactly what they say. Dwight must have been witty to attract the following he had.

The second story must be true, for it accidentally reveals more about their personalities than they intended to tell. From it you can see that Lydia and Dwight, though they loved each other, did not understand one another. Was Dwight too touchy? Was Lydia too outspoken? She certainly meant no harm but he was hurt, and she did not understand why. In fact, she never did "get it," for the story was repeated to later generations, and we all got a chuckle out of the idea of preaching in one's sleep.

Despite all of the above, Dwight and Lydia did have a happy marriage. But there was another, very serious problem. Silas, the oldest, was not quite 12 when his mother died and seems never to have recovered

from the shock. The boy's heart must have broken to see his mother suffer so and die a lingering death. It seems as though, as the oldest born to a teenage mother, he had been the one she depended on to be the big boy who helped her, especially if she sometimes felt weak. If so, he must have felt crushed he could not help her get well, or that someone else had to take over when she got so very critically ill. Whatever the situation, he kept his feelings bottled up inside until it was too late to ever change. When she died, the poor little fellow never, ever, let go of his dead mother, even though he lived to old age himself. No one on earth could take her place, He regarded anyone who tried to be a terrible person.

Can't you just imagine the situation in that home during Susannah's last illness? There must have been fervent family prayers that she would recover, even when things looked bleak. Can't you just see Lydia trying to quiet the scared and fretful children so that her patient could rest? Perhaps the tiny baby had trouble digesting the animal milk formula she was given, and cried a lot, upsetting the entire household. The infant's fretful wails would have been hard to bear at such a time. How could the household not have been disrupted? Lydia must have done a marvellous job nursing her beloved friend, trying to care for the friend's family the best she could, like a sacred trust, out of love. The fact that Susannah named the baby Lydia, as she did, proves that the two were very close in affection.

The ancient Puritans had an abhorence of the single life, quoting the Bible when God said, "It is not good that man should be alone" whereupon He created Eve. The Congregational Church would not permit single adults to live alone, ordering them to "attach yourself to some family." If the situation continued, a committee would search out a family and order the person to live there.

It is true that after the 1692 witchcraft hysteria the Church lost much credibility in the eyes of many--particularly, one may be sure, in the eyes of the ancestors of Dwight's grandmother, Lois (Towne) Dodge. The Towne family were the greatest sufferers of all during that dreadful time--still, the Dodges were good members of the church up to the time Dwight was inspired by evangelists to switch to a different sect. Remember that his brother Freeman during this same time was teaching a Congregational religion class to young men. Dwight was steeped from early childhood in Puritanical traditions, regardless of what he called himself. Those attitudes were passed on down to his descendants.

The modern tradition of a year's "mourning time" after the loss of a spouse had not yet come into vogue. Nobody ever thought of such a thing back then. Quite the contrary, though all of them were sad. including Lydia, the children needed a mother and he needed a wife. Within four months they were married. Everyone seems to have thought it was a great idea except for poor little Silas.

DODGE FAMILY

Migration stories are invariably fascinating. Traditions passed down by Silas and Emma's descendants appear to conflict but can perhaps be reconciled. Silas came a couple of years before the others. His descendant, George Dodge, reported in the interesting Dodge Family notebook that Silas and his wife came by ox team "via the Ohio, the Mississippi and the Missouri Rivers," and that by the time they arrived at their destination they had "barely enough money left to send a message to the folks back east." He goes on to say that later during the Gold Rush to California Silas (and John) joined in. The inference was that they struck it rich and the return trip was "by way of Cape Horn, getting off the boat at Lexington."

It may be that when the larger family group moved West they could afford a more comfortable trip. They may have brought oxen. They did pack some of their belongings into small wooden trunks of the type one could use as a small bench during the trip and in the home later on. The writer has seen some of them, passed on to descendants and made of 20-inch or wider boards sawed from trees in New York State.

That trip was made during the heyday of steamships. Writer's sister, Mrs. Billie Gene Pringle, remembers Grandma telling her about some of the problems Emma and Lydia had related to her about steamship travel. Thus it would appear that at least part of the journey was by this mode. When we see the Delta Queen nowadays it looks pretty, but to the long distance travelers of an earlier day there were minor irritations caused, for instance, by the steam and by the soot from the smokestacks. They did make pretty good time, though, especially going with the current and were more comfortable than oxcarts or wagons. It is very logical that they did disembark at Lexington, Missouri.

Something can be surmised about the personalities of this family group when one hears the second problem Grandma related to Billie. The family was very concerned about appearing well groomed and presentable when they came into towns along the way. It appears that keeping clothing washed and clean was not too great a challenge, but because they had no opportunity to do any ironing they were worried about wrinkles. They solved this by folding their clothes very carefully in just a certain way which they then placed under cushions which they sat on to smoothe our the wrinkles. They were very fastidious people and, being part of a minister's family, felt they were subject to public scrutiny.

Writer would be grateful to anyone who could fill in any more details on this subject, or any other Dodge Family lore--or even that of their neighbors who probably shared the same or similar conditions.

DODGE FAMILY

When Silas first came west to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1844 and his parents in 1846, they settled in what was then called Blythe Township, named for an old pioneer, Riley Blythe, who had hunted and trapped along the branches of Shoal Creek long before. At first the county seat had been at a Mormon settlement called "Far West," and continued to be there until after 1843.

The culture of the Mormons and that of the other settlers clashed to a point which inevitably led to bloodshed. Early history of the Mormons is remindful in a way of the first Puritans of early New England back in the 1630's or so. Just like the Puritans, the Mormons were absolutely convinced theirs was the only way to salvation. They proselytized vigorously and they insisted on governing any area they were situated in, especially if they were a majority.

The Mormon movement started in New York State among people with Yankee background, though others had joined by the 1840's. The bulk of early Missouri settlers were of very different culture, such as the original French or else southerners who had come there through Kentucky, Tennessee, and contiguous states. Those people were distrustful of Yankees to start with. The new religion they considered false, distasteful, even evil. Both sides became bellicose whereupon the Mormons were beset by angry mobs even before the Missouri governor finally called out the troops to drive them out. The manner in which they accomplished the task left something a great deal better to be desired. The refugees finally retraced their steps eastward to the Mississippi River where they established a settlement in Hancock County, Illinois, called Nauvoo. As with most forced evacuations, a few stragglers stayed behind. Son John Freeman Dodge married the daughter of one such family, though most Mormons were gone when the Dodges came.

Far West was in the western part of the county. As the whole area filled up, the population center started to shift eastward so that it was felt necessary to move the county seat to a more central location. The Missouri legislature selected a committee to find a site and lay the groundwork. Several men were chosen, but it is said that the actual work was accomplished by only three of them, Robert D. Ray of Carroll County, Milford Donaho of Daviess County, and George W. Dunn of Ray County. (It just so happens that the latter of the three, Judge George Washington Dunn of Richmond, MO, later became brother-in-law of the youngest Dodge daughter Emma, our ancestor, when she married his brother. More of that later.)

The men preferred a site for the county seat slightly south of that eventually chosen, near Log Creek, but the owner refused to yield the land. After much deliberation, they finally chose the present site where the town square now stands, and Kingston was incorporated as county seat by a special act of the state legislature later. They named it for Governor King.

Old Blythe Township was eventually divided into Hamilton, Kingston and Grant Townships. Dwight and Lydia and the younger children were already living in the western Kingston area by the time it was incorporated. John lived west of them at the part of Far West which became Mirable. Silas then or a little later lived near what became Hamilton, or a little south of there. When the family first came to the area it was primitive compared with the beautiful buildings and the sophistication of the New York Finger Lakes area. The New York schools had been excellent. John credited much of his later success to the superior schooling he had received there, whereas the schools in Caldwell County were just getting started.

The first school house, "a nice brick building," was built in Blythe in 1846, the year the family came. It was located south of what later became the public square, and probably that was where the younger children attended school.

It is hard for me to imagine that, because of all the brush and woodlots that abound nowadays, but I have heard it claimed that there were almost no trees between Hamilton and Kingston in the very early days, except those along the stream beds and a gigantic old tree that became a landmark. If that is true it must be that the Indians had deliberately set brushfires for their own purposes.

The Dodge family tales say that in the early days the area was rather sparsely populated and people, feeling rather isolated on their farms, were always delighted to have company to break the monotony, and very hospitable. Often it took a long time to get to the home of a relative or friend or, in Dwight's case, a church connection or former member of the congregation. Because of that, the visitor was generally invited to stay the night. The first homes were often log cabins, replaced by siding when and if it could be afforded. The houses were sparsely furnished and had fewer walls than later on, because it was easier to keep warm in the winter that way and allowed more circulation in the summer. In place of walls, they often hung curtains or blankets from the ceiling, especially to provide more privacy for sleeping. When visiting, one was not supposed to look behind such a curtain.

Quoting page 263 of Caldwell County History, under "Churches of Kingston"--

"Christian Church--December 24, 1865, this church was organized with the following members: Dwight Dodge, Lemuel Dunn, J. D. Cox, J. P. McKinnie, H. B. Nelson, Walker Miller, Susannah P. Thompson, Rowanna McKinnie, Emma A. Dunn, Lydia W. Dodge and Harriet Northrup. The church building, a frame, was purchased from the Southern Methodists in 1869, at a cost of $1,200. ...The present membership is 49."

Of course, Reverend Dwight Dodge was the pastor of this group. Almost all of those charter members were family members or related by marriage, as the reader will see later on. Though Dwight died only four years later, the year they bought the church building, the membership did continue to grow. When this writer was a little girl, Grandma used to take us kids to Sunday School there, in a buggy pulled by a nice brown horse named Bessie. Once in a while we used Dolly, a white and gray horse just a tad larger, but usually it was Bessie.

It was never a large congregation, but it wasn't very small, either. I was too youthful to be overly concerned with details, but do remember that toward the last that I attended they had to hire a minister to drive in from another community, for the preaching part of the services. Before that we children attended Sunday School classes and learned all the Bible stories and that we should be good. The old hymns the congregation sang were beautiful. We had a white clapboard building with a steeple and stained glass windows. A lot of people wore talcum powder with a nice fragrance, and sometimes elderly members who remembered Emma's husband, my Great Grandfather Lemuel Dunn, Jr., whom they called "Doctor Dunn" even though he was an attorney and probate judge as well, would tell us how nice he was, and they spoke of Reverend Dwight Dodge as though he were a saint. They were proud to have known them, so you know how that made us feel to be descended from those men.

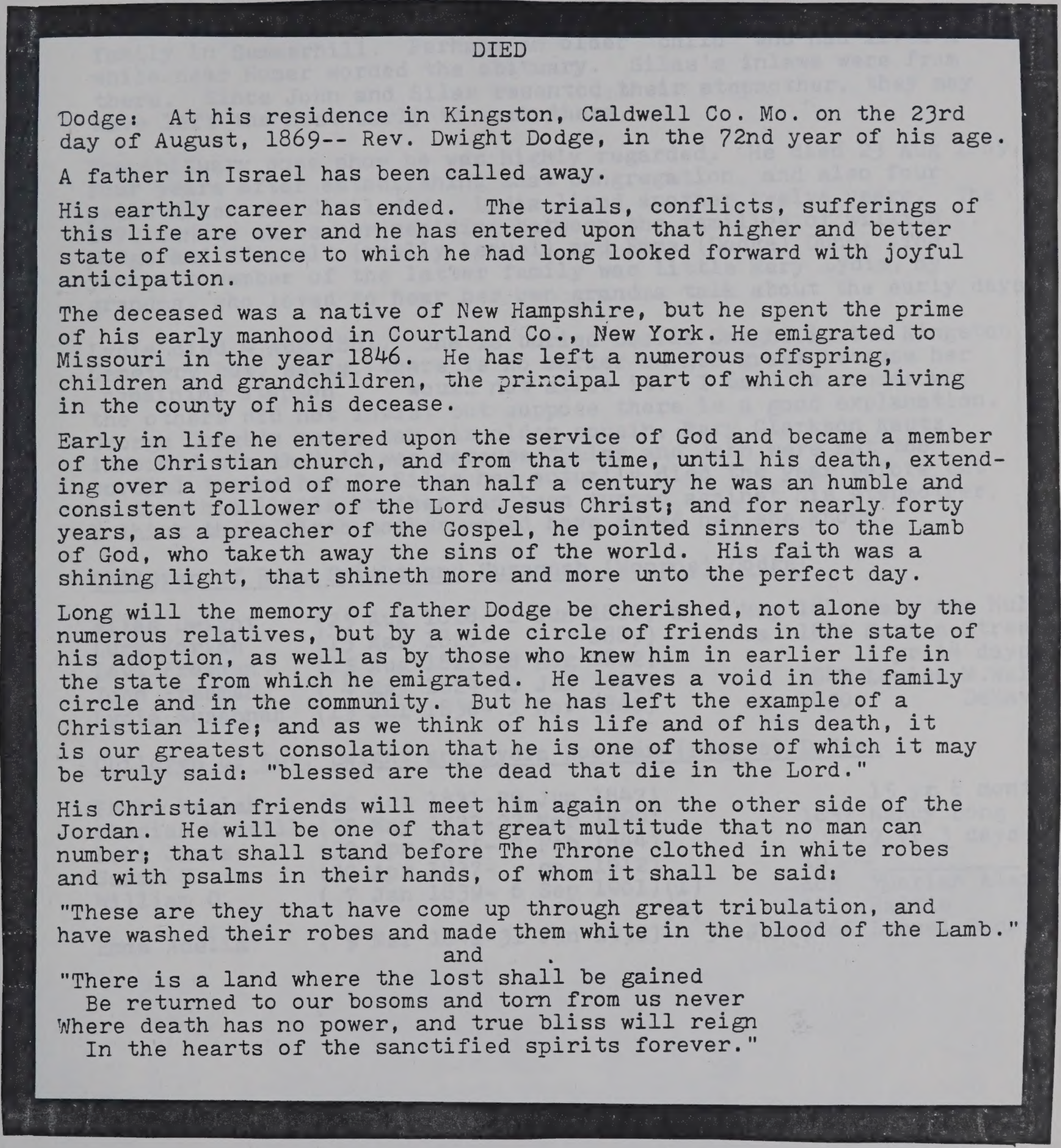
Some other tales about the family will be included in sections about Emma and the others. The illustration on the following page is a copy of Rev. Dwight Dodge's obituary, as printed in a local paper. I wonder who wrote it, for, frankly, I find parts of it to be confusing for several reasons:

It calls him a native of New Hampshire. It is true he lived there from toddler through teens, though he was born in Sturbridge. It says he spent the prime of early manhood in "Courtland" (sic) County NY. How can that be since he married in Sempronius, Cayuga County, before he was 20 and nearly all his children were born either there or in adjacent towns, the one exception being that Lucy was born in New Hampshire, probably because Susannah was scared or not feeling well. It says he was a minister for 40 years but we know it was longer than that because the Pearces were members of his congregation for a few years before Susannah died, in 1830.

Adding to all the confusion, Dr. Dodge's genealogy called him a Baptist minister. Did he shift sects in Missouri to fit the needs of the people there? Christians and Baptists have very similar beliefs. The Pearces, being from Rhode Island, were likely to have been Baptists. Did he have a congregation in Homer in Courtland

DODGE FAMILY

The following obituary was taken from a newspaper printed August 1869 in Caldwell County, Missouri (facsimilie, wording the same)



DIED

Dodge: At his residence in Kingston, Caldwell Co. Mo. on the 23rd day of August, 1869-- Rev. Dwight Dodge, in the 72nd year of his age.

A father in Israel has been called away.

His earthly career has ended. The trials, conflicts, sufferings of this life are over and he has entered upon that higher and better state of existence to which he had long looked forward with joyful anticipation.

The deceased was a native of New Hampshire, but he spent the prime of his early manhood in Courtland Co., New York. He emigrated to Missouri in the year 1846. He has left a numerous offspring, children and grandchildren, the principal part of which are living in the county of his decease.

Early in life he entered upon the service of God and became a member of the Christian church, and from that time, until his death, extending over a period of more than half a century he was an humble and consistent follower of the Lord Jesus Christ; and for nearly forty years, as a preacher of the Gospel, he pointed sinners to the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sins of the world. His faith was a shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day.

Long will the memory of father Dodge be cherished, not alone by the numerous relatives, but by a wide circle of friends in the state of his adoption, as well as by those who knew him in earlier life in the state from which he emigrated. He leaves a void in the family circle and in the community. But he has left the example of a Christian life; and as we think of his life and of his death, it is our greatest consolation that he is one of those of which it may be truly said: "blessed are the dead that die in the Lord."

His Christian friends will meet him again on the other side of the Jordan. He will be one of that great multitude that no man can number; that shall stand before The Throne clothed in white robes and with psalms in their hands, of whom it shall be said:

"These are they that have come up through great tribulation, and have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb."

and

"There is a land where the lost shall be gained
  Be returned to our bosoms and torn from us never
Where death has no power, and true bliss will reign
  In the hearts of the sanctified spirits forever."

County? If he did, was it in addition to one in Cayuga County? Perhaps we will never know for sure--those conundrums are more puzzling than important. The communities were adjacent and the differences in religion slight. The 1840 US census shows the family in Summerhill. Perhaps an older "child" who had lived a while near Homer worded the obituary. Silas's inlaws were from there. Since John and Silas resented their stepmother, they may have left the nest early to work there.

The obituary does show he was highly regarded. He died 23 Aug 1869, four years after establishing that congregation, and also four years after the Civil War. Lydia lived another twelve years. The 1870 census shows her residing between the families of William O. Dodge and "Samuel" (really Lemuel) and Emma (Dodge) Dunn. The youngest member of the latter family was little Mary Lydia, my grandma, who loved to hear her own grandma talk about the early days.

Lydia died 4 Aug 1881. She is buried beside Dwight in the Kingston Cemetery but, sadly, there is no marker on her grave because her remaining stepson would not allow it. I used to wonder why the others did not insist but suppose there is a good explanation. George Dodge's notes say his older cousin, Mary Clarkson Kautz, informed him that it was because "Silas and John were not too cordial toward her." Silas had actually died the year before but by then his little brother had been turned against his stepmother. I think their birth mother would have cried had she known.

Children of Rev. Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge:

Silas Dwight	(25 Aug 1818- 1 Jun 1880)	m. 5 May 1844	Mary Ann Hull
Lucy Moriah	(13 Mar 1820- 1889)	ca 1840	Martin Streeter
Levi Freeman	(15 Aug 1821-28 Aug 1822)	-	1 yr 14 days
John Freeman	(4 May 1824-20 Jul 1885)	1847	Louisa M.Walter
Lydia Susannah	(13 Jul 1830- 1 Nov 1860)	ca 1850	DeHaven

Children of Rev. Dwight and Lydia Woodman (Pearce) Dodge:

Phebe Keziah	(12 Oct 1831-29 Jun 1847)			15 yr 8 months
Obadiah Morrill	(22 May 1833-23 Mar 1899)		1857	Nancy Long
Levi James	(30 Apr 1835- 3 Feb 1844)			9 yr 3 days
Sarah C.	(30 Apr 1837- ca 1912)		18	__________
William O.	(7 Jan 1839- 6 Sep 1901)	(1)	185	?Mariah Alexand
		(2)	18	Hattie
Emma Adelia	(9 Mar 1841-31 Jan 1932)		31 Jan 1860	Lemuel Dunn, Jr

DODGE FAMILY

References:

Regarding the Pearce Family:

Little Compton Families - Benjamin Franklin Wilbour-2 Volumes publ. Little Compton Historical Society (1967)
Notes on Little Compton - Carlton C. Brownell, Ed. from notes of B. F. Wilbour, deceased. Same publisher (1970)
Pearce Genealogy - Col. Frederick C. Pierce (1888)

Regarding all Subjects:

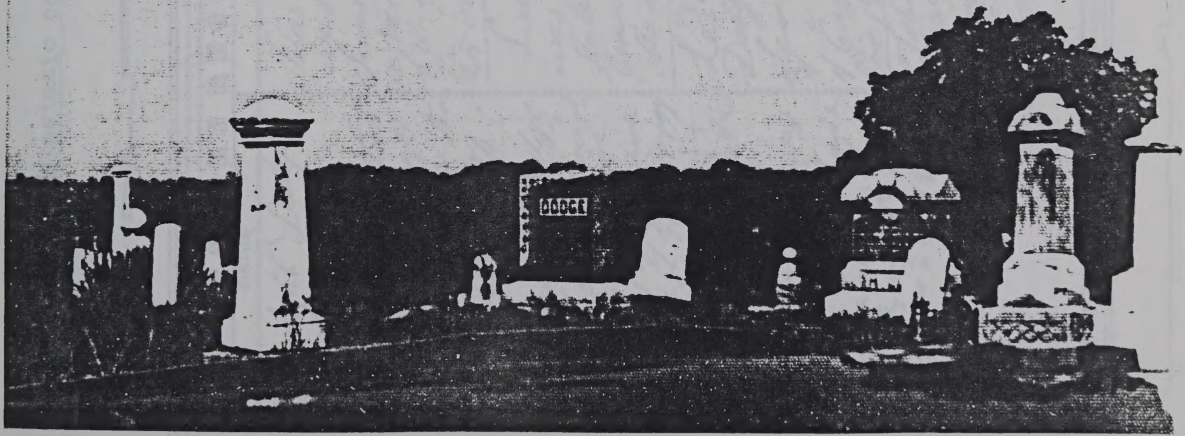
Historical Collections of the State of New York - J. W. Barber et al, Tuttle, (1841) with special reference to Cayuga, Cortland and Schoharie Counties
History of Schoharie County, New York

History of Cayuga County, New York

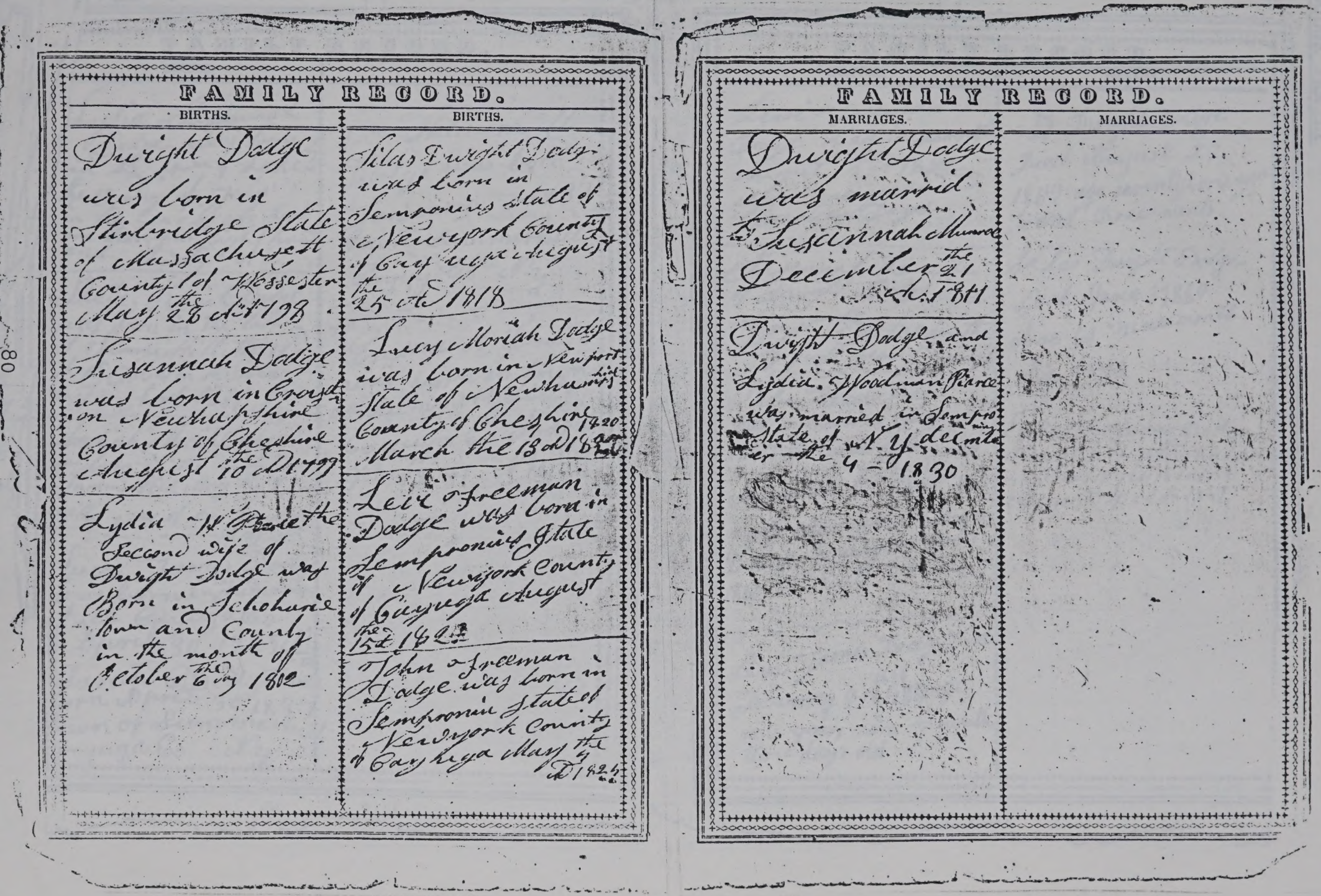
U.S. Census - various states and years as applicable
History of Caldwell & Livingston Counties, Missouri

Various Kingston and Hamilton MO Newspaper columns
Unpublished Dodge Family Records of George Dodge of Hamilton MO
Dodge Family Bible Records - Family of Rev. Dwight Dodge
Unwritten Dodge Family recollections of Lydia Woodman (Pearce) Dodge and Emma Adelia (Dodge) Dunn as related to Mary Lydia (Dunn) White and her daughter Ada (White) Yoakum and in turn related by them to Mrs. Billie Gene Pringle and Mrs. Norma Zaniewski (That means Billie and I have second and third-hand information.)

BELOW: Some graves in the cemetery at Kingston, Missouri.



Photostatic copy of pages in the Dodge Family Bible



FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.

Dwight Dodge
was born in
Stirbridge State
of Massachusett
County of Wossester
May the 26 AD 1798

Susannah Dodge
was born in Croyd
on New Hampshire
County of Cheshire
August the 10 AD 1799

Lydia W. Pierce the
second wife of
Dwight Dodge was
Born in Schoharie
town and County
in the month of
October the 6 day 1802

BIRTHS.

Silas Dwight Dodge
was born in
Semponius State of
New York County
of Cayuga August
the 25 AD 1818

Lucy Mariah Dodge
was born in Newport
State of New Hampshire
County of Cheshire 1820
March the 13 AD 1820

Levi Freeman
Dodge was born in
Sempronius State
of New York County
of Cayuga August
the 15 1822

John Freeman
Dodge was born in
Sempronius State of
New York County
of Cayuga May the 4
AD 1824

FAMILY RECORD.

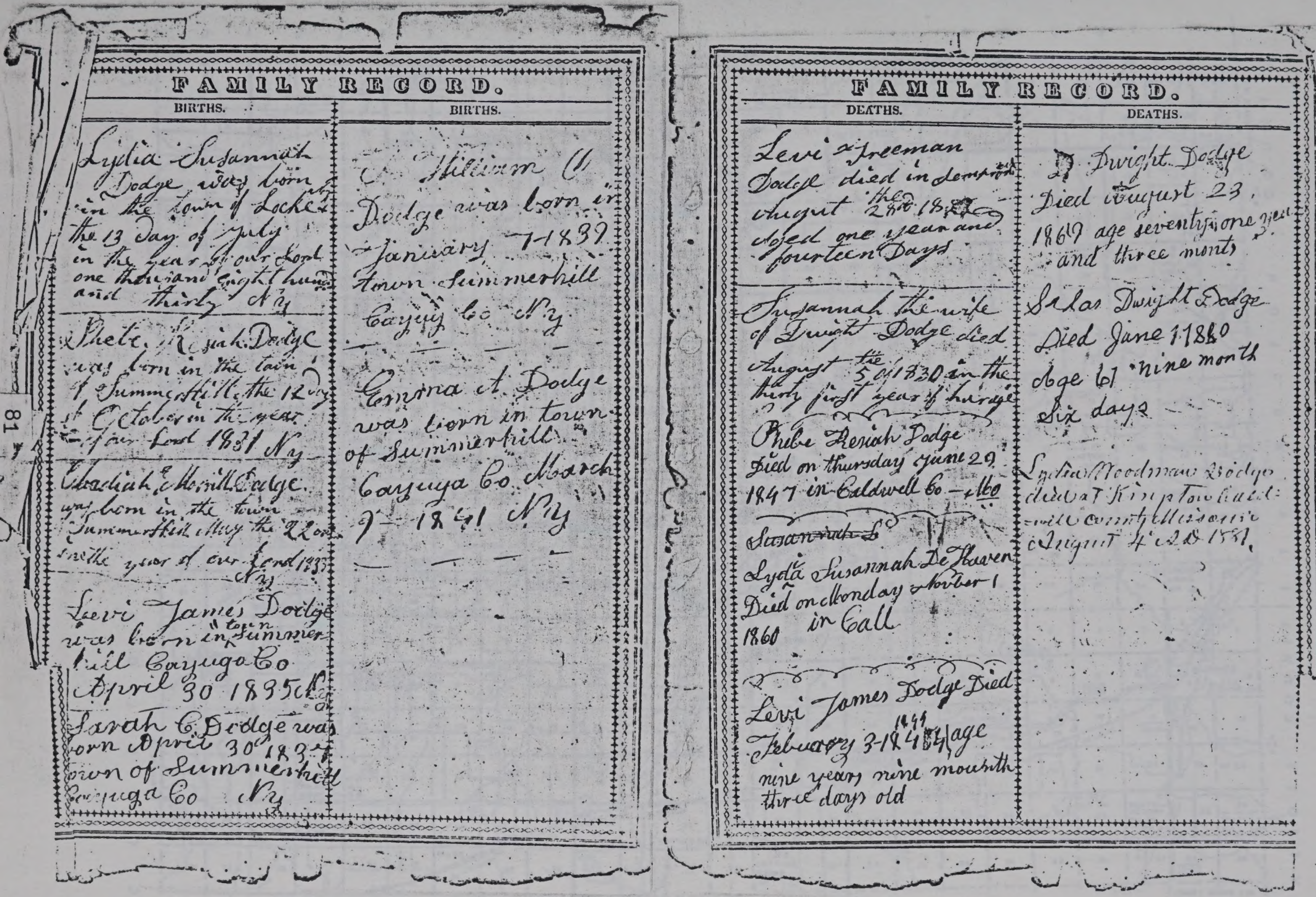
MARRIAGES.

Dwight Dodge
was married
to Susannah Munroe
December the 21
AD 1811

Dwight Dodge and
Lydia Woodman Pierce
was married in Sempronius
State of N Y december
the 4 1830

MARRIAGES.

Photostatic copy of pages in the Dodge Family Bible



FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.

Lydia Susannah
Dodge was born
in the town of Locke
the 13 day of July
in the year of our Lord
one thousand eight hund
and thirty Ny

Phebe Keziah Dodge
was born in the town
of Summerhill the 12 day
of October in the year
of our Lord 1831 Ny

Obadiah Merrill Dodge
was born in the town
Summerhill May the 22 on
in the year of our Lord 1833
Ny

Levi James Dodge
was born in town Summer-
hill Cayuga Co
April 30 1835 Ny

Sarah C. Dodge was
orn April 30th 1837
own of Summerhill
Cayuga Co Ny

BIRTHS.

William C
Dodge was born in
January 7 1839
town Summerhill
Cayuga Co Ny

Emma A. Dodge
was born in town
of Summerhill
Cayuga Co March
7 1841 Ny

FAMILY RECORD.

DEATHS.

Levi Freeman
Dodge died in Sempron
August the 28th 18[illegible]
aged one year and
fourteen Days

Susannah the wife
of Dwight Dodge died
August the 5 of 1830 in the
thirty first year of her age

Phebe Keziah Dodge
Died on thursday June 29
1847 in Caldwell Co — Mo

~~Susannah L~~
Lydia Susannah DeHaven
Died on Monday Nover 1
1860 in Call

Levi James Dodge Died
Febuary 3-1844 age
nine years nine mounth
three days old

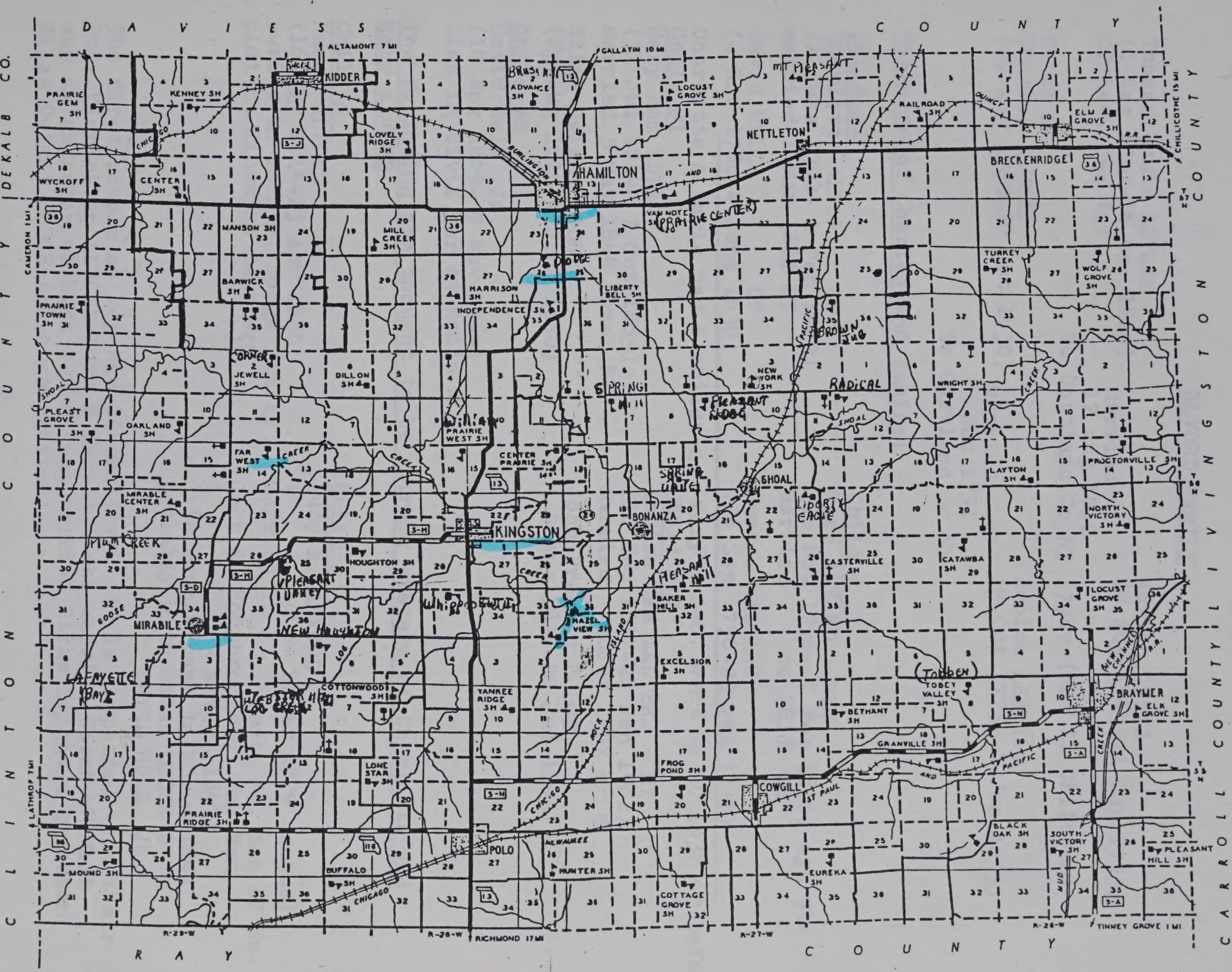
DEATHS.

D Dwight Dodge
Died August 23
1869 age seventy one year
and three monts

Silas Dwight Dodge
Died June 1 1880
Age 61 nine month
Six days

Lydia Woodman Dodge
died at Kingston Cald-
-well county Missouri
August 4 20 1881.

MAP OF CALDWELL COUNTY, MISSOURI


DAVIESS COUNTY
DEKALB CO.
CLINTON COUNTY
RAY COUNTY
LIVINGSTON COUNTY
CARROLL COUNTY
ALTAMONT 7 MI
GALLATIN 10 MI
CAMERON 1 MI
CHILLICOTHE 15 MI
LATHROP 7 MI
RICHMOND 17 MI
TINNEY GROVE 1 MI
R-29-W
R-28-W
R-27-W
R-26-W
KIDDER
HAMILTON
NETTLETON
BRECKENRIDGE
KINGSTON
MIRABILE
POLO
COWGILL
BRAYMER
BONANZA
SHOAL
PRAIRIE GEM SH
KENNEY SH
LOVELY RIDGE SH
ADVANCE SH
LOCUST GROVE SH
MT PLEASANT
RAILROAD SH
ELM GROVE SH
WYCKOFF SH
CENTER SH
MANSON SH
MILL CREEK SH
VAN NOTE SH
PRAIRIE CENTER
DODGE
BARWICK SH
HARRISON SH
INDEPENDENCE SH
LIBERTY BELL SH
TURKEY CREEK SH
WOLF GROVE SH
PRAIRIE TOWN SH
CORNER
JEWELL SH
DILLON SH
SPRING HILL
NEW YORK SH
PLEASANT RIDGE
RADICAL
BROWN JUG
WRIGHT SH
PLEAST GROVE SH
OAKLAND SH
FAR WEST SH
PRAIRIE WEST SH
CENTER PRAIRIE SH
SPRING VALLEY
LAYTON SH
PROCTORVILLE SH
MIRABLE CENTER SH
PLUM CREEK
LIBERTY EAGLE
NORTH VICTORY SH
HOUGHTON SH
PLEASANT VALLEY
WHIPPOORWILL
PLEASANT HILL
EASTERVILLE SH
CATAWBA SH
LOCUST GROVE SH
NEW HOUGHTON
BAKER HILL SH
HAZEL VIEW SH
LAFAYETTE
EXCELSIOR SH
TOBBEN
TOBEY VALLEY SH
BETHANY SH
ELK GROVE SH
COTTONWOOD SH
WEBSTER
LOG CREEK
YANKEE RIDGE SH
LONE STAR SH
GRANVILLE SH
FROG POND SH
PRAIRIE RIDGE SH
MOUND SH
BUFFALO SH
MILWAUKEE
HUNTER SH
COTTAGE GROVE SH
EUREKA SH
BLACK OAK SH
SOUTH VICTORY SH
PLEASANT HILL SH
SHOAL CREEK
GOOSE CREEK
LOG CREEK
ROCK ISLAND
BURLINGTON
CHICAGO
QUINCY
R.R.
PACIFIC
ST PAUL
AND
MUD CREEK
NEW CHANNEL
36
13
116
S-J
S-H
S-D
S-N
S-A

ALVORD FAMILY

Thomas Gould ALVORD
(1 Mar 1742-18 May 1810)
CT Rev. War Vet.

married
17 Aug 1762
To Cortland Co NY 1794?

Keziah ORVIS
(4 Aug 1743-21 Sep 1795)
(Had 11 Children)

Child #4
Charles ALVORD
(27 Aug 1769-30 Oct 1830)

married
Dec 1791
To Cortland Co NY

Eunice LEAMING
(4 Oct 1775- 7 Jan 1835)

Children of Charles and Eunice:

Child #1
Charlotte ALVORD CT
(1 June 1792- 1 Feb 1882)
married 1 Mar 1812 NY

David HULL CT
(2 Mar 1780-4 June 1830)

Charlotte & David had 8 children.

Child #
Mary ALVORD NY?
(26 Nov 1796- 7 Feb 1896) age 99+
married ca 1815 NY

George WALTERS
(28 Sep 1796-25 Feb 1856)

Mary & Geo. went to MO 1837 or before

Child #1
Mary Ann HULL
(31 Jul 1814- 7 Oct 1885)
married 5 May 1844 Homer NY

Silas Dwight DODGE
(25 Aug 1818-1 June 1880)

Child #1?
Louisa Mae WALTERS NY
(10 Sep 1817-28 Jan 1902)
married about 1847 or 8

John Freeman DODGE
(4 May 1824-20 Jul 1885)

Child #8
David Hull, Jr.
(14 Nov 1829- 7 Nov 1864)
Died in Civil War at Rolla MO

The following are thought to be younger sisters of Charlotte and Mary ALVORD

Child #
Naomi ALVORD
(16 May 1814-23 Apr 1850)
Buried in John F. Dodge Family
plot in Kingston Cemetery

Child #
Lucy K. ALVORD
(1808- after 1870 census)
married in NY
(born NJ, Son of Wm. a
John S. Houghton(Rev. War Vet
(- after 1847)
This couple came to MO in 1844,
probably with Silas DODGE &
DAVID HULL, JR.

The first couple at top had 11 children. It is suspected that their 7th, Dioclesian ALVORD born 8 Feb 1776 who married Sarah WHEELER was an ancestor of Nora TURNER who married Silas Dwight's grandson Silas Dwight DODGE (10th generation).

DODGE FAMILY

The following is a verbatim copy of page 43 of George Dodge's Genealogy:

REVOLUTIONARY WAR DATA PERTAINING TO D.A.R. FURNISHED BY MRS. MARY CLARKSON KAUTZ.

Thos. Gould Alvord, sargent, enlisted Mar 1, 1777 - Capt. Judd's Company for the war - exchanged for Gabriel Leverich April 23, 1781.

3rd regiment Conn. Line, Colonel Samuel Wylies
Connecticutt Man in Revolution

Thos. Gould Alvord served in French and Indian war, when he was on the frontier from Oswego to Detroit, and in company with his eldest son, Thos. Gould Alvord, Jr. He was in Colonel Lamb's regiment in the Revolutionary war, both serving as cannoniers, and both present at Cornwallis's surrender.

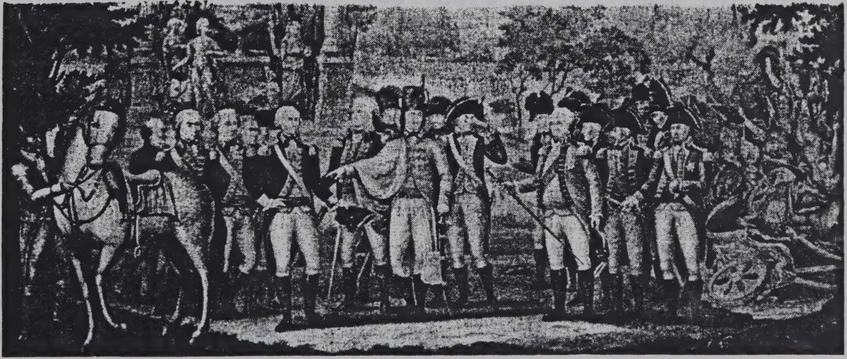
Thos. Gould Alvord was at the battle of White Plain and was wounded by a musket ball, which entered his arm, and passing out near the elbow, was picked up by a companion Luke Wardsworth, who placed the ball in his own gun and sent it back to the enemy.

Some of the descendants also mention that at the Battle of Yorktown he loaded and fired a cannon four times a minute for four hours, and that when the balls gave out they used old bolts, pieces of log chains, etc.

Thomas Gould Alvord served during the entire war, for which he drew lot No. 13, which was 600 acres in Homer, New York, to which he moved in 1794.

- - - - - - - - - - -

Doesn't that make you proud to be an American? You can be sure George was proud, for he was descended from that brave man.



Artist's conception of surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown

DODGE FAMILY

Silas Dwight Dodge[8] oldest child of Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge, was born 25 August 1818 in Sempronius, Cayuga County, NY probably prematurely, the first year his parents were married. His mother died when he was twelve years old and he was so devastated there was no way anyone else could ever take her place, though his stepmother tried the best she knew how. Little brother John, six years old, looked up to his big brother and copied him. The fact that they grew up to marry cousins with roots in Homer, New York, probably strengthened the solidarity between them.

On 5 May 1844 near Homer, Cortland County, New York, Silas married Mary Ann Hull, born 31 July 1814. The next month, June 1844, they joined a family group going to settle in Far West, Missouri, taking her 15-year old brother, David, Jr., along with them. Mary Ann's parents were Charlotte (Alvord) and David Hull, Sr., though her father had died in 1830 when she was only 16. David had owned two farms in Homer, New York, probably a part of Thomas Gould Alvord's grant, but the widow & five other children stayed in New York to farm them. Later on some of them did migrate, but not as far as Missouri.

When the Mormons were forced to leave Far West, Missouri, in 1843, Mary (Alvord) Walter and her husband, George, who had gone there in 1837 or before, probably wrote the family that now would be an excellent time to come join them. So a group went. We don't know whom all of them were, but besides Mary Ann, Silas, and David, her young aunt her own age Naomi Alvord, and an older aunt Lucy (Alvord) Houghton and husband John Houghton were in the group. George Dodge was told that his grandparents, Silas and Mary Ann, left New York State in June, 1844, and came west "via the Ohio River by ox team then on the Mississippi and Missouri and Lexington." Being young and just starting out, when they arrived "they had barely enough money left to post a letter to their parents back East."

George Dodge included some intriguing short Hull, Alvord, Orvis and other genealogies in his book. It is hard not to get carried away telling some of them, but there is not room for that here, except for the parts I have already included for clarity's sake. He did make the interesting observation that a certain Isaac Hull was witness in 1670 to the will of Richard Dodge I. He wondered whether that were a coincidence, or some far-back relative he had not been able to trace, since he had not been able to find his own Hull line back much before the Revolution. He was under the impression that some early Hulls came from Somerset, as did the Dodges.

In the spring of 1847 the young couple moved to just south of where Hamilton, Missouri, now stands and there they made their farm home where they reared their family of one boy and three girls. Probably young David Hull stayed with them a while.

In 1849 when gold was discovered in California, Silas and John became "Forty-Niners" and went overland to California. Several sources say they did succeed in making some money, though no details have come down about how they accomplished that. Dr. J.T. Dodge says they returned to "Far West," and George says the return trip was by "ship via the Cape of Good Hope," and that they got off a boat at Lexington. It is good there were other older family members in Missouri by then, to look after their families, for by then Silas had three young children and John two.

On the farm that he owned and operated, and which later passed into the hands of the son, Dwight David, he allowed the community to locate a school house, and in another location a small cemetery. "This same farm was reputed to have a large amount of gold buried thereon during the Civil War and, although many have attempted to locate this gold, nothing has ever been found, to the knowledge of the writer (George)" He was told by his older half-brother, who was also named Silas Dwight, John Freeman Dodge was afraid to keep his money during the Civil War because of bushwhackers being bad in his area, so it was entrusted to Silas to keep for him. It was hidden under the stairway of Silas's log house. It was gold, and the older brother said there was $30,000.00. (Quite a sum for those days before inflation.)

He said the following is an exact copy of a record they received from their Aunt Susannah McCollum[9]:

"Hamilton, Mo., was laid out by a Mr. Hamilton and Mr. A. G. Davis and one other man. Mr. Silas D. Dodge cut the walnut tree on his place in the summer of 1856. He and Mr. David Hull rived out the shingles and Mr. Dodge hauled the shingles with an ox team for a hotel built by a Mr. William Pardon and a Mr. Cheek and one other man.

"This was the first house built in Hamilton. The carpenters boarded at Mr. Dodge's and walked it every morning and evening. They stepped it, and said it was three miles and seven steps from Mr. Dodge's place to the building site."

Writer has not searched to see if David Hull ever got married and had a family or not. It was reported that later he was injured in the raising of Chauncey Moore's barn. He did become a soldier in the Civil War and while still in the service he died 7 Nov. 1864 in a hospital in Rolla, Missouri.

Silas Dwight Dodge died 1 June 1880 at his farm in Hamilton and Mary Ann died there 7 October October 1885. Both of them are buried in Kingston Cemetery.

Children of Silas Dwight and Mary Ann (Hull) Dodge:

Susanna K.	(30 Aug 1845-14 Jan 1927)	M 19 Nov 1863	Franklin McCollum
* Dwight David	(25 Dec 1846-23 Jan 1916)	27 Jan 1874 12 Jan 1904	Lucy Cox Laura Scott
Eunice C.	(29 Oct 1848- 7 Jul 1919)	22 Oct 1868	Fred. C. Gibson
Frances Nevada	(12 Sep 1853-21 Oct 1920)	2 Feb 1874 7 Jun 1911	Nathaniel Clarkson Jackson Edminster

A few notes first about the spouses and children of the daughters are given first, then followed by a longer discussion of the son, Dwight David, and his son George who wrote the book.

Franklin McCollum (1840-1911) lived on a farm southwest of Hamilton. He was a member of the voluntary infantry. They had two daughters, Florence who married Ernest E. Henry and Charlotte who married Leslie V. McCauley,

Frederick C. Gibson (1845-1927) was said to have been a Welshman. After Eunice died he spent his winters in San Antonio. They had five children, John Dwight, George F., Sylvia, Edwin, and Harry E. Gibson.

Nathaniel C. Clarkson (1849-1906) was a Hamilton postmaster. They had three children, Charles, Mary, and Egbert. (Frances is called "Fannie" in Latter Day Saint marriage records.) She and her last husband, Jackson Edminster had no children. She died in Excelsior Springs but is buried in Kingston Cemetery.

*Dwight David Dodge[9] was born at Far West Missouri 26 Dec 1846 in the area that became Mirable TWP, to Silas Dwight and Mary Ann (Hull) Dodge. When he was an infant six weeks old his parents moved to the farm he grew up in and later inherited a little south of where Hamilton was later built.

When the Civil War broke out he was under 15 years old. Because of his youth he never became an actual soldier, but he became a member of the home militia and was actually involved in a skirmish against the rebels at Lexington under Captain Jacob Snider. He was brave but green--his Captain had to tell him to get behind a tree rather than stand boldly out in the open and get shot at.

On 27 Jan 1874 he married a devout Methodist girl named Lucy Frances Cox born 22 Oct 1854. They had four children and she died 19 May 1887 when the youngest was seven years old. His second wife, whom he married 12 Jan 1904, was Laura Scott born 15 Feb 1867 near Lancaster, Ohio, daughter of Mrms. Stephen Scott. Mr. Scott was a

carpenter-contractor and a Civil War veteran. Though Laura was very active in the Methodist Episcopal church, Dwight David was baptized into the Reorganized Church of Latter Day Saints on 20 Aug 1906 by an Elder Pickering and a liberal contributor to the erection of Oakdale Church, to which his two daughters of his first marriage belonged.

Dwight David was a successful farmer. When he was 69 years old he disposed of most of his stock, rented out his farm, and bought a house in Hamilton but died 23 Jan 1916 before he could move there. The four living children shared equally in his will. His widow, Laura (Scott) Dodge died 29 Jan 1930 and is buried in the Scott lots in the Hamilton Cemetery.

Children of Dwight David^9 and Lucy (Cox) Dodge:

Silas Dwight (17 Dec 1874-3 Feb 1954) m (see photo)	24 Nov 1897 4 children	Nora Maud Turner (1874-1942)
Nellie Lula (17 May 1876-13 Jul 1955) they were active LDS church	 4 children	Ollie Clark Dunlop
Fannie May (11 Jun 1880-22 Jun 1963) he died suddenly of appencicitis	 3 children	Coleman Snyder elder-LDS church

Children of Dwight David^9 and Laura (Scott) Dodge:

**George Dwight (03 Apr 1905-) m 25 Oct 1836 Lois Margrete Schiller

This George Dodge is the man who let us copy his book, without which this writer could not have written so much of the material in this book.

COOK PHOTO

LEFT--Silas Dwight Dodge^{10}

ABOVE--Lois (Schiller) Dodge, pretty wife of George Dwight Dodge^{10}

DODGE FAMILY

George Dwight Dodge^{10} was born 3 April 1905 on a farm a little south of Hamilton to Dwight David and Laura (Scott) Dodge. When he was 11 years old his father, age 69, had bought a house in town and was getting ready to move into it when he died. At that time George's older half-brother and sisters were all married with children of their own, some of them older than their little brother. The widow Laura Dodge moved into town and George finished school there. His mother died when he was 24 and he stayed with his aunt Emma A Scott and worked for a while, until he met with some kind of accident.

George's broken ankle refused to heal. That led into a romantic love story. He was hospitalized for a very long time. On 25 October 1936, in Room 520 of the Research Hospital in Kansas City, MO, he was wedded to pretty Lois Margarete Schiller, born 8 May 1912 near St. Joseph, MO. The ceremony was performed by a minister, Rev. Todd of Trenton. Between hospitalizations they lived at the Schiller farm at Trenton. Though he did not say so he probably gradually got around on crutches but must have had some bone infection such as osteomyelitis which gradually improved but required too much medication or trips to the doctor to allow him to hold down a job.

By 1938 his condition had improved enough that they took an extended auto tour through the midwest and most of the Atlantic seaboard states. On May 7th at New York City they embarked on an ocean liner going on a cruise to Plymouth, England. (Without knowing it, they were probably only a dozen or so miles from where Richard Dodge I was born!) They then visited England, Scotland, Holland, Germany, Belgium, France, Egypt, India, Ceylon and various Pacific Islands, Hongkong, and then Japan before returning to San Francisco.

They spent the winter of 1938-9 at the Mayo Clinic at Rochester, Minnesota, where his leg finally healed, then purchased a farm at auction in White Cloud. During that summer they took a vacation at Mexico City with friends. He worked at various jobs, including public service and a stint as a constable, and most likely Lois worked as well.

In 1947 they sold their farm, eventually moving back to Hamilton where he worked for various firms, including a very long stint with J. C. Penney Company. He was very active in the Masonic Lodge. Besides being a librarian at Hamilton, Lois served on all kinds of local committees. They were very active socially.
They had two daughters,

Frederica Schiller Dodge born 7 Nov 1940
Sarah Margaret Dodge born 15 Nov. 1944

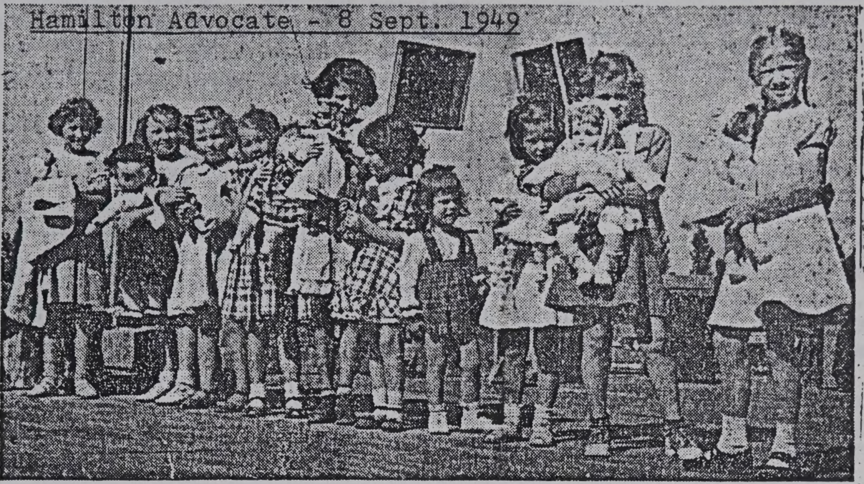
And, of course, he kept up the book.

NOW WE RETURN TO GENERATION 8 AND THE REST OF REV. DWIGHT DODGE'S CHILDREN--

DODGE FAMILY

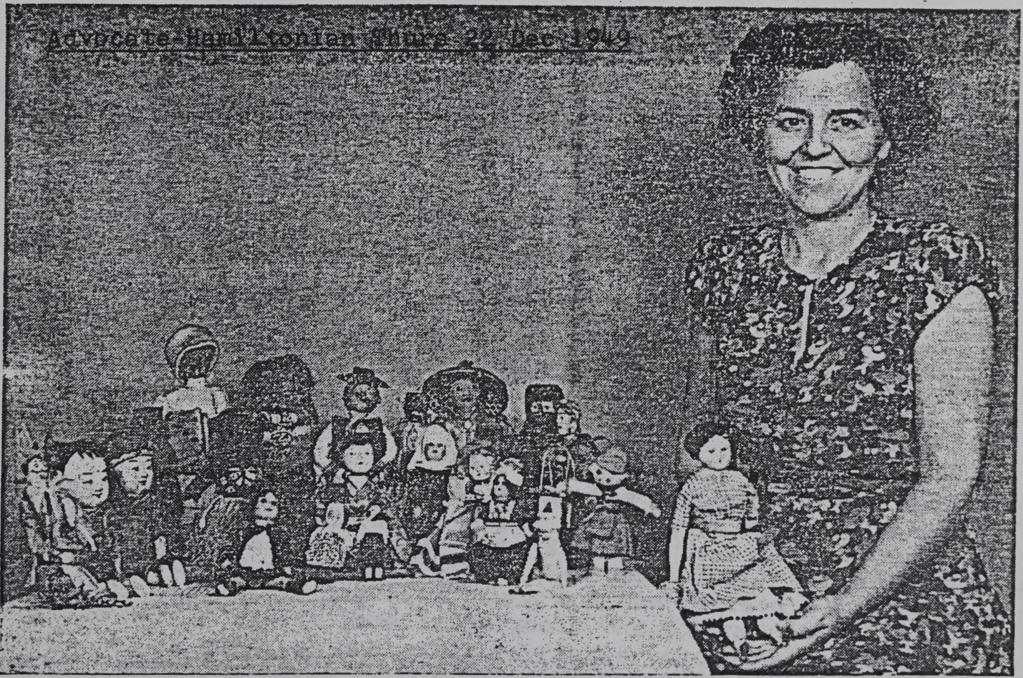
Top--George Dodge's two little daughters are 5th & 6th from left

Bottom--His wife, Lois, and the dolls she collected on that
world cruise.



Hamilton Advocate - 8 Sept. 1949

GIRLS EXHIBIT THEIR DOLLS in the show last Thursday afternoon at the Legion Race Meet. Left to right are Loraine Barnes, Susie Tuggle, Doris Jean McCubbin, Alberta Van Camp, Frederica Dodge, Sarah Dodge, Susie Christmann, Sharolyn Kay Ochs, Carol Gillilan and Sandra Wilhoit.—ADVOCATE PHOTO



Advocate-Hamiltonian Thurs 22 Dec 1949

HAMILTON WOMAN COLLECTS DOLLS ON WORLD TOUR—Mrs. George Dodge of south Hughes street has a most interesting collection of dolls which she bought while making a world tour with Mr. Dodge in 1938, two years after their marriage. The tour was postponed because of the severely fractured ankle suffered by Mr. Dodge, which required a long period of hospitalization. Mrms. Dodge and daughters, Frederica, 9, and Sarah, 5, came here from Barnard, Nodaway county in 1947, after selling their farm where they had lived for a number of years.

There are 21 dolls in the collection and all are dressed in the authentic costumes of the countries they represent. The first doll on the left, pictured above, is a Mexican and furnished by Mrs. Dodge's aunt, who was a missionary in Mexico for 50 years. The others in order include two Chinese, Ceylon tea picker, another Mexican doll from Hawaii, Scottish, Indian Canadian, Russian, Japanese, Hungarian, English (the latter from England where Mrs. Dodge's brother lived for some time), Belgium, France, Holland, Phillippine, Egyptian, Javanese and German dolls. The large doll Mrs. Dodge is holding belonged to Mr. Dodge's mother, the late Mrs. Laura Dodge.—PHOTO BY STRADE

DODGE FAMILY

Lucy Moriah Dodge^{8} the second child of Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge was born 13 March 1820 In Newport, Cheshire (now Sullivan) County, New Hampshire. Page 169 of the 1820 census does show this little family there. Writer conjectures that they went back to New Hampshire at least partly because she wanted to be near her parents when the baby came. All must have gone fairly well, for next summer they were back in Sempronius.

The amount known about this daughter is rather sketchy. The census helps a little, also LDS marriage records. From the records we can conjecture that Lucy married about 1839 or 1840 in New York State, Martin Streeter born about 1817 in New York. They evidently moved to Missouri later than her parents, about 1850. Their first five children were born in New York and the last three in Missouri. In 1870 they were living near her brother, John Freeman Dodge, in Mirable area. Several years later his brother, Horace and his family also came west and lived near her brother Silas near Hamilton.

Martin Streeter became an Army Captain during the Civil War, and it is said that because she still had small children his being gone worked a hardship on the family, and that her two brothers tried to help her.

Lucy died about 1889 in Breckenridge but is buried in Kingston Cemetery. The notes do not say when he died. Maybe I can find his grave someday to find out.

Sorry I do not have more information on the children.

Children of Captain Martin and Lucy Moriah (Dodge) Streeter:

Ella W.	born ca 1841	m. 28 Dec 1859	James Woosley
Evaline S.	1842	15 Nov 1865 ? after1870	William Northrup ( ) Cranby?
Hattie	1847		
Martin, Jr.	1849	13 Apr 1871	Emma Vanwinkle
Horace	1851		
Plumas	1857		
Dwight F.	1859	07 Mar 1883	Alicia A. Coit
Eugene	1864		

Ella and Mr. Woosley were married in Davies County. George said they had several children and spelled it Worsley. Evaline and William Northrup had one little son, William, Jr. William soon died. In 1870 she and little Willie, 4, were living with her parents. George said the little boy died young and she married a Mr. Cranby?? He called Martin's wife Emma Vanderpool. He did not list Dwight's wife. I could not find any other marriages, except a Horace J. Streeter married a Maria F. Cox but that seems to have been an older man.

DODGE FAMILY

Levi Freeman Dodge[8] third child of Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge was born 15 August 1821 in Sempronius, Cayuga County, NY. The Bible record says he died 18 August 1822 in Sempronius, "age one year and three days."

John Freeman Dodge[8] fourth child of Rev. Dwight and Susanna (Monroe) Dodge was born 4 May 1824 in Sempronius New York. On the following page is a photostatic copy of a page from the Caldwell County History. It says that in 1829 the family moved to Cortland County and remained there until 1846 when they all came west. That does not agree with the US census reports, nor with the Dodge Family Bible which shows that all seven of the remaining children were born in Cayuga County.

John did come west in 1846 with his father's family. Others may have accompanied them, but if so I do not have their names. They settled in Blythe township. In a year or two (1847 Or 1848) John married Louisa Mae Walters, born 10 Sep 1818 in Homer, New York to George and Mary (Alvord) Walter. Previous pages have explained her Eastern background. At the time of their marriage John was 23 or 24 and Louisa Mae was about 30.

The Walters family was in Far West, Caldwell County, Missouri by 1837 when they paid taxes there, if not earlier. George did not mention any Mormon background nor did the County history, but Dr. J. T. Dodge's book says that John settled in Far West and married the daughter of a Mormon neighbor after the others had gone to Nauvoo. I don't know about the Walters, but some of the Hulls did live in Palmyra, New York, the old stomping grounds of the Mormon Prophet, Joseph Smith. (The only note of George that even approached the subject says his father, in old age in 1906, Dwight David, his father and John's nephew, became a Latter Day Saint.) This writer is in no position to question any of this or attempt to reconcile it, but feels such matters should at least be reported for the record.

The following are said to be interred in John Dodge's family plot in the Kingston Cemetery: Louise's parents, George Walters (28 Sep 1796-25 Feb 1856) and Mary (Alvord) Walter (26 Nov 1796-7 Feb 1896)--99 years, 2 mos., 11 days! who had lived with John and his family, and Naomi Alvord who died 23 April 1850 age 35 years, 11 mo, 7 days thought to be Mary's much younger sister.

As reported before, John Freeman Dodge was a "49er" who went overland to California during the Gold Rush with his brother. They were said to have been successful, but nobody has said how they accomplished that. John was a successful and prosperous man, as shown in the illustration below. He credited his excellent education in New York for at least part of his success. The part of Far West he settled in became Mirable.

His mother-in-law lived with him, and her sister Lucy (Alvord) and George Houghton next door. Next door to them lived his

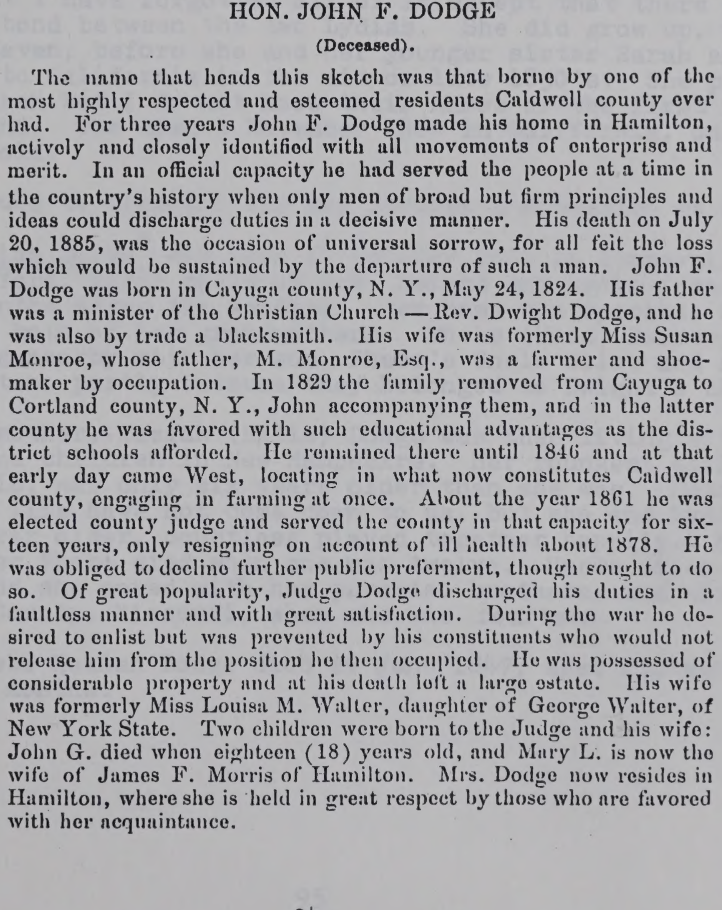
sister Lucy (Dodge) and Martin Streeter. Either his particular area or an ostentatious home may have attracted "bushwhackers" during Civil War, or he feared so, for he entrusted his brother Silas with $30,000.00 in gold which was buried under the stairs of Silas's log home until the danger was over.

John died 20 July 1885 age 61 and Louisa 28 Jan 1902. Both are buried in the Kingston Cemetery.

Children of John Freeman and Louisa Mae (Walters) Dodge:

John (11 Nov 1849-1 Dec 1863) died age 18
Mary (-   ) m. 12 Jan 1880 Frank Morris. They
  had two children, Eugene Morris m. Elsie Rinkler
  Louise Morris m.   Kennedy

From Calwell County History, pp 372-3:



HON. JOHN F. DODGE

(Deceased).

The name that heads this sketch was that borne by one of the most highly respected and esteemed residents Caldwell county ever had. For three years John F. Dodge made his home in Hamilton, actively and closely identified with all movements of enterprise and merit. In an official capacity he had served the people at a time in the country's history when only men of broad but firm principles and ideas could discharge duties in a decisive manner. His death on July 20, 1885, was the occasion of universal sorrow, for all felt the loss which would be sustained by the departure of such a man. John F. Dodge was born in Cayuga county, N. Y., May 24, 1824. His father was a minister of the Christian Church — Rev. Dwight Dodge, and he was also by trade a blacksmith. His wife was formerly Miss Susan Monroe, whose father, M. Monroe, Esq., was a farmer and shoemaker by occupation. In 1829 the family removed from Cayuga to Cortland county, N. Y., John accompanying them, and in the latter county he was favored with such educational advantages as the district schools afforded. He remained there until 1846 and at that early day came West, locating in what now constitutes Caldwell county, engaging in farming at once. About the year 1861 he was elected county judge and served the county in that capacity for sixteen years, only resigning on account of ill health about 1878. He was obliged to decline further public preferment, though sought to do so. Of great popularity, Judge Dodge discharged his duties in a faultless manner and with great satisfaction. During the war he desired to enlist but was prevented by his constituents who would not release him from the position he then occupied. He was possessed of considerable property and at his death left a large estate. His wife was formerly Miss Louisa M. Walter, daughter of George Walter, of New York State. Two children were born to the Judge and his wife: John G. died when eighteen (18) years old, and Mary L. is now the wife of James F. Morris of Hamilton. Mrs. Dodge now resides in Hamilton, where she is held in great respect by those who are favored with her acquaintance.

Lydia Susannah Dodge[8] was born 13 July 1830 at Locke, Cayuga Co., New York to Reverend Dwight and Susanna (Monroe) Dodge, and her 31-year old mother died three weeks and two days later.

The little newborn and the unfortunate suffering mother were tenderly nursed by a concerned and loving friend who tried the best she could to comfort the mother and take excellent care of the newborn. She grieved when her friend passed away, but before that happened Susannah named the baby Lydia in gratitude and affection. The rest insisted on the middle name of Susannah.

So soon after that it seems odd by modern standards, Dwight asked Lydia to marry him and she accepted. She was already extremely fond of the whole family and she loved the little baby and raised her as her own. They were married only four months after Susannah died. The whole family did mourn the loss, but they needed Lydia.

Writer regrets to say that Grandma did report more about this child, but I have forgotten all of it except that there was always a strong bond between the two Lydias. She did grow up, marry a Mr. DeHaven, before she and her younger sister Sarah and family migrated to California in the mid or late 1850's. She probably had children but I do not know their names or the first name of her husband. She died 1 November 1860 in California, only 30 years old.

Writer would be grateful for any further information at all.

Phebe Keziah Dodge[8] was born 12 October 1831 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York, first child of Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge, eleven months after the wedding. Her name was special, for she was named for both of her grandmothers. Phebe (Wood) Pearce, a widow, was living nearby with her son, Phebe's Uncle Giles and saw the family often, partly because they belonged to Dwight's church.

Dwight's mother, Keziah (Ellis) Dodge was then living with her husband and children in New Hampshire. Her youngest child, Phebe's Uncle Ellis, was only six years older than she was. Details of her young life have not come down to us, but she and Lydia, only about a year older, doubtless played together happily. Her Grandmother Phebe died when she was twelve. Uncle Giles moved to Ohio and she moved with her parents, brothers, and sisters to Caldwell County, Missouri, when she was fourteen.

Little Phebe Keziah Dodge died 29 June 1847, aged fifteen years and eight months.

Obadiah Morrill Dodge[8] was born 22 May 1833 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. He was 13 years old when he migrated with his parents to Missouri. In 1857 he married Nancy Long, born in 1840, and they had nine children. The amount writer knows is woefully sparse. Some from the family bible, three marriage records of his children, the census, and George's notes.

Writer would greatly appreciate any additions or corrections, for I am not at all satisfied with what I have but will print this, lacking better information. The 1870 census calls him a farmer. Another source says that same year he was hauling freight between Kingston and Hamilton. Obadiah died 23 March 1899, and Nancy died in 1910. Their graves are just north of his father's.

Children of Obadiah and Nancy (Long) Dodge:

Mary "Mollie"	bca 1858	m. 18 Apr 1878	Matthew Cannon.	4 sons.
Florence "Flossie"	1861	10 Mar 1883	(1) Jesse V. Allee	
		18	(2) Marsh	
Robert	(7/3/63-12/7/29)	18	Nora McFall	
Alice	1865	18	Glaziner? White?	
Gertrude		18	C.W. Dolly	1 son lived
Frances "Fannie"	1868	1 Jan 1884	David West	3 children
Emma	1870	18	?Vert Rogers	1 child, lived KCKS
Nannie)		18	? Dr. White	
Nettie)	(1/8/76-9/27/37)	16 Jan 1901	Sam McMasters--1 son Sammie d.y. & they left farm, ran groc.store	

It appears that the census calls the 7th Emma but George says Effie. Gertrude, Nannie and Nettie are not on the 1870 census. Twins were born later. Would not be surprised if some of this is wrong.

Levi James Dodge[8] was born 30 April 1835 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. He was named for both of his grandfathers. James Pearce was long since deceased, having died in 1820. Maybe his other grandpa, Levi Dodge, was then ill for he died the following December, in New Hampshire. This was Dwight's second attempt to name a child for his father.

When Little Levi was "nine years, nine months, and three days old" (Bible records) on a February day he slipped, skidded on the ice, and fell backwards, fracturing his skull. He became comatose and fell asleep; and he never regained consciousness.

The family felt that if only they had forced him to walk around to stay alert and awake he would have lived, so for the next hundred years the Dodges, and later descendants Dunns and even Whites, never let anyone who became ill pass out, but marched the ill person around to keep him/her alive. The date of Levi's death was 3 February 1844 in Summerhill, New York.

DODGE FAMILY

Sarah C. Dodge[8] was born 30 April 1837 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. Writer cannot find anything in print about her, other than what the Dodge family Bible says. However, My mother, Ada (White) Yoakum, recalls being told that Sarah was married in her teens, about 1854 or 5, though she cannot remember the husband's name. Children came quickly and she soon had her hands full. There were probably at least four.

There is an old family story to the effect that when the oldest was tiny Sarah needed my great grandmother Emma, four years younger, to help watch the baby and keep away the flies while she did some other necessary chore. Flies were especially bad that summer. They bit and were filthy pests. Back before the Civil War people did not have adequate ways to control insects as we can now. Some netting may have existed, but mostly they could just fly in through the windows.

All food had to be kept covered to keep insects away. The only way to keep food cool was to put it down a cistern or spring in a bucket tied to a rope. Usually the bucket was wooden. They sometimes made preserves or pickles, or dried fruit or certain meats in the sun or over a fire. (Nowadays we use the fancy word dehydration.) They also had root cellars. Canning food was not yet in vogue and was not safe--that came later.

Getting back to the subject, Emma was a careless teenager about fourteen years or younger. She did not do a very good job of keeping the flies away but Sarah paid her 10¢. Back then 10¢ was worth what several dollars would be nowadays. Emma put the dime in her mouth and accidentally swallowed it. Divine retribution?

Sarah, her husband, and four young children migrated to California with Lydia Susannah (Dodge) DeHaven and her family in the late 1850's. Crossing the desert a grain of sand blew into the baby's eye (another, younger baby than the one mentioned before, who was now a little child.) The baby cried piteously, and they attempted frantically to dislodge the offending object from his little eye, which became infected. The baby lost that eye.

Sarah did correspond with the folks in Missouri. The years slid by to approximately 1911 or 1912 or so, when Emma was an elderly widow, about 70 years old, living alone in a tiny house on the west side of Kingston. One day there was a lot of talking about a hanging that was going to take place in Mirable--people still liked to attend those grizzly events back then. All that talk made her so jittery that she asked her grandson, Mamma's older brother Benjamin White, who was probably about twelve at the time, to stay overnight with her. As luck would have it, they did have plenty of excitement, and it is good Uncle Ben was with her. A fire broke out nearby, with a big conflagration. During all the ruckus, word came to Emma that her sister Sarah had died.

William C. Dodge[8] was born 7 January 1839 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. He was the childhood playmate of my great grandmother, Emma Adelia Dodge, two years younger, and she became a bit of a tomboy trying to keep up with him. She was not always successful, as another of those family stories illustrates.

Billy and Emma, when they were little, were always getting into mischief, and to show how brave they were, and how skillful, kept pulling pranks and daring each other to do "dangerous" stunts. Because of their personalities, older members of the family tried to keep a lid on their activity. Especially off limits was a creek with trees to climb and tempting grapevines. They were told never, never to go there without adult supervision and threatened with physical punishment or other dire consequences if they were ever caught near the place.

What kind of fun is that? The more forbidden, the more exciting and tempting. They were playing near the creek one day when the water was a little higher than usual, though it did not quite cover a big rock in the middle of the stream. There were long, sturdy grapevines hanging off a tree or so at that point, and they decided--or at least Billy did--that the other side of the creek looked inviting. They began swinging across the creek on the vines and Billy did quite well but Emma, being younger and not quite as skillful, and wearing a dress besides, had trouble hanging on and got stuck in the middle. She could not swim and was petrified. Billy had no choice but to go get help! What happened after that was left to the imagination.

One can tell from the story that the children were quite young, but whether that happened when she was five and he was seven, before they left the Finger Lakes area of New York, or later in Missouri is hard to figure out. It is true wild grapes sometimes grew along creekbeds in Caldwell County. On the other hand, the Finger Lakes area was, and still is, renowned for the fine wines it produces. Grapes grew in great abundance and the Dodge family may very well have made wine for their own consumption or for Communion services in Dwight's church. One reason I suspect so was the attitude of my Grandma, Mary Lydia (Emma's daughter), plus remembering that when the Dodges moved to Missouri in the 1840's, prohibition was an idea whose time had not yet come.

There was a time during our country's development when alcoholism was a national problem, especially because it was easier to take liquor to market than big loads of corn, but just after the Civil War, when Rev. Dwight Dodge organized that congregation, it most likely would have been considered almost sacreligious to use grape juice instead of wine. But during Prohibition that is exactly what they did, in that very building. But my Grandma always said she loved wine, and the way she said it we could tell she was thinking of a time long ago. Our whole family were

teetotalers. In fact, when I was little they did not dance, play cards, or do hardly anything. So one Christmas when my sister Billie and I were very young and daring adults, living and working in the city, we decided Grandma deserved a special treat. We gave her a nice bottle of wine. The startled look on people's faces was something to see, but Mamma later told me that Grandma enjoyed it. She drank all of it, a tiny bit at a time.

When the Civil War broke out in 1861, William O. Dodge, age 22, became a private (probably in the Cavalry) in the Union Army under Captain E. D. Johnson of Caldwell County. He was one of five men to be caught in an ambush as their company attempted to cross the Missouri River on horseback over a bridge at Blue Mill Landing in Clay County. (I think they mean near Liberty.) A group of Rebels, hiding under the bridge, "poured about 100 shot into the company."

Billy's right leg was so seriously wounded it partially incapacitated him the rest of his life, but four of his comrades were killed in that ambush. A photocopy of his captain's version of what happened, taken from a book of Caldwell County history, appears on another page.

Another page shows a list of Caldwell County "List of Pensioners on the Roll as of Jan. 1, 1888." The book it was copied from was an official government publication, published by act of the U. S. Congress the preceding year. It shows that William O. Dodge of Hamilton, Missouri, was receiving a government pension of $10.00 per month due to injuries received in a wound to the right leg. The date the pension started is unclear, it either commenced December 1882 or earlier, and was probably from at least partial disability due to the war injury. (Also interesting on that list is the fact that a Mrs. Laura Scott was receiving the standard $8.00 per month War of 1812 Widow's Pension. Was this lady related to the later George Dodge's mother? See bottom of page 88.)

Writer cannot resist including yet another page of illustrations, copied from George's book this time, typifying the frustrating "governmentese" forms received by Billy Dodge and later his widow, Hattie. I've run across that problem in various other family lines having nothing to do with the Dodges, in the 1880's. The system was especially frustrating for elderly War of 1812 widows trying to get the benefits they had coming, and have no doubt some of the poor souls simply gave up! So if you, the reader, receive some really garbled message from the IRS, Social Security, Medicare or whatever federal agency--remember, the government is good at that. They started practicing a long, long time ago. Wonder if it will be any better 100 years from now, or will new-found technology make it even worse?)

It seems that Billy applied for either an increased pension or some other benefit he was entitled to on 30 April 1901 but died

Description of the Civil War Battle in which William O. Dodge was wounded, as told by his Captain E. D. Johnson

CAPT. E. D. JOHNSON

Submitted by Robert E. Cope

E. D. Johnson was born and bred a soldier in Coshocton County, Ohio, November 28, 1828. In 1846, upon the outbreak of the war with Mexico, he enlisted in Co. B., 3rd Ohio Inft. with which command he served fifteen months. After his return from the battle fields of Mexico, in the year 1848, he married Miss Emily Shaffer of his home county in Ohio, and with a land warrant in his pocket, one of the old fashioned lynchpin wagons, a yoke of cattle and twelve dollars in money, this couple wended their way to the prairies of Iowa and settled in Benton County and made his home there for five years. At the expiration of that period he moved to Caldwell County, Mo. It was merely a matter of chance that caused him to stop here as he was on his way to Texas. Here he settled with his family on a farm and he continued in that calling with much profit for several years. In the year 1861, when the tocsin of war resounded throughout the country and the rally cry for volunteers for the Confederacy were being made conspicuously at the county seat of this county, Johnson was on his farm employed in shingling his barn, with the roof half on, he got the word that a company of rebels was being raised in Kingston. It was more than this patriot could stand. He left his hammer and saw on the roof, came down with fire in his eye, with a declaration in his heart that Caldwell County at least, should be preserved to the Union flag. He mounted a sorrel horse that was famous for his racing and like the wind wended his way to a little town named Mirabile, located eight miles west of Kingston. At this place he found several young men anxious and ready to take a part in the momentous question of the hour. Couriers were sent out and the west part of this county was thoroughly aroused and a company of 150 men, men of iron nerve, was raised inside of 24 hours and he was unanimously elected its captain. This was the 12th day of May 1861, he with others, bonded their farms to Uncle Sam for arms and ammunition and the company inside of 10 days were thoroughly armed and equipped for war, the first company raised in North Missouri for the suppression of the rebellion and all within one month after the firing on Fort Sumpter. The most important incident of their service was their participation in the battle of Blue Mill Landing on the Missouri River, in Clay County, Sept. 17, 1861. They were ambushed as they crossed the river. About 100 shot poured into the company, by the rebels, some of whom were hidden under a bridge. Five Caldwell County men were shot clean out of their saddles, four of them being killed instantly, and the other desperately wounded. The four men killed were Linus Miller, Daniel Strope, John Smith and James Bogan. The wounded man was Wm. O. Dodge. The federals attacked the rebels in ambush and concealment and were repulsed with a loss of 10 killed and 75 or more wounded. Wounded was Capt. Johnson. He fought nobly at the head of his company and when the retreat was ordered he was so far in the fight that word did not reach him, and in the heroic charge that was being made he was seriously wounded far in advance of the line, and the rebels getting in between him and his command and blood flowing from his wound, he sought shelter in a shock of hemp in a field near by, where he lay two days without food or medical attention. He was discovered by an old darkey and a white man who were friendly to the Union. They took him in and cared for him and put him in a wagon, keeping him well concealed and brought him to his father's residence near Mirabile. The family as well as every unionist in Caldwell County rejoiced, for the report had gone out all over the county that he had been killed and his body thrown, by the rebels, in the Missouri River. Immediately on recovery from his wounds he rejoined his company at Mirabile, where they were mustered out October 12, 1861.

He departed this life at Springfield, Missouri, 16th day of April 1895.

Captain E.D. Johnson
1828-1895

Photocopy, page 120, Vol I
"History of Caldwell County MO"
(1985)
(Madison WI State Hx Soc #F472 C2
copied 1993 C34)

6 September 1901 before a determination was made--then later Hattie was penalized because he had not been re-examined by a Government physician. Perhaps he didn't know to do that, or was too sick to get to that other doctor--no matter, it was all his fault!! It is hard to know how this all came out. Presumably Hattie eventually received a pension, though maybe not as much as if she had been able to carry out some obscure instructions.

On one of those forms, the name R. L. Dodge appears as the attorney they assigned William O. Dodge. George scribbled on this that the man was no relation, and that he was father of Judge R. K. Dodge. Not mentioned was another early settler in Caldwell County in 1837 of before, Erastus Dodge. He seems to have had a number of descendants. One wonders whether he came west when the Walters family did, or the Mormons. Writer has been unable to find any connection with any of those people, and also searched the Dodge Genealogy by Dr. J. T. Dodge. He seems to have been completely unaware of them.

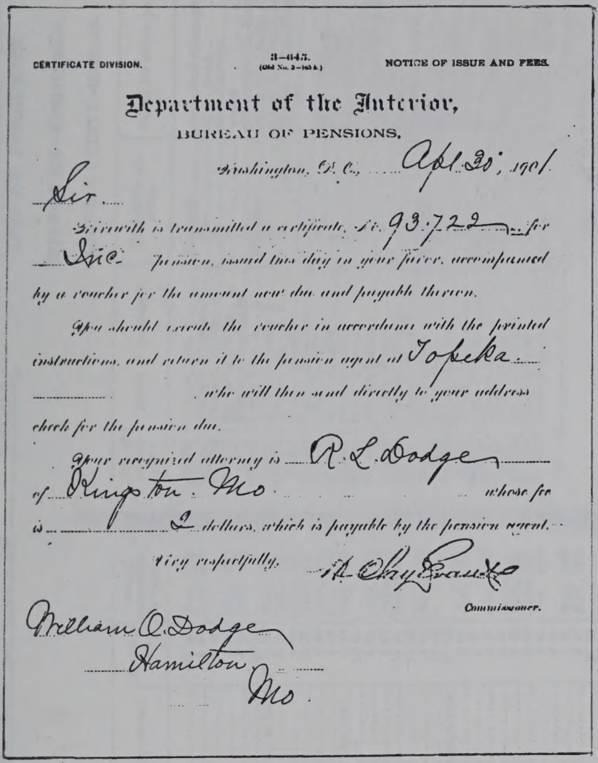
William could not have been completely disabled, at least in midlife, for it is said he was Hamilton city marshall for a while. He also ran a hack between Kingston and Hamilton. Perhaps he and his older brother Obadiah were associated in the latter venture, though no evidence proving that has surfaced.

The information about Billy's marriage(s) is from George, who says there were two marriages. The first was of very brief duration, possibly to a Melissa Alexander, though he seemed very unsure of that name. He was told by an older cousin, Laura Kautz, that Hattie, "being modern for her day," came between Billy and his wife. Presumably a divorce or annulment followed, after which the couple eloped and were married by a preacher at Tom Creek. "Just why there the family did not know."

Whereupon, he continues, "The family gave them the cold shoulder" until Dwight David's child, Silas--generation 10, George's older half brother--was injured in a "runaway." I presume they mean a spooked horse? Billy, who must have been nearby, quickly picked up the injured child and rushed him to his own home to treat his wounds. "After that the family, except for Eunice Gibson, buried the hatchet."

Writer wonders if the whole Dodge family shunned the couple. Though others might not have approved, I suspect the snubbers were mostly Silas and John's clique. Billy had only one child, Sallie. The 1870 census shows him living next door to Obadiah, whom they call a farmer, and beyond them were his mother, the widow Lydia Dodge, then "Samuel" (really Lemuel) Dunn and his wife, their sister Emma, plus all the children of the families. William, an "expres" driver age 30, wife Mariah age 21, and Sarah age 6. If her nickname was Hattie she was 25, for her birthday was 11 June 1845 (though her maiden name has not been learned).

Marriage records show that Sarah L. Dodge married G. William Crist 22 December 1881. It is said they had three children, Pearl who married and lived at Blue Springs, Carrie who was injured on the ice at age 18 and died, and Chester--no further information. As stated before, William O. Dodge died 6 September 1901. Hattie died 6 October 1924, age 79.



CERTIFICATE DIVISION. 3—643. (Old No. 3—165 b.) NOTICE OF ISSUE AND FEES.

Department of the Interior,
BUREAU OF PENSIONS,

Washington, D. C., Apl. 30, 1901

Sir

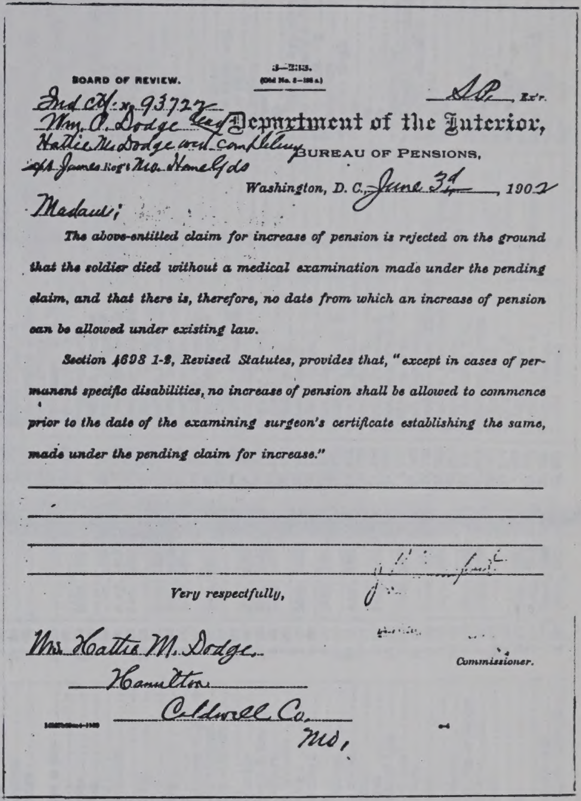
Herewith is transmitted a certificate, No. 93.722 for Inc. pension, issued this day in your favor, accompanied by a voucher for the amount now due and payable thereon.

You should execute the voucher in accordance with the printed instructions, and return it to the pension agent at Topeka, who will then send directly to your address check for the pension due.

Your recognized attorney is R. L. Dodge of Kingston Mo whose fee is 2 dollars, which is payable by the pension agent.

Very respectfully,
H. Clay Evans
Commissioner.

William O. Dodge
Hamilton
Mo.



BOARD OF REVIEW. 3—233. (Old No. 3—186 a.) S.P. Ex'r.

Inc Ctf. No. 93722
Wm. O. Dodge Co.
Hattie M. Dodge wid. [illegible]
Capt James Reg't Mo. Home Gds

Department of the Interior,
BUREAU OF PENSIONS,
Washington, D. C., June 3d, 1902

Madam;

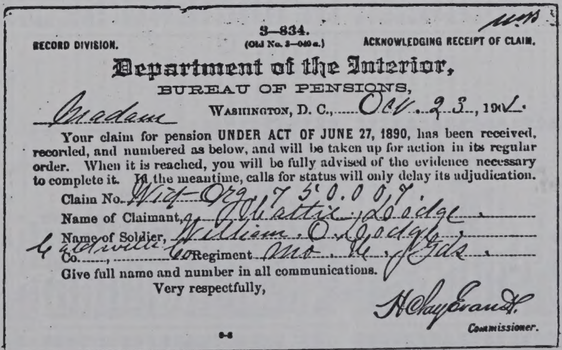
The above-entitled claim for increase of pension is rejected on the ground that the soldier died without a medical examination made under the pending claim, and that there is, therefore, no date from which an increase of pension can be allowed under existing law.

Section 4698 1-2, Revised Statutes, provides that, "except in cases of permanent specific disabilities, no increase of pension shall be allowed to commence prior to the date of the examining surgeon's certificate establishing the same, made under the pending claim for increase."

Very respectfully,

Commissioner.

Mrs. Hattie M. Dodge
Hamilton
Caldwell Co.
Mo.



RECORD DIVISION. 3—834. (Old No. 3—040 a.) ACKNOWLEDGING RECEIPT OF CLAIM.

Department of the Interior,
BUREAU OF PENSIONS,

Madam WASHINGTON, D. C., Oct. 23, 1901.

Your claim for pension UNDER ACT OF JUNE 27, 1890, has been received, recorded, and numbered as below, and will be taken up for action in its regular order. When it is reached, you will be fully advised of the evidence necessary to complete it. In the meantime, calls for status will only delay its adjudication.

Claim No. Wid. Org. 750.007.
Name of Claimant, Hattie Dodge.
Name of Soldier, William O. Dodge.
Co. Caldwell Co. Regiment Mo. H. Gds.
Give full name and number in all communications.

Very respectfully,
H. Clay Evans
Commissioner.

Volume 5 - "List of Pensioners on the Roll - Jan. 1, 1883" - Washington: Government Printing Office (1883)

MISSOURI—Continued.

CALDWELL COUNTY.

No. of certificate.	Name of pensioner.	Post-office address.	Cause for which pensioned.	Monthly rate.	Date of original allowance.
156, 368	Smith, Benj. F	Black Oak	disease of lungs	$12 00	Nov., 1878
153, 667	Smith, Thomas J	do	inj. to left leg	4 00	June, 1878
117, 605	Lane, James J	do	g. s. w. right hand	8 00	
209, 581	Phillips, Jacob F	do	g. s. w. left thigh	4 00	May, 1882
223, 607	Oren, Elijah	do	chro. diarrhea	4 00	Dec., 1882
69, 623	Ross, Charles R	do	g. s. w. right leg	18 00	
204, 212	Gordon, Thomas J	do	g. s. w. to head & inj. to hand	6 00	Mar., 1882
14, 409	Powell, Cordelia	do	widow	8 00	Feb., 1864
129, 472	McClelland, Elizabeth	Bonanza	dep. mother	8 00	May, 1867
194, 757	Korn, Martha A	do	widow	8 00	Mar., 1882
207, 102	Cox, Jacob	do	g. s. w. right thumb	2 00	Apr., 1882
190, 533	Mecorney, Sarah E	Breckenridge	widow	8 00	Dec., 1880
159, 932	Cobb, Reuben S	do	chr. diar. & dis of abd. vis	4 00	May, 1879
78, 153	Craley, Samuel	do	g. s. w. left thigh	18 00	
104, 320	Lewis, Albert G	do	chr. spinalis	8 00	July, 1870
191, 386	Lewis, Henry H	do	g. s. w. of neck	2 00	June, 1881
194, 405	Duskin, Mary	do	widow, &c	18 00	Feb., 1882
159, 173	Reeder, Elias	do	dis. of eyes	12 00	
184, 271	Trosper, Jennie	do	widow	8 00	May, 1879
76, 677	Steele, Livonia	do	do	17 00	
28, 398	Higgins, Charles W	do	inj. to spine & par. paralysis	31 25	
186, 485	Holloway, John S	do	dis. left knee	6 00	Apr., 1881
42, 707	Burger, Philip	do	epilepsy	8 00	
11, 752	Landis, Elizabeth	do	widow 1812	8 00	Nov., 1878
126, 851	Waters, Elmore	Catawba	g. s. w. right side	6 00	
203, 892	Ross, John G	do	disease of lung	6 00	Mar., 1882
24, 535	Davis, Nancy	do	widow 1812	8 00	June, 1879
198, 012	Stublefield, Martha	do	dep. mother	8 00	Dec., 1882
74, 758	Claughton, Lee A	Elk Grove	wd. left arm	6 00	
30, 507	Gray, Sarah	do	widow 1812	8 00	Sept., 1880
190, 432	Mandy, Rousseau	do	widow	8 00	Nov., 1880
13, 871	McCray, Andrew F	Glassville	loss of left leg	24 00	
177, 795	Gaddy, Mary Ann	Hamilton	widow	10 00	June, 1877
	Van Eps, Clarissa	do	do	8 00	
21, 699	Webster, Elijah S	do	wd. left thigh	4 00	
76, 326	Harper, Joseph W	do	wd. right forearm	20 00	
3, 151	Volkenburgh, Lorenzo D.	do	disease of lungs	12 00	
21, 869	Shelby, Wilson	do	wd. right arm & jaw	18 00	
77, 943	Baker, Nancy A	do	widow	8 00	
167, 484	Trader, William S	do	disease of eyes	18 00	May, 1880
36, 046	Scott, Stephen	do	g. s. w. left leg	18 00	
136, 975	Beeson, Levi	do	g. s. w. of face	4 00	Nov., 1875
154, 937	Black, John G	do	dis. of right thorax	4 00	Aug., 1878
14, 466	Allen, Mary Ann	do	widow 1812	8 00	Jan., 1879
54, 387	Martin, Marion C	do	abscess left hip	12 00	
170, 061	Masters, Chauncey M	do	scurvy	2 00	June, 1880
131, 478	McPherson, Philip	do	g. s. w. left leg	11 25	Jan., 1875
15, 364	Hasback, Susannah	do	dep. mother	8 00	Mar., 1864
30, 012	Pritchard, Anson	do	injury to abdomen & g. s. w.	8 00	
223, 258	Neal, William	do	asthma & dis. of lungs	8 00	Dec., 1882
62, 475	Orr, Moses	do	wd. right side of chest	4 00	
93, 722	Dodge, William O	do	wd. right leg	10 00	
198, 009	Doll, John A	do	g. s. w. of right hip	4 00	Nov., 1881
164, 962	Hooker, James J	do	inj. to right eye & diar	12 00	Feb., 1880
125, 874	Galpin, Ebenezer	do	g. s. w. left forearm	4 00	Dec., 1873
11, 597	Howard, Abial G	do	bronchitis & p'thisis	8 00	
189, 223	Hunter, John	Kidder	g. s. w. left thigh	2 00	May, 1881
25, 607	Carey, John	do	g. s. w. right thigh	6 00	
125, 616	Cole, Lydia A	do	dep. mother	8 00	Mar., 1869
76, 429	McKee, Addison	do	injury to abdomen	17 00	
187, 116	Plumb, William	do	g. s. w. right chest	20 00	Apr., 1881
37, 191	Wilson, James	do	g. s. w. left lung	18 00	
192, 483	Brown, Hurlburt O	do	disease of eyes	8 00	July, 1881
53, 580	Benson, Alonzo P	do	wd. right side of face	18 00	
151, 925	Colvin, John	Kingston	incised wd. of head	2 00	Mar., 1878
68, 230	Butts, Thomas J	do	g. s. w. right arm	18 00	
190, 851	Mumpower, Alcana	do	g. s. w. left arm	1 00	June, 1881
168, 510	Smith, Mary	do	widow	8 00	Apr., 1875
106, 406	Ellis, John F	do	injury to abdomen	36 00	
188, 388	Doak, William P	do	diar., dis. abd. vis. & lungs	8 00	May, 1881
134, 457	Hooker, Samuel	do	g. s. w. right arm	4 00	July, 1875
64, 372	Kantz, George	do	wd. right hand	18 00	
48, 276	McClelland, Aram'tha	do	widow	8 00	
29, 007	Scott, Laura	do	widow 1812	8 00	Apr., 1880
7, 688	Peddicord, Nancy	do	do	8 00	Aug., 1878
71, 855	Harman, Ables	do	erysipelas right arm	5 33⅓	Sept., 1866
197, 284	Clevenger, Lewis B	do	inj. head, l. shldr., arm, &c	6 00	Nov., 1881

MISSOURI—Continued.

CALDWELL COUNTY—Continued.

No. of certificate.	Name of pensioner.	Post-office address.	Cause for which pensioned.	Monthly rate.	Date of original allowance.
79, 097	Adams, John C	Kingston	chr. spinal meningitis	$50 00	
109, 870	Sinclair, Thomas J	do	inj. to hand	6 00	Apr., 1871
206, 913	Stewart, William J	do	chro. diarrhea	6 00	Apr., 1882
171, 117	Edwards, Phebe	do	widow	8 00	Nov., 1875
4, 564	Johnson, George W	do	chr. bronchitis, diarr	8 00	
215, 907	Cross, John A	Mirabile	inj. to spine & dis. of kidney	6 00	July, 1882
82, 682	Haworth, Isaac B	do	g. s. w. left thigh, &c	6 00	
148, 961	Wilson, Martin V	do	ch. diar. & dis. of lungs	18 00	Oct., 1877
79, 924	Smith, Angelina	do	widow	8 00	
181, 235	Quinn, Elizabeth	do	do	20 00	Jan., 1878
208, 935	Platt, John P	do	inj. of left knee	4 00	May, 1882
223, 596	Mylar, Isaac S	do	g. s. w. left heel	2 00	Dec., 1882
138, 497	Lankford, Elias	do	g. s. w. left hip	6 00	
207, 166	Clark, Thomas	do	ch. diar., scurvy, &c	6 00	Apr., 1882
208, 102	Brooks, Martin	do	atrophy & paralysis of legs	4 00	May, 1882
10, 305	Strope, George	do	surv. 1812	8 00	Dec., 1871
25, 744	Wilson, Clarissa	do	widow 1812	8 00	July, 1879
48, 544	Boyd, William J	do	wd. right shoulder	4 00	
105, 307	Cox, Marinda	Nettleton	widow	8 00	Dec., 1867
14, 918	Arms, Maria	do	widow 1812	8 00	Jan., 1879
160, 788	Kelly, Joseph	do	disease of lungs	6 00	June, 1879
95, 847	Snoad, Ruth	do	dep. mother	8 00	June, 1867
166, 958	Kelmel, John	Polo	asthma	8 00	Apr., 1880
104, 663	Pollard, John	do	g. s. w. right leg	8 00	
133, 330	Blann, Isabell	Proctorville	widow	8 00	Aug., 1869
75, 396	Hibner, Nicholas	do	g. s. w. right leg	12 00	
127, 054	Esles, John M	do	g. s. w. r. scapula, knee, &c	8 00	
115, 965	Hawk, John A	do	torpedo wd. of head	8 00	

CALLAWAY COUNTY.

No. of certificate.	Name of pensioner.	Post-office address.	Cause for which pensioned.	Monthly rate.	Date of original allowance.
11, 112	Boyd, Jno	Auxvasse	surv. 1812	$8 00	Jan., 1873
17, 980	Ellen, Elizabeth	do	widow 1812	8 00	Feb., 1879
102, 827	Kinworthy, Elisha	Barkersville	chr. rheumatism	2 00	July, 1881
127, 022	Oliver, Pheby	Cedar City	widow	8 00	Apr., 1869
110, 609	McKinney, Wm. B	do	wd. of rt. shoulder	6 00	Oct., 1872
129, 428	Adams, Sarah	do	widow	8 00	May, 1869
197, 890	Ferguson, Luke	do	minors	12 00	Dec., 1882
4, 019	Hughes, Absalom	do	wd. of bth. legs below knee	12 00	
82, 830	Games, Patsey W	Concord	widow 1812	8 00	Apr., 1882
8, 460	Hyten, Stephen H	Fulton	surv. 1812	8 00	Nov., 1871
22, 241	Hook, Cynthia Ann	do	widow 1812	8 00	Apr., 1879
31, 773	Vinson, Betty L	do	do	8 00	May, 1881
80, 189	Herring, Lucy	do	do	8 00	Aug., 1880
28, 227	Glover, Susan	do	do	8 00	Dec., 1879
151, 027	Harrison, Ann	do	widow	8 00	June, 1871
180, 864	Dunlap, Parmelia	do	do	8 00	Mar., 1878
148, 217	Plummer, Jno. W	do	dis. of heart	12 75	Sept., 1877
85, 871	Parker, Wm. A	do	g. s. w. of lft. arm	8 00	
28, 220	Burditt, Elizabeth	do	widow 1812	8 00	Dec., 1879
181, 899	Berry, Milly	do	dep. mother	8 00	Aug., 1878
29, 830	Bradley, Nancy	do	widow	8 00	Sept., 1864
125, 477	Bullard, Ellen	do	do	8 00	Mar., 1869
122, 479	Titus, Jno. M	do	chr. bron. & hypertr'y heart	12 00	
105, 065	Reed, Jno. H	do	inj. to abdomen & diarrhea	20 00	Aug., 1870
195, 704	Seibert, Thos	do	g. s. w. of lft. hip	4 00	Sept., 1881
138, 571	Bass, Minor	do	rheumatism	8 00	Mar., 1876
89, 474	Bysfield, Frank B	do	wd. of lft. thigh	8 00	
104, 079	Carson, Julia A	do	widow	8 00	Jan., 1883
135, 020	Wiggs, Sarah	do	do	8 00	
71, 034	Craigs, Francis A	do	do	8 00	
17, 003	Cheatham, Ewd. L	do	wd. near spine	18 00	
3, 234	Gillmore, Wm	do	wd. l. scapula by cannon ball.	8 00	
91, 663	Holt, Harrison	do	wd. of lft. shoulder	8 00	
77, 773	Dunkelberger, Edward	Guthrie	dis. of eyes	6 00	Feb., 1867
111, 943	Bradley, Margaret E	Ham's Prairie	widow	8 00	Apr., 1868
153, 097	Duncan, Eliza	Holt's Summit	do	8 00	Aug., 1871
93, 399	McSchooler, Levi	do	dis. of lungs	12 00	
197, 088	Branham, Louisa	do	widow	8 00	Aug., 1882
20, 446	Palmer, Joel	McCredie	surv. 1812	8 00	Mar., 1873
87, 777	Miller, Mary K	Millersburgh	widow 1812	8 00	Dec., 1882
7, 935	Adcock, Joel J	do	surv. 1812	8 00	Nov., 1871
151, 772	Craig, Andrew J	New Bloomfield	wd. of rt. forearm	8 00	Mar., 1878
29, 181	Gray, Martha C	do	widow 1812	8 00	Apr., 1880
23, 402	Davis, James	do	surv. 1812	8 00	July, 1878

(Milwaukee Public Library Ref.# R3515 U58L)

103

DODGE FAMILY

Emma Adelia Dodge[8] the youngest child of Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge was born 9 March 1841 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York. Her favorite childhood playmate was brother Billy, whom she tried the best she could to keep up with. You've already read about the grapevine incident. Emma was definitely a young tomboy, also a skillful horsewoman. She loved horses and grew up in the saddle--sidesaddle, that is.

Back in the 1860's women and girls rode sidesaddle because of their long skirts and dresses. There were still occasions when hoop skirts were worn, especially for extra dressup affairs, though the hoops were taken off for riding horses. Many stories have been repeated, with awe, about Emma galloping her horse, riding sidesaddle, which would certainly require a great more skill than doing it in a regular saddle. Of course her parents did not approve of such antics but that does not seem to have stopped her. It appears she did not always confide in her elders, but do girls nowadays? Apparently she did all right in school, and took direction very well in one way--she was an exquisite seamstress. Her father being a minister undoubtedly broadened her social contacts.

Emma seems to have attracted several beaus growing up, but instead of telling her parents about all of them, she gigglingly confided in her girlfriends. People in Kingston loved to socialize. In the very early days many of the homes were of logs, with blankets or curtains often used instead of at least some of the walls. Such a custom certainly seems quaint nowadays, but for the early settlers, in the days before central heating, it was a very practical solution. Children peeking behind curtains would have been considered a grave social error, resulting in good spankings.

On one occasion a boy who had a crush on Emma was showing off, trying to get her attention. That boy obviously was not her choice of the moment. Encouraged by her girlfriends, she did her best to ignore him, so he became even more boisterous and fell behind one of the curtains. Emma was pretty embarrassed by the incident and her brothers teased her. She and her friends thought he was "just awful" for doing that, and pretty dumb besides.

Though there was really no scarcity of young men in the area, when Emma was about 18 she became attracted to an older widower in his late 30's, over twice her age, who joined her father's congregation in 1958, Dr. Lemuel Dunn.

Dwight and Lydia did not really know how to handle the situation. They could find no fault with the idealistic Dr. Dunn's character. Everyone knew he was a fine man, and brilliant besides. But they really had hoped she would find a nice young man her own age. Though they did not not encourage the relationship, they knew better than to forbid it, for Emma was a strong-minded girl.

INTRODUCTION

The central figure of this book is the Reverend Dwight Dodge (1798-1869) who migrated to Missouri in 1846 with his family. The expert on the Dodge family in America was and probably always will be Dr. Joseph Thompson Dodge, who wrote the comprehensive genealogy a century ago. He knew only a little bit about Dwight, but had much data about those who came before. The task here is to tell about those later people whom the genealogist was not familiar with, after first reviewing those particular Dodges in Dwight's own ancestral line.

The logical beginning of any family history starts with the earliest known progenitor, who is ancestor of them all. The Dodges have selected the venerable ancient baron, Sir Peter Dodge, for this role. Feeling that others would share my frustration because all of the other books speak about Sir Peter with awe, but don't tell anything about him except to repeat what is stated in the patent for the Dodge coat of arms, a little ementary research was done to come up with material for a section about him and his place in history. It was fun doing it, but that is only a little frosting for the cake.

Having such a marvellous resource as the genealogy, it was rather simple to extract Dwight's ancestors from it. Many other periodicals and books were consulted to come up with material supplementing what others had to say about our own direct ancestors and their siblings. Because the old genealogy covers so many Dodges, any one individual, no matter how interesting, tends to get lost in the crowd. Conversely, when the story of each family unit is followed by that which comes after it (omitting the others) an interesting progressive pattern emerges. A case in point shows the progression. Our Puritan ancestor, Richard Dodge II, a prosperous farmer living not far from ancient Salem, owned a cider mill and a negro slave named Mingo. Two hundred years later his great-great-great-great grandson Billy Dodge was wounded in the Civil War fighting against slavery.

To make a project like this feasible, one has to have source material. Writer has three good ones which have not been used by anyone else before, as far as I know. The last one to be listed was the true inspiration for this book.

(1) The first and easiest pool of information to explain, is that I have been able to figure out the identities of most of the other ancestors were (not bearing the Dodge surname) of Reverend Dwight Dodge. The missing ancestors are the families or progenitors of William Chubb born about 1684 and Abigail Smith born about 1734. Dwight was born 1798 in Sturbridge, Massachusetts, raised in New Hampshire, had his children in New York Finger Lakes region and migrated to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1846. Such a man could not help but be interesting. Some of his ancestors were fascinating. Many of those families go back into medieval England.

Short family histories will be presented for each of those lines. They will be brief because otherwise this work would be overwhelmed, but source material will be listed in every case, should anyone reading them want to learn more.

(2) The second source is an unpublished genealogy in scrapbook form kept up for at least a generation by my mother's third cousin, a charming man named George Dodge who lived in Hamilton, Missouri. He did not have access to resources now available in large cities like microfilm copies of censuses, reference books, or the data at Latter Day Saint stake family history centers, yet what a collection of data he had!

He visited libraries during trips to New York and Minneapolis and, before the advent of Xerox machines he painstakingly hand copied the patent for the coat of arms, Richard I's will, first names and the children's names for each successive generation. More importantly, he kept a collection of articles clipped from newspapers in his home town every time anyone even remotely related or married to a Dodge was mentioned, which was often. Many clippings concerned social events, but there were also marriage and death notices, also excerpts from the county history. He had a treasured copy of Rev. Dwight Dodge's obituary.

George worked in the public a long time. He often met near-relatives and must have asked about who married whom and about the families. Sometimes the informants garbled names or were confused. He had the presence of mind to put it on paper anyway, so we can check it out. An older cousin who belonged to a patriotic society based on heritage gave him valuable information which might otherwise have been lost. Sometimes she or other informants conjectured in assigning wrong parents to a few early 19th century cousins, but you could tell he was beginning to catch on, though he had a trusting nature. Like myself, he sought but was unable to find answers to some problems, such as who were the spouses and children of the two sisters (Dwight's children) who migrated to California. I wish someone with the answers to that could see this and contact me!

George intended to keep his book in order but often got carried away, jotting note upon note on already typed pages whenever people told him things, while it was still fresh in his mind. Because of that, it took a little effort to search out the information most useful for this book--but well worth it, since many of his entries are of things I never would have found out any other way.

This gracious and charming Dodge gentleman permitted my brother, sister, and me, whom he scarcely knew except that we were part Dodge, too, to take his precious book and photocopy it, just because we were so interested in those same ancestors. He probably felt lost until it was returned safely to him.

Because of the limited scope of this narrative, only a fraction of George's large collection of data can be used. I hope his book is being kept safe, and wish it could be made available to the public, though something like that would be up to his immediate family. My book is about the ancestors and about Dwight's children, not about descendants as his is, except to wind up the story with mention of my own direct line. His book would make a nice supplement to be used in connection with this, since this follows only the daughter, Emma, and he followed her brothers and sisters, particularly her oldest brother Silas. He also has other little treats, such as brief genealogies of his Hull and Alvord lines. We are so grateful to George!

(3) Third and last, are my precious pages of the Dodge Family Bible and the unwritten family stories and traditions that have been kept alive in our family over these many years, and which I am afraid will soon be lost for all time unless I pass them on in writing. They have been told and retold so many times it is possible they have lost details in the telling. Who is to say if they have come down exactly as they started out? The point is to preserve what there is to remember. I wish I had listened better when I was a child, but people just don't.....

I suppose not every family has so many tales that go back a century and a half, though undoubtedly some do. By way of explaining this, Dwight's widow, Lydia (Pearce) Dodge and youngest daughter, Emma, (whom I remember--my great grandmother) never tired of telling about how things were in New York or in early Caldwell County. My grandmother absorbed all that like a sponge. She adored her grandmother, Lydia, who lived next door and died when she was twelve. You'd have to meet my grandmother to understand it better, but for some reason she thought she had to talk a lot to be a good hostess, and the conversation often drifted to the lives of her ancestors. Not only that, but Emma told those stories to my mother, Ada, who at age 90 is still repeating the stories, too.

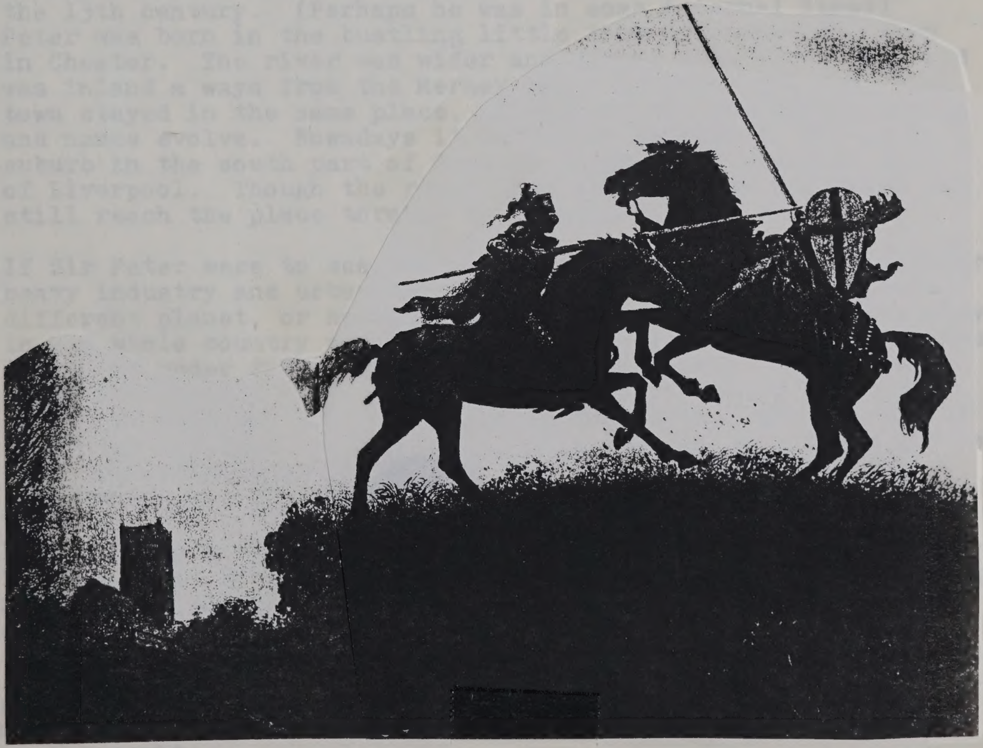
I left home early and moved to another state. Whenever I return to the scenes of my childhood, sometimes they are gone--like the one-room elementary school I attended, houses I grew up in, people, and even entire small communities have vanished. I'm all for progress if it is for the best, but it is sad to know that soon the old places and the old stories about those loved ones will fade away never to be remembered again. Maybe if I can save even a few inconsequential memories someone will read them someday and traces of their lives will not pass into oblivion. The hour groweth late.

THE LEGEND OF SIR PETER DODGE

This part is dedicated to my grandson Nate who, even as a toddler, was fascinated by the idea of having his very own medieval knight ancestor, the Baron Sir Peter Dodge, and also to all the other youngsters privileged to share this marvellous legacy.

Just who was "Baron Pierre Doidge" (his French name) who fought so valiantly for his King? You won't find him in any history book, so this is a simple little historical attempt to answer that question. You grownups who want to get straight to the genealogy part can skip this part if you want to. It is not must reading.

If Sir Peter were to appear miraculously before our very eyes, we could ask him. Problem is, likely you would have such a hard time trying to understand him you might give up. He spoke an earlier version of "Middle English." The language we speak today had not yet evolved but if you want to get an idea, you might go to the library and get a copy of "Canterbury Tales" by Chaucer. He spoke a more northerly and even earlier dialect a hundred years before, but he and the people in the book could have conversed easily. The pictures will give you an idea of what they wore.



The English language is based on ancient Saxon, Danish, Celtic, Latin and Norman French--or on the tongues of whoever invaded the island. It is still changing. Some of the words you use are different from those of your grandparents. Though England is only a small island country, the people there even today sometimes have difficulty understanding one another. In parts of the northeast some people use words left over from the Vikings and in Cornwall from the Celts. Whatever dialect Peter spoke, you may be sure he also spoke Norman French, for he was an ambitious man.

How sad that we could not really understand Sir Peter! But we still would love to know what he looked like. Was he tall or short, blonde, brunette or redhead? It is said redheads were scrappy people back then--maybe he was a redhead with strong muscles. We do know he wore a heavy metal suit of armor, and his shield was emblazoned with his own coat-of-arms, the one you see on the cover of this book. He rode a huge war horse. It had to be huge to carry all that weight. Alongside him was an honor-guard carrying the Dodge coat-of-arms on a very large battle flag that could be seen far away.

Since scholars seem to think the name "Dodge" is of Saxon origin, he may not have been a Norman but the people in power were in the 13th century. (Perhaps he was in some maternal line?) Peter was born in the bustling little town of Stopworth, then in Chester. The river was wider and deeper than it is now, and was inland a ways from the Mersey where it joins the sea. The town stayed in the same place, of course, but boundaries change and names evolve. Nowadays it is called Stockport, and is a suburb in the south part of Greater Manchester, somewhat east of Liverpool. Though the river long since silted up, ships can still reach the place through an extensive canal system.

If Sir Peter were to see the place today with all the manufacturing, heavy industry and urban sprawl, he might suspect he was on a different planet, or having a surrealistic dream. The only city in the whole country was far-away London with its congested population of under 200,000, some of them transients. There were farms and forests around Stopworth. The raising of sheep for export of wool was just beginning in that area. The weaving of cloth was for local use only, or one's own family. There may have been some digging of coal or mining of minerals, but on a very limited scale. The countryside was pretty.

Peter was an enterprising man. His family would have been somewhat involved with trade, for Stopworth was a place where ships brought merchandise which was exchanged with the local people for the area's products. But Dodges have always loved agriculture, so that may have been their primary occupation. However, to get ahead in the Middle Ages one had to be prepared to lead one's own tenants and serfs into battle when the monarch or overlord asked. Might made right. Law and order in the modern sense existed nowhere in the world.

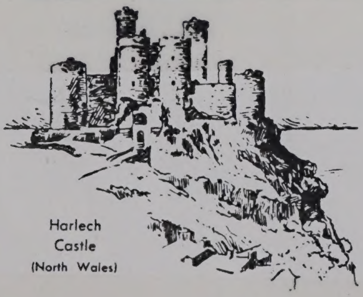
When Peter was a young man King Edward I, his beloved monarch, was fighting to conquer Wales not so very far to the west. Nothing in the records suggests our young Knight ancestor went there to help out, but maybe he did, living so close. Somewhere he acquired the skills to become a fine military leader. The battles of the English in Northern Wales were quite successful. Many of the grand old castles they built during the conquest, and to retain power, are still standing there, a marvel for all to see.

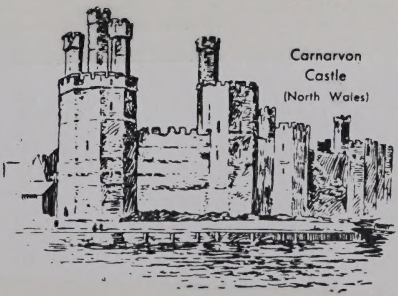
From that time onward, Wales is part of England. As a gesture to calm the Welsh, King Edward made his son and intended heir "Prince of Wales," and so it has been ever since.

Soon after the victories in Wales, King Edward I, "Hammer of the Scots" needed soldiers and leaders to fight "the evil Balliol" so he could rule Scotland. Naturally our Hero volunteered. Besides being so patriotic, he could make a big name for himself. Also, to the victor went the spoils of war.

Sir Peter led his men in battle during the fierce and bloody seiges of Dunbar and Berwick in Scotland. In fact, they fought hard and bravely and won a number of battles. Sir Peter was "conspicuous for the advancement and good content" of his sovereign Lord, King Edward I; "and in recompense of said service, and by his special grace," the King "awarded to Peter Dodge and to his heirs forever, the Lordship of Podenhughe, with the Barony of Coldingham, in the Kingdom of Scotland." What a wonderful honor!

We don't know if Peter stayed there to take up his Barony or not. It really wasn't safe there, as the wars went on--and on--and on for hundreds of years. Things are different now, of course. And it has been said that there are a few people named Dodge still living on the borders in that very area. Of course other people, bearing Sir Peter's arms, did remain in and around Stopworth.


Harlech
Castle
(North Wales)


Carnarvon
Castle
(North Wales)

DODGE FAMILY

Ancient Podenhughe no longer exists. Berwick and Dunbar are right there on the map of Scotland, so you can see Sir Peter's army must have been quite successful to conquer such a chunk of territory for England for a while, though the Scots won it back some time later. Melrose Abbey figured in the fighting, and its ruins are still there, its beauty marred in much later fighting in other wars.

If details of the battles were written down they hve since been destroyed in the fighting and looting. Most of the people living there were illiterate. Since the territory later returned to Scotland, what stories there are about those battles are told from the Scots' point of view.

Of course the Scots did not jump for joy because they lost the battles, but you can see from Sir Walter Scott's poem that Sir Peter was magnanimous in victory, for he spared the life of Sir Richard Smaylhome of Coldingham, allowing him and his wife to escape to the safety of Melrose Abbey. It also shows that Sir Peter got to be Baron of Coldingham by defeating this man in battle.

CHICAGO HIST. SOC.

Walter Scott

Sir Walter Scott was fascinated with folk ballads of the Scottish border from the time he was a youngster and began a life-long avocation of collecting them and learning the local history which lay behind them in an ancient War-ravaged, desolate area where nobody could read or write except an occasional cleric in one of the local monasteries. Even those records were usually destroyed by war and looting.

The old Celts there were not literate but they were bright and (witness modern Ireland) they never forgot an ancient grudge. Bards and troubadors were trained as a special class who memorized events from their point of view, and even genealogical lines, and preserved them in song.

Soon after his marriage in 1797, Scott was appointed "sheriff-dispute" of Selkirke. The position gave him wide access to research in the area, the people, and the ancient ballads. Of course, he put it all in writing. He came to realize that in order to preserve his findings they would have to be published. To attract broad appeal he did polish them up to take off the rough spots. Hopefully, he did not polish too much.

EVE OF ST. JOHN

His arms shone full bright; - in the beacon's red light
    His plume, it was scarlet and blue;
On his shield was a hound, in a silver leash bound
    And his crest was a branch of the yew.
Yet hear but my word, my noble Lord!
    For I heard her name his name;
And that lady bright, she called the knight
    Sir Richard of Coldingham.

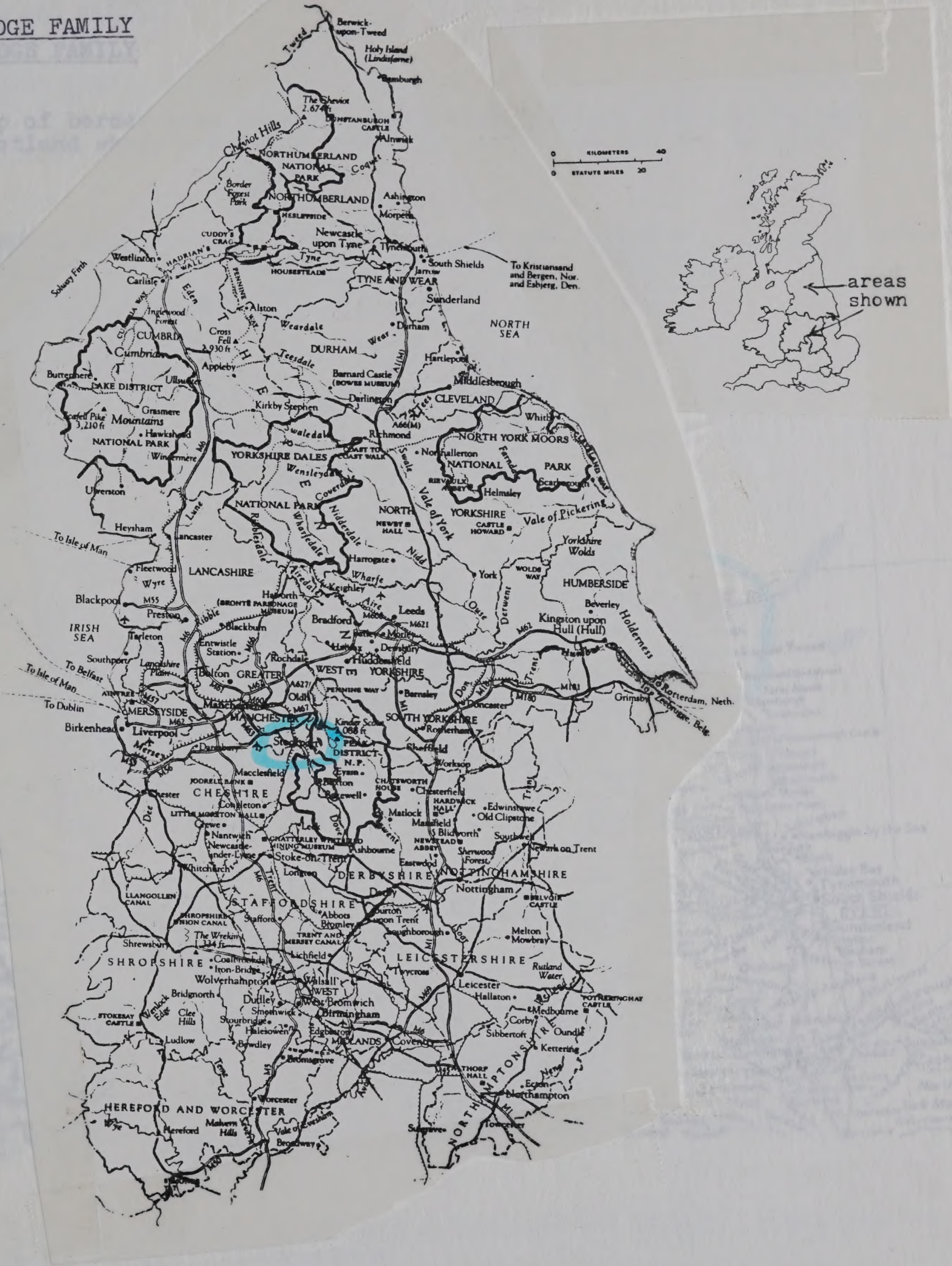
- - - - - - - - - - - - - - -

The varying light deceived thy sight;
    And the wild winds drowned the name;
For the Dryburgh bells ring, and the white monks do sing
    for Sir Richard of Coldingham.
There is a nun in Dryburgh bower
    Ne'er looks upon the Sun,
There is a Monk in Melrose Tower
    He speaketh word to none.
That Nun, who ne'er beholds the day
    That Monk who speaks to none,
That Nun, was Smaylhome's Lady Gay,
    That Monk the bold Baron.

------

Sir Walter Scott

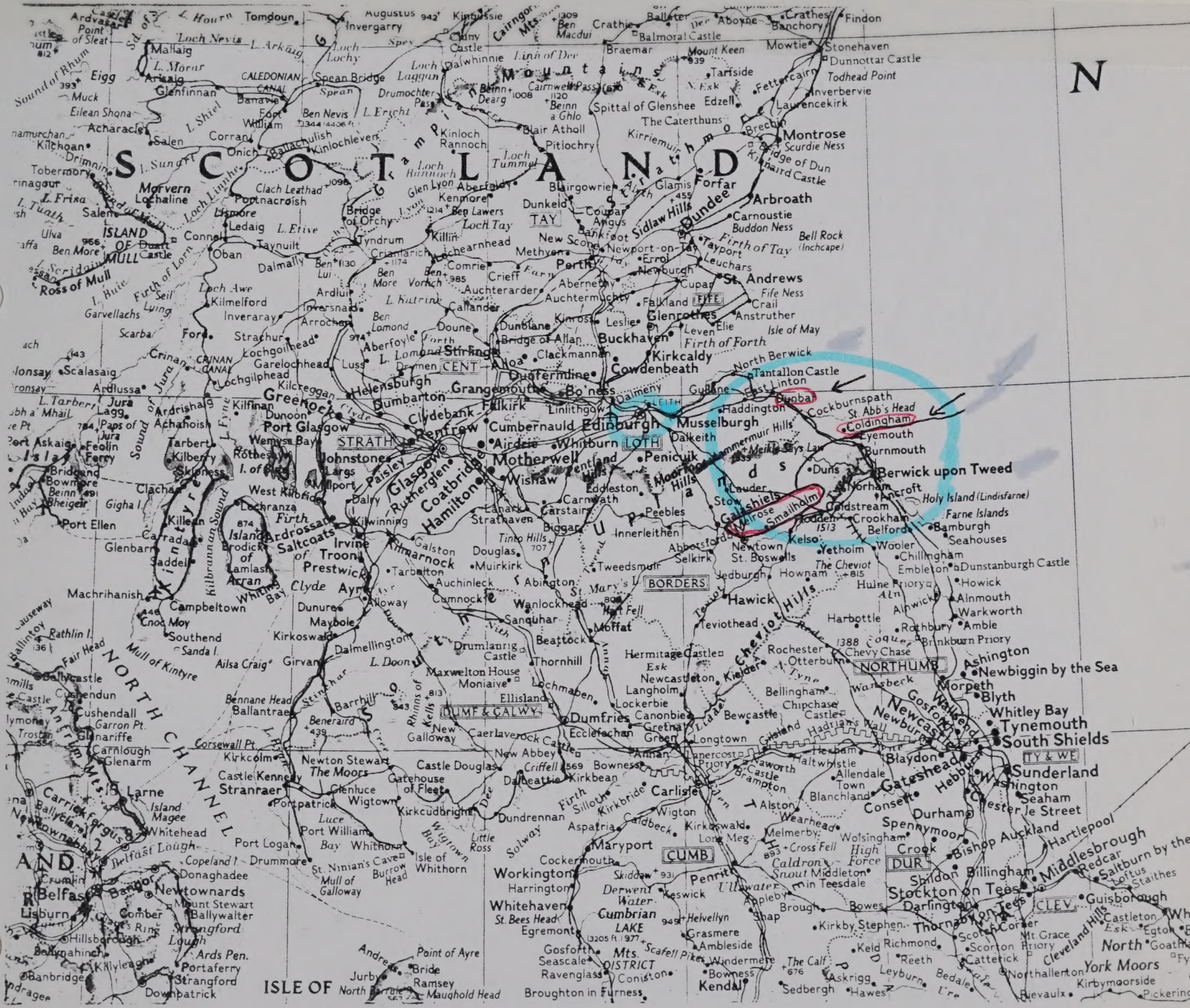
DODGE FAMILY


Berwick-upon-Tweed
Holy Island (Lindisfarne)
Bamburgh
Tweed
The Cheviot 2,674 ft
Dunstanburgh Castle
Alnwick
Cheviot Hills
Northumberland National Park
Coquet
Border Forest Park
Northumberland
Ashington
Morpeth
Hesleyside
Cuddy's Crag
Newcastle upon Tyne
Tynemouth
Jarrow
South Shields
To Kristiansand and Bergen, Nor. and Esbjerg, Den.
Westlinton
Hadrian's Wall
Tyne
Housesteads
Tyne and Wear
Sunderland
Solway Firth
Carlisle
Eden
Pennine Way
Alston
Inglewood Forest
Cumbria
Cumbrian Mountains
Cross Fell 2,930 ft
Weardale
Durham
Wear
North Sea
Appleby
Teesdale
Hartlepool
Buttermere
Lake District
Ullswater
Barnard Castle (Bowes Museum)
Middlesbrough
Darlington
Tees
Cleveland
Grasmere
Scafell Pike 3,210 ft
Kirkby Stephen
Whitby
Hawkshead
National Park
Windermere
Swaledale
Richmond
A66(M)
Coast to Coast Walk
North York Moors National Park
Yorkshire Dales National Park
Wensleydale
Northallerton
Rievaulx Abbey
Helmsley
Scarborough
Ulverston
Coverdale
Nidderdale
North Yorkshire
Vale of York
Vale of Pickering
Newby Hall
Castle Howard
Heysham
Lune
Lancaster
To Isle of Man
Ribblesdale
Wharfedale
Harrogate
Nidd
Yorkshire Wolds
Fleetwood
Wyre
Lancashire
Wharfe
York
Wolds Way
Humberside
Airedale
Keighley
Haworth (Brontë Parsonage Museum)
Aire
Leeds
Ouse
Derwent
Beverley
Blackpool
M55
Preston
Ribble
Blackburn
Bradford
M621
M62
Kingston upon Hull (Hull)
Holderness
Irish Sea
Tarleton
Entwistle Station
Batley
Morley
Dewsbury
Southport
Lancashire Plain
Rochdale
Halifax
Huddersfield
West Yorkshire
To Belfast
To Isle of Man
Bolton
Greater Manchester
A627
Humber
Pennine Way
Barnsley
Don
Trent
M181
Grimsby
To Rotterdam, Neth.
To Zeebrugge, Belg.
Aintree
To Dublin
Oldham
M180
Doncaster
Merseyside
M62
Manchester
South Yorkshire
Birkenhead
Liverpool
Kinder Scout 2,088 ft
Rotherham
Stockport
Peak District N.P.
Mersey
Sheffield
Macclesfield
Eyam
Worksop
Jodrell Bank
Buxton
Chatsworth House
Chesterfield
Chester
Cheshire
Bakewell
Hardwick Hall
Edwinstowe
Old Clipstone
Congleton
Little Moreton Hall
Matlock
Mansfield
Dee
Crewe
Blidworth
Southwell
Nantwich
Chatterley Whitfield Mining Museum
Newstead Abbey
Sherwood Forest
Newark on Trent
Newcastle-under-Lyme
Leek
Dove
Ashbourne
Stoke-on-Trent
Eastwood
Whitchurch
Longton
Derbyshire
Nottinghamshire
Nottingham
Derby
Llangollen Canal
Staffordshire
Belvoir Castle
Abbots Bromley
Burton upon Trent
Shropshire Union Canal
Stafford
Trent and Mersey Canal
Loughborough
Soar
Melton Mowbray
The Wrekin 1,334 ft
Shrewsbury
Shropshire
Coalbrookdale
Iron-Bridge
Lichfield
Leicestershire
Rutland Water
Tyycross
Wolverhampton
Walsall
Leicester
Hallaton
Fotheringhay Castle
Bridgnorth
Dudley
West Bromwich
West Midlands
Birmingham
Medbourne
Corby
Stokesay Castle
Wenlock Edge
Clee Hills
Stourbridge
Smethwick
Halesowen
Edgbaston
Coventry
Sibbertoft
Oundle
Kettering
Ludlow
Bewdley
Bromsgrove
Althorp Hall
Ecton
Northampton
Northamptonshire
Nene
Hereford and Worcester
Worcester
Wye
Hereford
Malvern Hills
Vale of Evesham
Broadway
Sulgrave
Towcester
M1
M5
M6
M56
M63
M69
A1(M)
Kilometers 0 40
Statute miles 0 20
areas shown

Stockport is in the left center area of this modern map of England. The Scottish border area where Sir Peter fought is a little bit up the coast from Berwick-upon-Tweed shown at top, near Edinburgh, Scotland.

DODGE FAMILY

Map of border area showing places near Edinburgh in southeastern Scotland where Sir Peter Dodge and his forces won the battles.


SCOTLAND
N
Edinburgh
Musselburgh
Dalkeith
Haddington
North Berwick
Tantallon Castle
East Linton
Dunbar
Cockburnspath
St. Abb's Head
Coldingham
Eyemouth
Burnmouth
Berwick upon Tweed
Duns
Lauder
Stow
Galashiels
Melrose
Smailholm
1513
Coldstream
Kelso
Peebles
Penicuik
Lammermuir Hills
Moorfoot Hills
Firth of Forth
LOTH
BORDERS
Cheviot Hills
The Cheviot
Holy Island (Lindisfarne)
Farne Islands
Bamburgh
NORTHUMB
Newcastle
Carlisle
Glasgow
Dundee
Perth
Stirling
Firth of Clyde
Solway Firth
NORTH CHANNEL
ISLE OF

King Edward and Baliol. You can skip this section if you like. This is just a little over-simplified sketch of what led up to the wars on the Scottish Borders in which Sir Peter Dodge became involved.

Edward I inherited the throne of England and Normandy in 1272, roughly 200 years after his ancestor, William the Conqueror, came over from Falaise. He was in Sicily on his way back from the last of the Crusades with King Louis IX of France when he received the news of his father's death. At age 33, he had already waged a successful battle to put down an uprising against his father, Henry III; journeyed to the Holy Land to fight; and toured the Mediterranean. He was in no great hurry to assume the crown he knew would be waiting for him or the burdens of the reforms his father had begun, knowing that this would be an enormous task if he wanted to do it right. It took him two years to get back.

Then Edward went about establishing a much improved system of justice and a complicated code of laws, also many governmental reforms which were quite remarkable when you consider that his grandfather had been the notorious King John who had been forced to sign the Magna Charta. (All of this was a few hundred years too early in history for anyone to consider the "little guy," however.) He did improve the government.

In a few years he was interrupted by a serious uprising of the restless Welsh, who had always resented having an English king as overlord. It took a long time and a lot of hard fighting to crush the resistance in Wales, during which time he had many huge and spectacular castles built, especially on the north seacoast of that country, to rule and to defend his conquests. Some of them are in remarkable condition to this day.

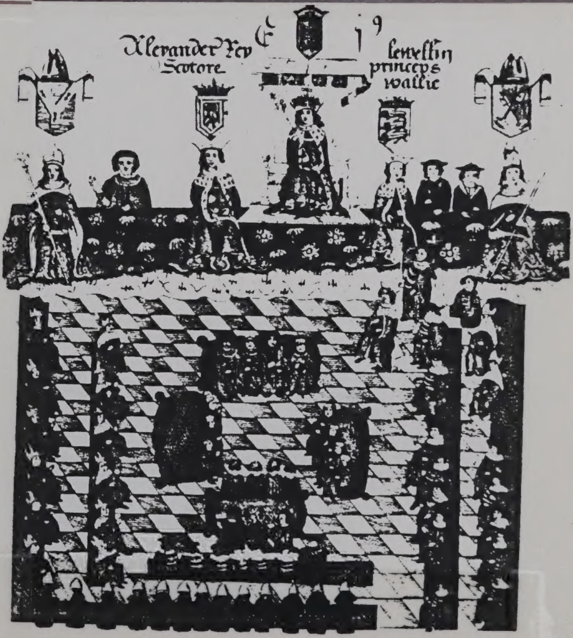
From the start, England wanted to own Scotland. Royal marriages helped maintain the peace for a long time, until little Margaret, "Maid of Norway" (1283-1290) became Queen of Scotland. The child was grand-daughter of King Alexander III of Scotland and a lineal descendant of William the Lion. Alexander named her heiress-presumptive of the throne when she was a year old. He died two years later and she was made queen under the regency. In an attempt to unite the two thrones, King Edward I of England arranged to have her betrothed to his own little son Edward II Prince of Wales, one year younger.

When Queen Margaret was seven years old, it was decided it would be nice for the young couple to meet, and that Margaret should journey to England to see her intended. Enroute she died of mysterious causes. Her death precipitated civil strife in Scotland over who should succeed her on the throne. There was a mad scramble of claimants.

Edward was disappointed that the two kingdoms would not be united by a royal marriage. However, he was not the type to let opportunity pass him by. He appointed himself arbiter in the dispute between the claimants, hearing all the sides. Actually he was searching for one he could dominate. He knew he must act quickly.

One of the claimants was John de Baliol, Jr., scion of an old Anglo-Norman family starting with Guido de Baliol who came with William the Conqueror. They owned huge estates in Durham and Northumberland near the border. John, Sr., founded Baliol College, one of the earliest of those comprising Oxford University. He claimed the throne through his maternal grandmother, who was descended from William the Lion's older brother. If that sounds sort of convoluted, it should be stated that relatives of Scotch monarchs usually did not live long, often meeting mysterious ends. Margaret had been the last of Alexander's descendants.

Left-Statue of Edward I as weeper at a funeral. Below-Edward meets his Parliament (notice Alexander III of Scotland and Llewelyn, Prince of North Wales).



Robert Bruce, Sir William Wallace, and others also were after the throne, but Edward thought Baliol would be the easiest to control, and chose him on the condition that he swear allegiance to Edward as overlord. Baliol was then crowned at Scone Abbey in the year 1292.

Edward I became a busybody, meddling in Scottish concerns. Soon the people chafed under that state of affairs. When the situation became intolerable Baliol revolted. He was imprisoned and compelled to abdicate. Edward then claimed sovereignty over Scotland for himself. He removed the Stone of Destiny on which Scottish kings had always been crowned from the Scone Palace and had it installed in Westminster Abbey.

Balliol died in Castle Gaillard in Normandy in 1299. About the time of his expulsion, it is said that Sir Pierre Dodge of Stopworth, County Chester, England was proclaimed to have shown great valor at the siege of Berwick and Dunbar in the service of King Edward I of England, and that he defeated the local Scottish Baron, Sir Richard Smaylhome of Coldingham, and usurped his lands as spoils of war, in lieu of a salary. He then became "Lord of Podenhughe and Baron of Coldingham." If his coat-of-arms were not awarded to him at that time (probably he already had them) at least they were taken favorable notice of and recorded by the heralds. The Dodge arms are among the oldest in the records.

After that the two countries were at war most of the next three centuries. Evidently Podenhughe was eradicated. Nobody even knows where it was. The following years on both sides of the border were times of extreme poverty. Border area peasants tried to hide from the barons and the soldiers, who "lived off the land" by eating their animals and grain, stealing anything of value.

The trees of the great primeval forests had not yet been destroyed so people hid in them, less afraid of the wild beasts than the even wilder thieves and cut-throats who hid in the thickets. Crime went unpunished. They lived in smoky huts with no chimneys, dirt floors, no sanitation. Other more affluent people lived in cold stone dwellings in elevated locations, too crude to be called castles but at least they had lookouts so they could spot approaching danger. The bleak lives of all the borderers were made worse still by the border wars.

Just so you know, Edward I is considered to have been a pretty good king from the standpoint of England because of the reforms he made, and of the justice system he started. The Welsh might argue about that, and the Scots certainly would. His Scottish victories were only temporary. (The land Baron Peter Dodge won reverted to Scotland.)

In the next generation Robert the Bruce and his son, David, became Scottish kings. However, the puppet Baliols still had not given up. Edward de Baliol, son of the man who died in the castle in Normandy, invaded Scotland as head of the barons displaced by Bruce. He landed at Fife, slew the regent Mar, and was crowned King of Scotland at Scone Abbey.

He did homage to Edward III (grandson of Edward I) to whom he surrendered ancient Lothian. Because he gave up such a vital part of Scotland, Scottish patriots forced him to flee to England for refuge. Edward III forced his restoration. Twenty years later this latest Baliol surrendered the entire Kingdom of Scotland to the English king in return for a pension of L2000. He died at Doncaster, Yorkshire, England, the last of his line.

The English monarch had finally won control of Scotland, but not the hearts of the people. Skirmishes continued long after, but the "evil Baliols" were gone forever.

Some references for background on Sir Peter Dodge and King Edward I are:

Genealogy of the Dodge Family of Essex County, Massachusetts - Professor Joseph Thompson Dodge, 2 Volumes, 1894 & 1898

Ancestors and Descendants of John Dodge 1816-1898 - Marilyn and Phillip Slinger, limited edition 1976

A History of England, Vol. I, Prehistory to 1714 - Clayton Roberts and David Roberts (Prentice Hall)

The Oxford Illustrated History of Britain - edited by Kenneth O. Morgan (Oxford University Press 1984)

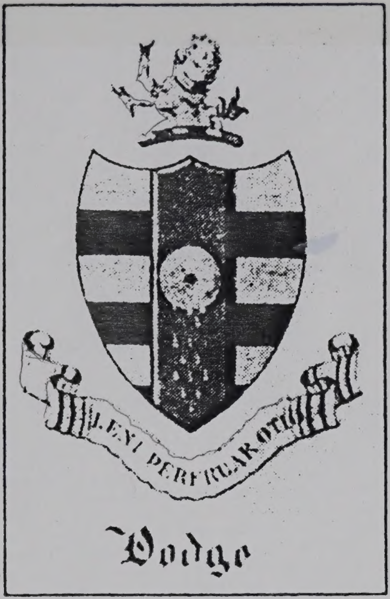
American Peoples Encyclopedia

English Social History - G. M. Trevelyan (Longmans et al, London 1946)

Discovering Britain & Ireland - National Geographic Society, 1985

Poems of Sir Walter Scott

THE DODGE COAT OF ARMS



Arms: Barry of six or and sable; on a pale gules, a woman's dugge distilling drops of milk proper.
Crest: A demi sea-lion azure, collared, maned, and finned or.

The first patent for the Dodge Coat of Arms was written in Norman French. We could not understand it. The photocopy on the next page is an exact translation. Actually the Dodge Arms were being used even before that, and the patent merely confirms them and records the granting of the barony to Sir Pierre Dodge.

The earliest arms were initiated by the military leaders, themselves out of necessity, rather than conferred by some monarch, so that their men could identify them in battle. A man covered head-to-toe with chain mail, or later with plate armor with only a slit to look out of, could not be recognized. They couldn't even see him. (A cloak covering metal also kept one from being cooked alive in the summer sun.) The wearing of the insignia on the knight's cloak and on his shield enabled his troops to follow him easily.

Even in prehistoric times some need for identification was necessary, even if it were only war paint and a few feathers.

First patent Coat of Arms, to Peter Dodge (translated from Norman French:

"To all Men loving Nobleness, Virtue and Chivalry: and to all Ladies, and maidens of honor, of honest deportment and gentilesse, and to each of them:

I, James Hedingley, called Guyen King of Arms: Greeting in Peace and good Speed. Above all, that which appertains to the honorable office of a Herald is first; to record the good fame and renown of all honest and virtuous persons. So, likewise it is suitable and fit, to Give and set in order to such persons, Ensigns and Arms of honor; so, that their noble and valiant deeds of arms, may be preserved in perpetual remembrance.

And therefore having regard to the loyal and Valiant service of PETER DODGE, a Native of the Town of Stopworth, in the County of Chester, Gentlemen: which he has done and performed to my most dear and Soverign Lord, by the Grace of God, King of England, Lord of Ireland, and Duke of Guyen, as well as in several battles against his great enemy and rebel, Baliol, King of Scotland and Vassal of England: as likewise at the seiges of Berwick and Dunbar: there, where, in his duty and valiant courage, he was conspicuous for the advancement of his renown and the good content of my said Soverign Lord, who, in recompence of his said service, and by his Special Grace, Gave to Him, and to his Heirs forever, the Lordship of Podenhughe, with the Barony of Coldingham, in the Kingdom of Scotland.

I have thought it therefore convenient in the performance of my office, to Grant him Arms accordingly, and specially for two reasons: the one for having valiantly served towards the King's peace and the public good: the other, that his heirs and successors by the remembrance of his honour and valor, may be encouraged to follow him, always in like virtue and noble conduct. And for which cause: Know Ye: That I, the aforesaid Guyen, have given and Granted to the said PETER DODGE, that from henceforth, he may carry his Shield: 'Barry of Six: Or and Sable: on a Pale gules, a Woman's Breast Gouttant:' which Arms appear, here in view depicted. I, Guyen King of Arms, have given and Confirmed to the said PETER DODGE and to his heirs forever, to have, enjoy and use the same: and in them to be adorned and clothed, for the advancement of their honour, as well in all Triphumps, Jousts, Tournaments, and other deeds of Arms, as also in Martial matters and enterprises, that may be requiste in peace or in war, in all places and at all times, according to their pleasure, without the impeachment of any person or persons.

In Testimony of which I have here Subjoined my Seal.

Given the 8th day of April, the Thirty Fourth Year of the reign of our said Soverign Lord, Edward, Son of King Henry; after the Conquest, the First of that name."

Second Patent, to John Dodge, Rotham, Kent:

"To all Nobles, and Gentles, Reading Hearing or Seeing these Letters present: Thomas Hawley, as Clarencieux principal Herald and King of Arms, of the South, East and West parts of the Realm of England from the River Trent Southwards, sendeth due and humble Commendation and Greeting; Equity willeth, and Reason ordereth, that men virtuous, and of noble courage be by their merits and good renown rewarded; not only their persons in this moral life, so brief and transitory, but also after them, those that shall be of their body descended: to the end that by their ensample, others may the more enforce themselves, to get the renown of ancient Nobles, in their Lines and posterities, and forasmuch as JOHN DODGE of Rotham in the County of Kent, Gentlemen is descended of a House bearing Arms, as appeareth by an ancient Patent of Arms, granted and given by Jacques (James) Hedingley as Guyen King of Arms the viiith day of April, in the xxxviii (sic) Year of the Reign of King Edward the First, to PETER DODGE, born in Stopworth, in the County of Chester, Gentlemen: then being as more plainly appeareth by the said Patent, of the which the said JOHN is descended. Therefore the said Clarencieux King of Arms by the authority and power annexed, attributed, given and granted by the King, our Sovereign Lord, by express words, under his most noble Great Seal, to me, and to my office of Clarencieux King of Arms; Do Ratify, Set forth, Confirm and Grant to the said JOHN DODGE, Gentlemen, for him, and his posterity the said Arms, with a Crest thereunder in manner as hereafter followeth, that is to say; Gold and Sable, Barry of Six pieces: on a Pale Gules, a Woman's pappe, gouttant, Situ. Upon his Helmet, on a Torse, gold and azure; a Demi-Lyon marym: Sable, langued and armed gules: about his neck a Gemmel Gold, manteld Gules, Dobled, Situ: as more plainly appeareth depicted in the margin. To have and to hold the said Crest and Arms to the said JOHN DODGE, Gentlemen, for him and his posterity, and they it to use and enjoy evermore.

In Witness whereof, I, the said Clarencieux King of Arms have signed this present Confirmation with my hand and set the Seal of my office of Clarencieux King of Arms. Given and Granted at London the xvith day of December, in the xxxviiith year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord Henry the Eighth, by the Grace of God, King of England, France and Ireland. Defender of the Faith and of the Church of England and Ireland, on Earth, the Supreme Head."

Coats of arms enabled the great landholders and their followers to distinguish one another in time of war, or keep the group together during the Crusades. There is no evidence that arms in the early days were granted by the Crown. They were adopted much as a tradesman adopts a trademark, and were regarded as a specie of private property, governed by custom rather than rules.*

The earliest government involvement may have been through legal suits of the type prosecuted nowadays to prevent infringement upon copywrights. The custom came into general use near the end of the 12th century. By 1245 the heralds in England were recording them on ancient rolls, and the Dodge arms were among the earliest recorded. The Heralds' College in England was not involved in issuing royal patents until the reign of Richard III (1483-5) and by then the whole system was an anachronism due to the new invention of gunpowder which somewhat changed the way of waging war.

The newly elaborate coats of arms (not nearly so beautiful as the more simple earlier ones) issued and recorded by the Heralds' College probably came about for two reasons: (1) The monarch need a way to record his potential troops for organizational purposes. (2) During the time of the Tudors especially, selling patents was a way to raise money when royal coffers ran low, as they often did due to excessive costs of the wars they were forever waging. (After the scare from the Spanish Armada, Elizabeth I did achieve a long period of peace, finally.)

A side effect of the granting of coats of arms to newly-rich royal subjects was that the new members of the elite tended to become strong supporters of the monarch. One of the reasons the Tudors were among the more successful monarchs as a class, is their final realization, after centuries of repression of the people by their predecessors, that they could collect more taxes from a prosperous populace. The Tudors encouraged commerce, trade unions and guilds, travel, manufactures, and entrepreneurs of every ilk. Thus encouraged, many became wealthy and wanted to be considered above the crowd. Some very creative pedigrees came about under King Henry VIII - the very king under whom the second patent for the Dodge Coat of Arms was granted to John Dodge, Gentleman, of Rotham, Kent.

Finally we are getting down to the reason the writer is making such a big fuss about this subject. Some people might even say it is irrelevant, but I think as a Dodge descendant, proud of the ancient coat of arms, you may as well be prepared to

---

* Recommended reading:
New England Register 82:146-7 "A Roll of Arms Registered by the Committee on Heraldry of the New England Historic Genealogical Society" - G. Andrews Moriarty

defend it. There are a good many "experts" running around out there, writing or lecturing on the subject, who say they "don't believe in a single one of the ancient patents!" Those people love to point out that under the Tudors the newly-rich could pay an exhorbitant fee and buy a fabulous past, then strut around having suddenly become one of the gentry. And you can say you know that, but the Dodges were using their coat of arms long before the Tudors came to the throne. There was no Heralds' College when those arms were first recorded. They go way, way back and they are real.

Now, having said all that, there were some very curious elements in that first patent. John Dodge, being an intelligent man, undoubtedly realized that. Possibly his centuries-old document had crumbled over the years, or the ink had faded over the years so that it could not be preserved and had to be copied a few times (like some old Greek copies of the Bible, for instance). Perhaps in the copying some comments were preserved in other copies, mistaking them for the original. Maybe there are better explanations not thought of. This writer has absolutely no expertise in that sort of thing whatsover and I can easily spot three problems. Perhaps you can spot others if you study the copy. Three I see are:

(1) The date of the first patent, 8 April 34 Edward I seems to be a mistake. (It translates to the 34th year of the reign of Edward I, or 1272 + 34 = 8 April 1306.) Edward died the next year. That is too late. It probably should have been dated about ten years before that, at the time Baron Peter Dodge won those battles in Scotland. Baliol died imprisoned in the castle in Normandy in 1299, so it had to be a few years before that.

(2) Another curiosity must be the reference to "James Hedingly called Guyen King of Arms." I looked up Guyen (also spelled Guienne) and learned that it used to be a small province in Southwest France (the Bordeaux area) which was part of the kingdom of Edward I of England and Normandy. The arms predated the English Heralds' College. I suppose the inference is that some organization in France did it, instead. Having no way to check that out, it seems as though he was smart to have an English reconfirmation.

(3) Something is wrong with that last line of the old patent. Edward, during his lifetime would not have referred to himself as "...Edward....first of the name." People do not talk like that about themselves. He died the next year, 1307.

Anyway, John Dodge did get a nice new patent during the last year of Henry VIII's life, in 1547. It seems to have been a good move. After all the Dodges were an ancient and honorable family.

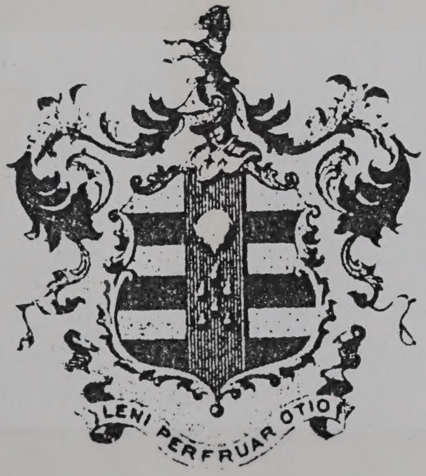
DODGE FAMILY

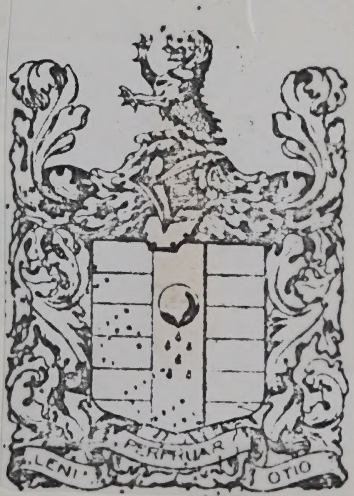
In the genealogy, Dr. J. T. Dodge quotes "Display of Heraldry" by "Old Gwillum," who says in that ancient book the inspiration for our coat of arms was the Bible, 2 Esdras 8 (Apocrypha, King James Version) "For Thous hast commanded out of the parts of the body, that is to say, out of the breasts, milk to be given, which is the fruit of the breasts, that the thing which is fashioned may be nourished for a time; till thous disposest it to thy mercy." The breast was a symbol of Sir Peter's sustenance of the troops, according to Gwillum, (and where the name came from?)

The name Dodge seems to be a shortened version of Doidge, taken from the ancient Anglosaxon word "Dugge," all three of these words pronounced the same way, with a soft "g." The Xeroxed translation of the patent on another page uses the phrase "a woman's pappe" which means exactly the same thing. Perhaps the word "dugge" was obsolete by the time the translation was done. The earliest coats of armor do show a nursing woman's breast with drops of milk coming from it. Later overly-fastidious men tried to change this to a weeping eye, as you see on the cover, but the pictures on this page are thought to be more accurate.

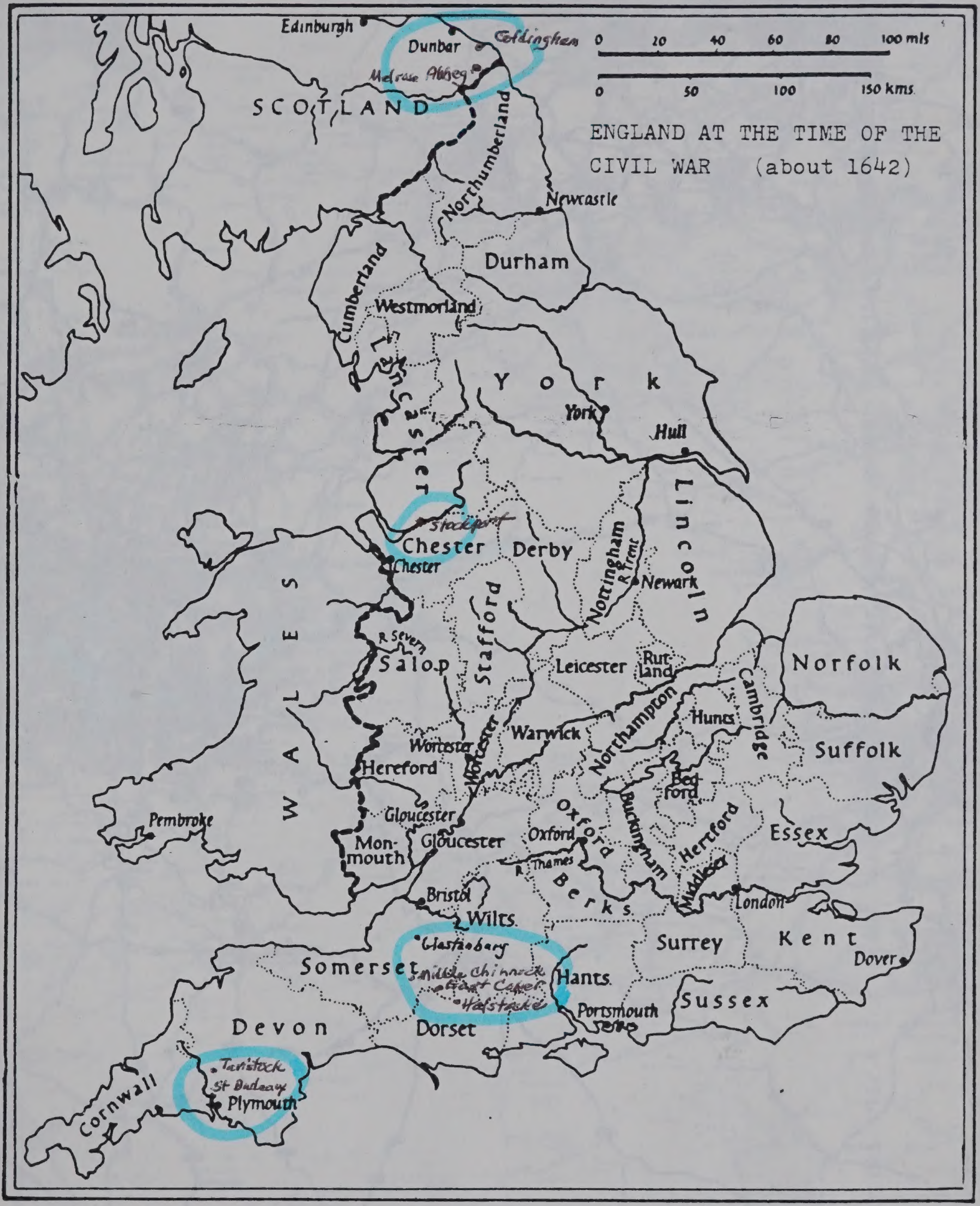
Arms: Barry of six or and sable. On a pale gules, a woman's dugge distilling drops of milk proper.
Upon his helmet (crest): On a torse gold and azure, a demi sea dog marym sable, langued and armed gules. About his neck a gemel gold, manteled gules.

The sea dog meant a beaver but they never drew it very well. The motto, "Leni Perfruar Otio" meant "Let me enjoy gentle ease."





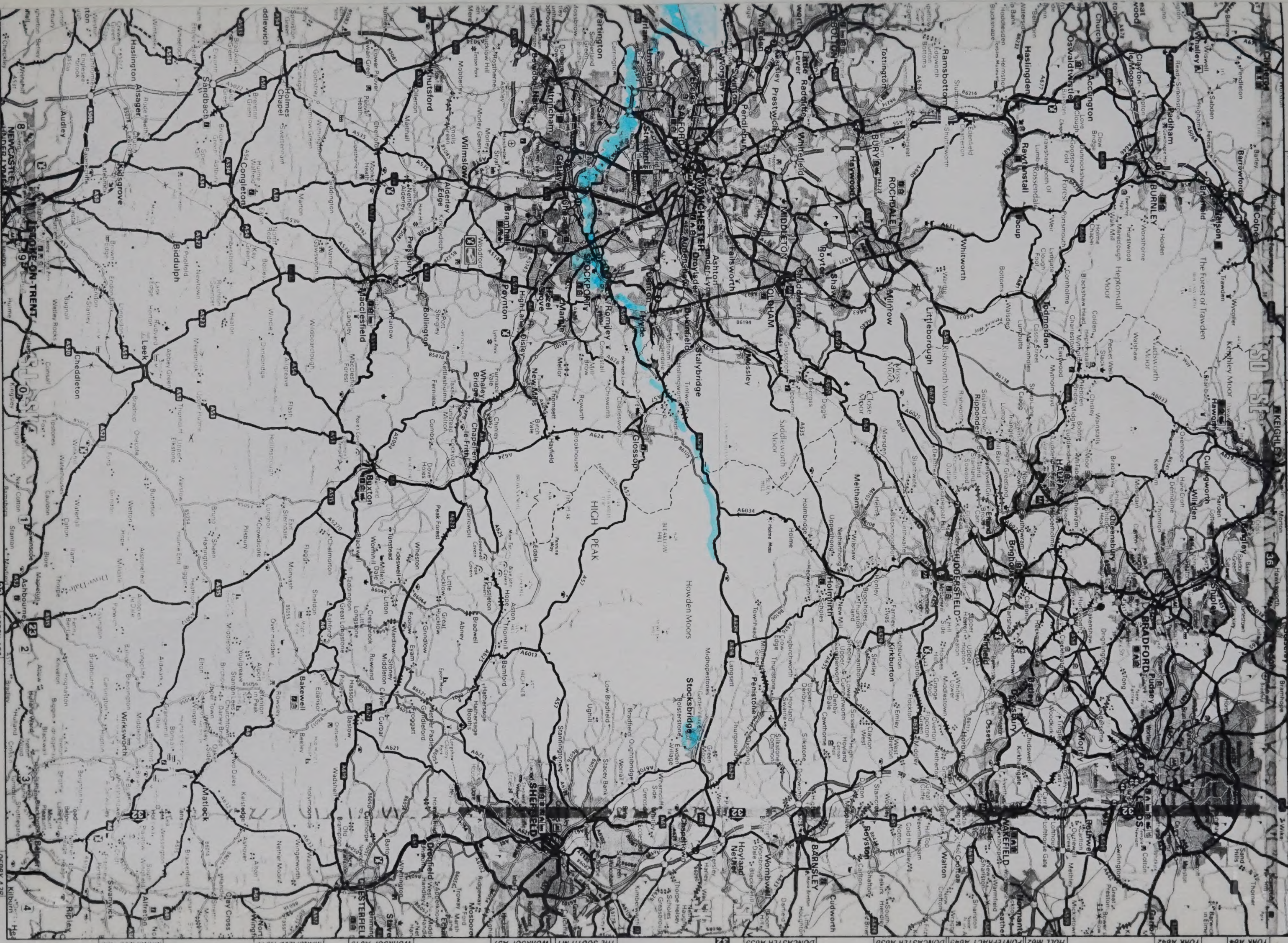
Map showing communities associated with our Dodge Family in England.



ENGLAND AT THE TIME OF THE CIVIL WAR (about 1642)

0 20 40 60 80 100 mls
0 50 100 150 kms
Edinburgh
Dunbar
Coldingham
Melrose Abbey
SCOTLAND
Northumberland
Newcastle
Durham
Cumberland
Westmorland
Lancaster
York
York
Hull
Stockport
Chester
Chester
Derby
Nottingham
R. Trent
Newark
Lincoln
WALES
R. Severn
Salop
Stafford
Leicester
Rutland
Norfolk
Cambridge
Hunts
Northampton
Warwick
Worcester
Worcester
Suffolk
Hereford
Bedford
Buckingham
Hertford
Essex
Oxford
Gloucester
Gloucester
Pembroke
Monmouth
Oxford
R. Thames
Berks
Middlesex
London
Bristol
Wilts
Glastonbury
Surrey
Kent
Dover
Somerset
Middle Chinnock
East Coker
Halstocke
Hants
Sussex
Portsmouth
Devon
Dorset
Tavistock
St Budeaux
Plymouth
Cornwall

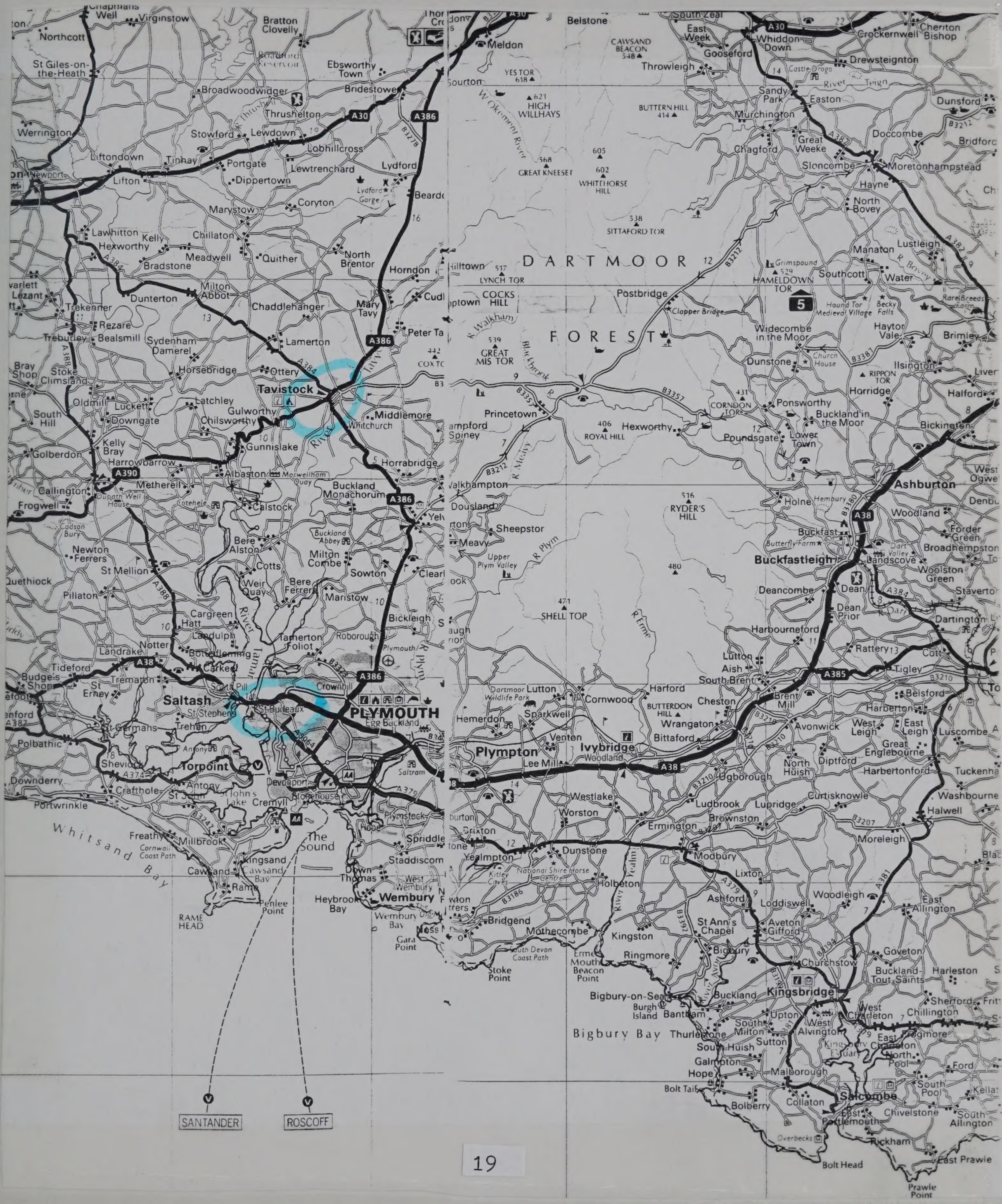
Modern English Highway Map shows Stockport (Stopworth of old) to be presently a Southeast suburb of Manchester. In the olden days it would have been a town in its own right, in a more sparsely populated area.



MANCHESTER
SALFORD
STOCKPORT
OLDHAM
ROCHDALE
BOLTON
BURY
BURNLEY
BRADFORD
HUDDERSFIELD
LEEDS
WAKEFIELD
BARNSLEY
SHEFFIELD
CHESTERFIELD
STOKE-ON-TRENT
Macclesfield
Buxton
Glossop
Congleton
Leek
Ashbourne
Matlock
Bakewell
HIGH PEAK
Howden Moors
Stocksbridge
Penistone
Holmfirth
Halifax
Keighley
Todmorden
Altrincham
Sale
Wilmslow
Knutsford
Sandbach
Biddulph
Hyde
Stalybridge
Ashton-under-Lyne
Middleton
Heywood
Bacup
Rawtenstall
Haslingden
Accrington
Colne
Nelson
STONE A51
BIRMINGHAM M6
STONE A34
STONE A520
DERBY A52
DERBY A38
MANSFIELD A38
MANSFIELD A617
MANSFIELD A619
WORKSOP A619
WORKSOP A57
THE SOUTH M1
DONCASTER A635
DONCASTER A638
PONTEFRACT A645
HULL M62
YORK A642
YORK A64
WETHERBY A58
HARROGATE A61
SKIPTON A660
HARROGATE A658
SKIPTON A650
BRADFORD A6068
KIRKBY LONSDALE A682

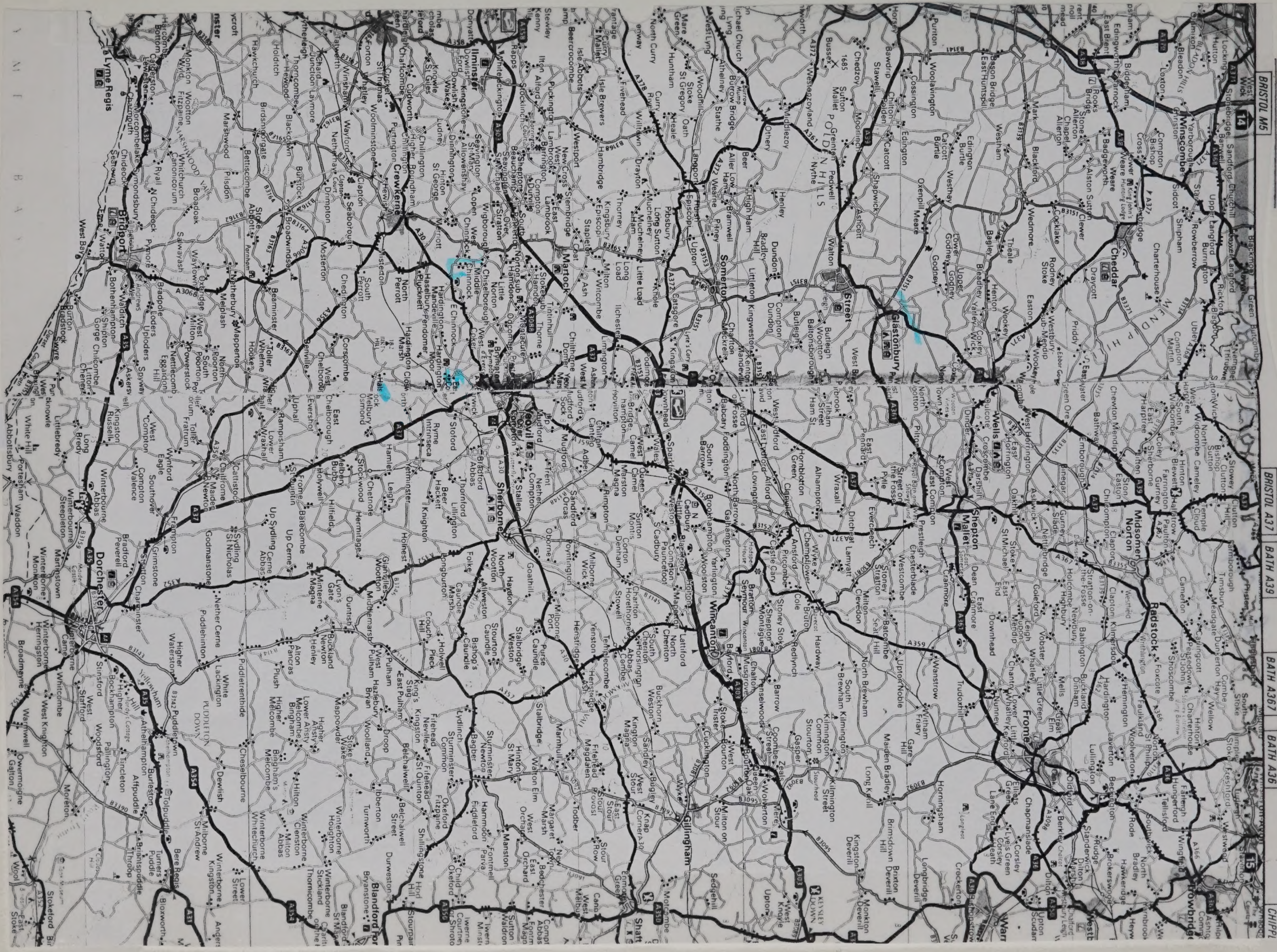
DODGE FAMILY

It is believed that Richard Dodge I was probably born at St. Badeaux, Devonshire, on the Tamar River just west of Plymouth. People who did for sure use the Coat of Arms were then residing at Tavistock, just a few miles north of there.



Northcott
St Giles-on-the-Heath
Virginstow
Bratton Clovelly
Broadwoodwidger
Ebsworthy Town
Bridestowe
Thrushelton
Werrington
Stowford
Lewdown
Lobhillcross
Liftondown
Tinhay
Portgate
Lewtrenchard
Lydford
Lifton
Dippertown
Coryton
Marystow
Lawhitton
Kelly
Chillaton
Hexworthy
Meadwell
Quither
North Brentor
Bradstone
Horndon
Milton Abbot
Dunterton
Chaddlehanger
Mary Tavy
Lezant
Trekenner
Rezare
Treburley
Bealsmill
Sydenham Damerel
Lamerton
Bray Shop
Stoke Climsland
Horsebridge
Ottery
Tavistock
Oldmill
Luckett
Latchley
Gulworthy
Chilsworthy
Middlemore
Whitchurch
South Hill
Downgate
Kelly Bray
Gunnislake
Golberdon
Harrowbarrow
Horrabridge
Callington
Metherell
Albaston
Morwellham Quay
Buckland Monachorum
Frogwell
Calstock
Cadson Bury
Bere Alston
Buckland Abbey
Newton Ferrers
St Mellion
Milton Combe
Cotts
Sowton
Quethiock
Weir Quay
Bere Ferrers
Pillaton
Maristow
Cargreen
Hatt
Landulph
Bickleigh
Tamerton Foliot
Roborough
Notter
Landrake
Botusfleming
Tideford
Carkeel
Budge's Shop
Trematon
St Erney
Crownhill
Saltash
South Pill
St Stephens
St Budeaux
PLYMOUTH
Egg Buckland
St Germans
Trehan
Polbathic
Antony
Sheviock
Torpoint
Devonport
Downderry
Crafthole
St John
St John's Lake
Cremyll
Stonehouse
Saltram
Plymstock
Portwrinkle
Whitsand Bay
Freathy
Millbrook
Cornwall Coast Path
Kingsand
Cawsand
Cawsand Bay
Rame
Penlee Point
RAME HEAD
The Sound
Hooe
Spriddlestone
Staddiscombe
Down Thomas
West Wembury
Wembury
Heybrook Bay
Wembury Bay
Gara Point
SANTANDER
ROSCOFF
Belstone
Meldon
Sourton
CAWSAND BEACON 548
YES TOR 618
HIGH WILLHAYS 621
BUTTERN HILL 414
W. Okement River
GREAT KNEESET 568
WHITEHORSE HILL 602
605
SITTAFORD TOR 538
DARTMOOR FOREST
LYNCH TOR 517
COCKS HILL
R. Walkham
GREAT MIS TOR 539
Blackbrook
Princetown
ROYAL HILL 406
Hexworthy
Walkhampton
Dousland
Sheepstor
Meavy
Upper Plym Valley
R. Plym
R. Meavy
RYDER'S HILL 516
480
SHELL TOP 471
R. Erme
Postbridge
Clapper Bridge
South Zeal
East Week
Whiddon Down
Gooseford
Throwleigh
Crockernwell
Cheriton Bishop
Drewsteignton
Castle Drogo
River Teign
Sandy Park
Easton
Murchington
Dunsford
Chagford
Great Weeke
Doccombe
Bridford
Sloncombe
Moretonhampstead
Hayne
North Bovey
Lustleigh
Manaton
Grimspound
HAMELDOWN TOR 529
Southcott
Water
Hound Tor Medieval Village
Becky Falls
Widecombe in the Moor
Haytor Vale
Brimley
Dunstone
Church House
Ilsington
RIPPON TOR
Horridge
Halford
CORNDON TOR 431
Ponsworthy
Buckland in the Moor
Poundsgate
Lower Town
Bickington
Ashburton
Holne
Hembury
Woodland
Buckfast
Butterfly Farm
Buckfastleigh
Dart Valley
Landscove
Woolston Green
Forder Green
Broadhempston
Deancombe
Dean
Dean Prior
Staverton
Harbourneford
Dartington
Rattery
Lutton
Aish
South Brent
Tigley
Brent Mill
Belsford
Harford
Cheston
Harberton
Dartmoor Wildlife Park
Lutton
Cornwood
BUTTERDON HILL
Wrangaton
Hemerdon
Sparkwell
Avonwick
West Leigh
East Leigh
Luscombe
Venton
Ivybridge
Bittaford
Great Englebourne
Plympton
Lee Mill
Woodland
North Huish
Diptford
Harbertonford
Tuckenhay
Ugborough
Westlake
Ludbrook
Lupridge
Curtisknowle
Washbourne
Halwell
Worston
Brownston
Moreleigh
Ermington
Yealmpton
Dunstone
Modbury
Lixton
National Shire Horse Centre
Kitley Caves
Holbeton
River Yealm
Ashford
Loddiswell
Woodleigh
East Allington
Bridgend
Mothecombe
Kingston
St Ann's Chapel
Aveton Gifford
South Devon Coast Path
Erme Mouth
Beacon Point
Ringmore
Bigbury
Goveton
Stoke Point
Churchstow
Buckland-Tout-Saints
Harleston
Bigbury-on-Sea
Burgh Island
Bantham
Buckland
Kingsbridge
Sherford
Chillington
Bigbury Bay
Thurlestone
South Milton
Upton
West Alvington
West Charleton
Frogmore
South Huish
Sutton
Kingsbridge Estuary
East Charleton
North Pool
Galmpton
Hope
Malborough
Ford
Bolt Tail
Collaton
Salcombe
South Pool
Kellaton
Bolberry
East Portlemouth
Chivelstone
South Allington
Overbecks
Rickham
Bolt Head
East Prawle
Prawle Point

Little section of modern English highway map of Somerset/Dorchestershire shows Glastonbury, Middle Chinnock, --East Coker and Halstocke, south of Yeovil, are unfortunately in the crease.



THE DODGE FAMILY IN ENGLAND

Dr. Dodge wrote, "Something may be expected in relation to our ancestors in England. We have heard considerable about a grant of arms to Peter Dodge of Stopworth, county of Chester, in 1306, and a later patent to John Dodge of Rotham, in the county of Kent, in 1546, in which he is declared to be descended from the Peter Dodge born in Stopworth. These patents are on record in the College of Arms, London."

The town of Stopworth seems to have been called Stopford by 1538, Stopforthe by 1545, and Stockport by 1644 or sooner. Stockport, a river port as the name indicates, is presently a southeast suburb of Manchester, in far southern Lancashire, not Cheshire. The place didn't move, of course. The boundary did.

Dr. Dodge consulted a book, "Earwaker's History of East Cheshire," written in 1877, which seems to have yielded the following information about the Dodges of old. The name was first spelled "Dogge" (with a soft "g") and sometimes Doggeson. One of the earliest references to the family was the record of a very curious grant of arms to Peter Dodge, of Stockport, so early as 34th Edward I, or 1306. From that date on down there are many references to the family, mostly in Stockport and Offerton as well as Cheadle, Marple, etc.

In 1384-5 Robert, son of Robert Doggeson, and in 1390 his son William held lands in Stockport. William Dodge is mentioned in 1408. In 1422-3 William Doggeson of Stockport held lands in the Hillgate. In 1428 he is called William Dogge, mercer (merchant) of Stockport. After that the name became common. Some of them were mayors of the city.

The historian (I could not tell whether Dr. Dodge meant himself of Earwaker) said he had a pedigree of that family going back a century before that, but he would not print it because he had no means to verify it. It would be nice if he had, because maybe someone else could have attempted to do so. After that he found the names of a good many Dodges who were active in charity work, especially for children. They donated land, the income from which was to support poor children and educate them, and assisted in apprenticing them to learn trades for a livelihood. Among those acting as Charity Commissioners in the years indicated were men named William Dodge--in 1433-4, 1454, 1475, 1483-4-5-6 and 1499-1500. Dodges with other first names served in that capacity later.

A William Dodge owned land in Stockport in 1422-3 and he as well as Ralph Dodge were grantees of land in 1437-8. By 1511 Rundle Dodge was a lessee and in 1577 George Dodge was a testator.

An area newspaper said a Dodge family held a small property in Offerton in the reign of Elizabeth I and were of Holliday Hill in that township for quite some time. Another hamlet in Offerton was called Dodge Fold, named for yeomen members of the family. (Since I do not see Offerton on the map, maybe the burgeoning sprawl of Manchester swallowed it up??) All of these places were in the old "county of Chester."

Since the name, Dodge--in whichever spelling--is so uncommon in England, it is pretty obvious all those people just mentioned were related to the venerable old baron. Likely that first Robert Doggeson (Dogge's son) who had the son Robert was Sir Peter's son or grandson, though it might be hard to prove it. At least it does show that the cradle of the Dodge family was indeed in Cheshire. It seems as though some of them might still be thereabouts. Since under the old English primogeniture system the manor and title usually went to the oldest living son, and especially if some families were large, it is only natural that they should disperse. Families who could afford it attempted to provide younger sons with good educations or apprenticeships in profitable trades so they could have bright futures, often leading them far away.

By the time the Tudors were on the throne many of the more prosperous families had their "London branch," for the sake of trade or to provide access to government circles. That would explain how the Rotham, Kent, family got from Stockport to London and thence to nearby Kent, where lived the John Dodge of the second patent of arms. Circumstantial evidence to support this conclusion may be found in a list of "marriages sanctioned by the Bishop of London," wherein it is stated that a certain Francis Champney, son or Sir John Champney, who died in 1556, married Mary, daughter of Edward Dodge of "Wrotham," Kent. That family would have been surnamed Champney, not Dodge, but this does prove the London-Kent connection.

How our Dodges migrated all the way from Stockport to Tavistock or Glastonbury is hard to know, or whether the move was by land or by water. Since some of the very early Dodges were mercers (merchants) living near a seaport, some of it could have been the result of trade by water routes. The genealogist carried on a correspondence with a man of his day, surgeon Dr. Maurice Doige, who was entitled to use the Dodge arms. He claimed descent from the Cheshire branch but lived in the Tavistock, Devonshire, area. He said most people in England spelled the name as he did. He said some of his ancestors took the motto, "Leni Perfruar Otio" ("Let me enjoy gentle ease") so literally that there was little of the fortune for the later Dodges to enjoy ease with.

DODGE FAMILY

John Dodge (sometimes spelled Doidge) was born in Southwest England during the middle of the reign of Queen Elizabeth I. Probable relatives, using the Dodge coat of arms, were living in the vicinity of Tavistock, Devonshire. Around the turn of the century 1600 A.D. or so, John married Margery (   ) whose maiden name and birthplace have not yet been discovered. Likely the wedding took place in her parish church, wherever that was. There is evidence this couple lived a while at St. Badeaux, Devonshire (now a western suburb of Plymouth) a seaport on the Tamar River about 15 miles or so south of Tavistock.

Other Dodges, probably older sons benefiting from the ancient laws of primogeniture under which the oldest living son inherited the manor house and all the perks of gentle birth, did remain "seated" in the Tavistock area for several hundred years after that, long after our Dodges were in America. They spelled the name "Doidge" and maybe some of them were a little extravagant, for eventually the Duke of Bedford bought the manor house and they dispersed--but even so, some of them continued to use the Dodge coat of arms. It is said that the branch of John Dodge of Wrotham, Kent, who had the patent reconfirmed, died out for lack of male heirs to carry on the name. All of those people claimed descent from the Cheshire branch and from the revered old baron Sir Peter Dodge.

John Dodge was not an eldest son of an eldest son, but he was prominent in his community, called "Mister," a title of honor in those days claimed by perhaps 1% of the population, including the sons, particularly William, after they settled in the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

The family seems to have been well off, and to have had a large flock of sheep. During Elizabeth's reign, England's greatest source of wealth was still derived from the woollen and cloth industries. Indirect written evidence also shows that they were painstaking yeoman farmers owning horses and oxen. (Horses for riding and oxen for farm work?) By the time John made his will near the close of his life, the parents were living in Middlechinnock, Somersetshire, and owned other property at Halstock, Dorsetshire very close by. Both places are just a little south of Yeovil. By then the oldest son, Richard, was already living near Glastonbury 25 miles or so north of them. All of these places are pretty far from Plymouth. It does show that if they could move all that way in one generation it would be no trick at all to migrate from Stockport, Cheshire, in over 300 years.

John Dodge of Middlechinnock, Somersetshire, England, made his will on 2 April 1635. It was proved 15 October 1635, so he must have died in late summer or early fall. Abstract of his will, which was printed over a hundred years ago (1890) in the New England Historic and Genealogic Register, follows on the next page.

"To be buried in churchyard there. To the church 10 shillings. The same to the poor of the parish. To the minister for preaching funeral sermon, ten shillings. Wife Margery shall hold and enjoy one tenement in the parish of Halstocke, Co. Dorset, containing by estimation ten acres more or less, during her life natural if my sons Michael and William shall happen so long to live. To Wife Margery forty pounds and the bed that I now lie in and the bedstead and all things belonging thereunto. I give and bequeath unto her so much of my other household stuff as she shall think most needful and useful for her.
Item. I give and bequeath unto my son William forty pounds more, over and above that portion which I have already given him. To my son Richard one sheep and to take his choice in my whole flock; and to John son of said Richard forty shillings. To Mary my daughter twenty shillings and to her son John twenty shillings. And my will is that all these goods shall be delivered half a year after my decease.
Item. All the rest of my goods unmentioned I give and bequeath unto my son Michael whom I make and ordain the executor of this my last will and testament."

The witnesses were George Parsons, clerk; William Dodge, William Templeman. It would appear that John was also a Puritan, for he asked for a minister to preach at his funeral, not an Anglican Mass. When Mother Margery died, or any copy of a will evidently have not been found.

Children of John and Margery (?) Dodge:

Richard	(ca 1602-15 Jun 1672) m.	ca 1631 Edith (______)(1603-1678)
William	(1604-1692)	ca 1635 Elizabeth(___)( )
Michael	(16)	?
Mary	(16)	?

All we know about Mary is that she had a son John and that she and the son were living in England when her father died.
Michael lived and died in East Coker, Somerset, was church warden, and had five children. His son William came to Beverly, Massachusetts Bay Colony before 1665 when he married Elizabeth Haskell there.
He was given the nickname, "Coker William" to distinguish him from "Farmer William," thus avoiding confusion. When his Uncle William died in 1692, Coker William demanded that the heirs give him 15 acres of land which he said his uncle had promised him if he would come to New England. They claimed this was the first they had heard of that and wondered why he had waited 27 years to mention it. Perhaps he thought the land would be willed to him.

The heirs were not sure what to think. For the sake of their father's good name they compromised and gave him half of what he asked, or 7½ acres of land.

DODGE FAMILY IN AMERICA

In 1629 a heavily-loaded fleet of five sailing ships left England for the avowed purpose of establishing a colony in the New World. One of them, called the Lyon's Whelpe, carried a young man, William Dodge, brother of our ancestor, Richard Dodge I.

Great care had been taken by the London Company to make this venture a success. Five years earlier the Plymouth Company (of Mayflower fame) had failed in their attempt to set up a colony at Cape Ann, for by 1626 most of those settlers had gone on to other places, some even to Virginia or back to England, leaving few there besides a grieving Reverend John White, who ministered to the Indians at "Naimkeke" (or Naumkeag, later renamed Salem).

This time the London Company worked hard to have ample provisions and otherwise lay firm groundwork to ensure success. During preparations they wrote to Governor Endicott, requesting that he "....show all lawful favor and respect unto the planters that come over in the Lyon's Whelpe out of the counties of Dorset and Somerset; appoint unto William Dodge, a skilful and painful husbandman, the charge of a team of horses..." There were five vessels in "The Fleet."

Talbot - 300 tons, 10 guns, 30 men, 100 planters, 6 goats, 5 pieces of ordnance, 12 months' food--mostly grain, pease, etc.
Lyon's Whelpe (also called George Bonaventure) - 120 tons, 8 guns, many mariners, 40 planters, 4 goats, provisions - 125 people total
Four Sisters - 300 tons, many "cattell", passengers and provisions.
Mayflower - Yes, the same! Freighted with emigrants and supplies.
George - 300 tons, 20 guns, 30 men, cattell, 12 mates, 30 kyne, some goats, 52 planters and many provisions.

Emigrants added up to 60 married and unmarried females, 26 children, and 300 men, 386 persons in all, with supplies of food, arms, tools, and 140 head of cattle (and obviously horses and other animals). The Lyons Whelpe loaded up with provisions in the Thames in April. By May 8 it docked at Yarmouth, a port on the NW part of the Isle of Wight--that is probably where the passengers from the West of England boarded. By May 11th they were on their way, and arrived at Naumkeag on 29 June 1620 according to the calendar, Old Style.

William settled in what is now called Beverly but until 1668 was part of Salem called the Bass River side, separated from Salem proper by the Bay. His name does not appear on the records of the first church of Salem; but it is said they did not require membership as a prerequisite for voting rights, grants of land or public office; he did join the second church many years later. Out of a list of the first 400 early settlers of Salem, only seven were called by the respectful title of "Mister," and he was one of them. That custom did not change for at least two more generations, and then only gradually. William was the trailblazer of the family. He was sought after as an extremely desirable settler and served in many public offices and responsibilities, seemingly always elected and always in demand.

William and Elizabeth Dodge had four children:

- Capt. John who married Sarah Proctor. 7 children
- Capt. William who married 1-widow Mary (Conant) Balch. 2-widow Joanna (Hale) Larkin. 3-widow Mary Creatty. He was a hero in defense against Indian massacres at Bloody Brook. 9 children.
- Hannah who married 1-Samuel Porter, a seaman who died aboard a ship bound for the Barbadoes leaving her with a baby son. 2-Thomas Woodbury, a farmer. 9 children
- Probably Josiah Dodge who was killed by the Indians in King Phillips War.

Page 9 of the Dodge Genealogy says the following: "The fact that William Dodge came to Salem nine years earlier than Richard gave him more prominence in the community, but the same fact implies a greater degree of enterprise, if not ability, than was shown by the act of following where another had led the way. Hence, William has sometimes been called the father of all the Dodges. The records, however, indicate that the descendants of Richard Dodge are much more numerous than those of William, as might be expected since the latter left but two sons while Richard left five."

That can be taken for what it is worth. Probably they simply had different priorities, with the gregarious William liking politics and the more retiring Richard loving the land and peace and quiet. William's wife Elizabeth seems to have been religious but he did not join until the second church was built a great many years later. Richard and Edith joined very soon and were liberal contributors. But then, Richard was financially very prosperous. He also placed great value in education, for when it was time to build Harvard College he pledged ten times more than anyone else in his vicinity.

It appears that earlier generations enjoyed contrasting the brothers. Another of those colorful traditions some descendants held was that William was tall in person with black hair and a dark complexion. Richard's descendants are of sandy hair and complexion, or "speckled," and John's descendants are of light hair and complexion, or blonds. Since the person who related that thought William was married in Lancashire, that might someday provide a link between our branch and the Stockport people, if it can be substantiated.

Because most early immigrants to Massachusetts arrived in the 23-year period before Cromwell came to power in 1643, those of us with New England ancestry can usually trace it back to a very few very prolific families. The thin, rock-strewn soils of New England with their short growing seasons did produce a bumper crop of one thing--babies. The typical family had about a dozen. Many infants did not survive, but those who did were amazingly healthy.

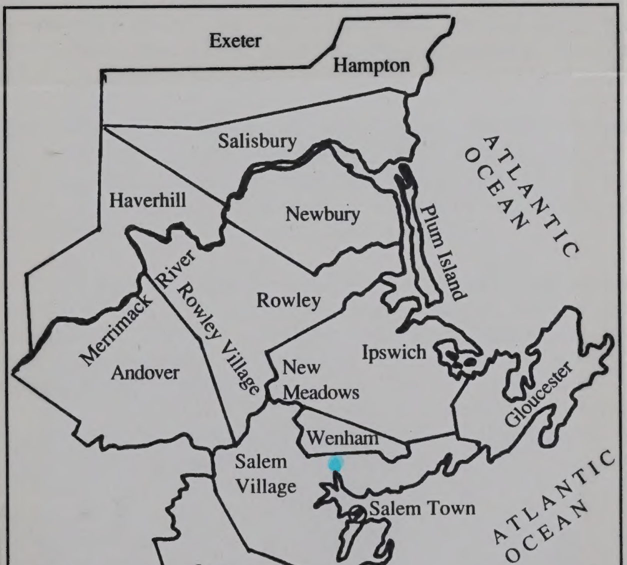
The surname "Dodge" with all its various spellings still is not very common in England. As we have seen "Coker William" had no sons who lived. Nearly everyone of the surname in America today is sprung from the two brothers Richard and William, and from a Tristan Dodge who settled early on Block Island in the state of Rhode Island. Tristan seems not to have been from Southwest England but he, also, claimed descent from the early Cheshire branch.

Seems like everyone wants to claim Baron Peter Dodge!

Despite all the speculation in print about the personalities of Richard and William Dodge, the known facts point to one inescapable conclusion--theirs was a close-knit family and the brothers cared very much about each other's welfare. One wonders whether, looking down from their Puritan heaven, they would approve of all the stories contrasting them. Somehow I doubt it.

Some of the source material used so far includes the following:

New England Register 44:297 - Henry F. Waters "Gleanings in England"
"Ancestors & Descendants of John Dodge 1816-1898" - Marilyn and Phillip Slinger (1978)
"Genealogy of the Dodge Family of Essex County, MA" - Joseph Thompson Dodge, Ph. D. (2 Volumes 1894 and 1898)


Exeter
Hampton
Salisbury
Haverhill
Newbury
Plum Island
ATLANTIC OCEAN
Merrimack River
Rowley Village
Rowley
Andover
New Meadows
Ipswich
Gloucester
Wenham
Salem Village
Salem Town
ATLANTIC OCEAN
Lynn
10 miles

Essex County and the towns of Hampton and Exeter in 1643.

Richard Dodge[1] was born about 1602 or earlier, probably at St. Badeaux, Devonshire. It may be that he was a little older than is generally assumed, as one of the later discoveries was that in 1616 he went from St. Badeaux to East Coker, Somerset, but since the writer does not know whether he was taken there as an adolescent or moved there as an adult, will leave the story stand as earlier reported.

About 1626 or 7 he married Edith ( ) whose last name has not been learned. The marriage most likely took place in her home parish, probably in Southeast Somerset or a short distance away in Dorsetshire, for they lived near the boundary and the family also had property there. It would be awfully nice to know more about her.

In 1633 he was admitted as a "tenant by entry-hold"(which I take to be a very long-term lease, perhaps a hundred years? if not an outright purchase) of lands in Helyar Manor at East Coker which had come into possession of a Helyar family in 1616. Richard farmed at the manor for about five years. He still retained that property or other property in England and did not sell it when he sailed for New England; for he drew rents from lands in England all the rest of his life, willing that revenue to Edith when he passed away.

Records have been found of the birth of Michael's and Richard's first four children, two of whom died as infants in East Coker. The records do not mention William but would not be expected to if he was born and married elsewhere, leaving the area when he was about 21.

It can be assumed that Richard had already received his portion of his father's estate while his parents were living, probably about the time of his marriage, since he received only the token bequest of a sheep in the will. Michael, because he stayed in England, naturally received the bulk of the estate.

The story goes that Richard, Edith, and little ones John and Mary, showed up in 1638 on his brother William's doorstep in Salem "desiring accommodation," having somehow managed to cross the ocean without royal permission inasmuch as, at that particular time, the King was forbidding emigration.

However, there's another conflicting and romantic story that when brother William was about 21 he came over in the Lyon's Whelpe to see how he liked living in the new colony. He liked it fine, but was lonely and found that desirable wives were in very short supply. Besides, he wanted an inheritance from his father, so he went back to England, told his father he was determined to live in America, and asked for a present. His father John said, "Get married and I will give it to you."

William wanted a wife, anyway, so he tried but met with two refusals. Few young ladies wanted to leave the comfortable life of Somersetshire for a rugged life in the distant wilderness. He finally met Elizabeth (last name unknown, not Haskell) and they fell in love. He got his wedding present, a fine pair of bulls which came in very handy in New England. Adding some plausibility to that story is the signature of a William Dodge as witness to his father's will in 1635.

The story continues that when William returned to Naumkeag (Salem) he brought back with him his brothers Richard and John. If the word "brother" is interpreted in an ancient way as "kinsman" that makes sense. The only possible John Dodge they could have meant was Richard's small son, born in England in 1631, named for his grandfather.

The reason Richard Dodge, at least 36 years old, and his family left their comfortable manor home in England may never be known for sure. Likely they were under pressure because of their Puritan religion. At any rate we learn that the ship they came in arrived in July, 1638. Contrary to the popular impression, others came at the same time, "requesting accommodation." Translation: requesting grants of land on which to build homes, and farmland. That meeting of the town fathers did not occur until 29 October, so we are told that they stayed on land belonging to his brother for the rest of summer and early fall, which makes sense.

Sidney Perley, in his Salem history, tells about the others who were fellow petitioners at that meeting. The reader will probably enjoy hearing a little about that. One newcomer was George Curwin, a man of education and property born 1610 in Cumberland County, England. He and his wife and two children were admitted. He wore a seal ring cut with his coat of arms. He became a merchant and his son, Hon. Jonathan Corwin, merchant, was one of the judges at the later Salem witchcraft trials. A grandson, Capt. George Corwin, was a sheriff who executed the witches.

Also requesting admittance was Robert Buffum, about the same age, many of whose descendants later became Quakers. Also Mark Vermais and the widow Alice Vermais, probably his mother. (Perley did not say so but the Vermais family was probably related to Mrs. Joanna Towne whose daughters, Rebecca Nurse, Mary Easty and Sarah Cloyce, were accused of witchcraft and the first two executed. Over a hundred years later Richard Dodge V married Mrs. Towne's descendant, Lois Towne.)

The other petitioners are listed as Robert Penn, Joshua Verin, Thomas Truslar, and Henry Cooke, a butcher.

So you can see that this "request for accommodation" was not an isolated event as some of the Dodge genealogies make it out to be. During that meeting he was officially received as an inhabitant. Very shortly after he received ten acres. Within a month he and

his brother were granted 80 acres more. In three years they gave him 40 acres more. In June 1646 during a special ceremony he was made a freeman. Later he purchased another 40 acres from Roger Haskel, a relative of "Coker William's" wife.

The land the family settled on was called "Dodge's Row" in East Wenham. They later donated land there for a village cemetery. Perley says the house was not really large, being two stories high and having a parlor, and that it stood on the south side of what is now Dodge Street in East Beverly (boundaries having changed) It was about a quarter of a mile easterly of Alewive Brook. He says the house went to son Joseph^2 and then Dr. Joseph^3 and then it burned 29 May 1736. That would be a discrepancy with other reports, which say the property has remained in possession of male Dodge descendants ever since over these many centuries "although the house has greatly changed with a one-time cabinet shop turned around and enclosed within a dwelling"--except that neither report says the original structure is still standing. However, the house is at the original site. The house now there is ancient,

Richard had a very high regard for the value of education. When a collection was taken to raise money to build Harvard College, he gave ten times as much as the next largest contributor in his area.

After a quiet but financially successful life this devout and generous Puritan ancestor, Richard Dodge I, died on 15 June 1671, age about 69 years or perhaps more. He left a large estate of L1764 s2 but more importantly seven fine living children to produce future Dodges. Edith survived him, living another seven years to 27 June 1678, age 75.

Photocopies of their wills are included in an appendix. They were buried in that same cemetery that he donated to the town. However, in 1962 a Dodge descendant living in New England visited the cemetery and found no gravestones then marking their graves. He and his helpers cleaned up the old part of the cemetery and treated the markers that were there to make them readable. He decorated the Revolutionary War veterans' graves, and had a huge rock brought in, inscribed as a memorial. For anyone who would like to visit, it is Lot #63.

Children of Richard I and Edith Dodge:

Richard	1628- died young		
Margery	1630-12 Feb 1631		(age 4 months)
(Lt)John	1631-11 Oct 1711	m. ca 1660	Sarah (______)(1646-1706)
Mary	1632-18 Aug 1710	1653	Zechary Herick (1636-1695)
+RichardII	1642-13 Apr 1705	23 Feb 1667	Mary Eaton (?1645-1716)
Sarah	1644- ? 1726	Jul 1667	Peter Woodberry (1640-1709)
Samuel	1645- 4 Dec 1705	ca 1667	Mary Parker (1647-1717)
Joseph	1651- 1 Aug 1716	21 Feb 1671	Sarah Eaton (1650-1714)
Edward	165--14 Feb 1727	30 Apr 1673	Mary Haskell (1660-1737)

The first four of the children were born in East Coker, Somersetshire. The oldest two died very young. John and Mary came with their parents on the sailing ship from England. The rest of them were born in Salem (or North Beverly dependent on boundary changes). They all settled near the parents. As you can see from the father's will, he provided well for their mother, who lived with two amicable youngest sons, Joseph and Edward who shared the home estate, valued at about L1000, with their mother until she died seven years later. The other sons each received farms worth at least L100 and the daughters, who married neighbors, were given nice doweries.

Since this account follows our ancestor, Richard II, thumbnail sketches about his brothers and sisters are below:

Probably because he was the oldest second-generation Dodge in this country and the only male born in England, a great deal was expected of John. At any rate, he seems to have taken after his Uncle William in his willingness to serve the public and was on many committees, etc., a list of which took two full pages. No wonder generations to come were confused, considering him one of the immigrant brothers.

John settled in Beverly and built a saw mill and (probably) the grist mill at Wenham Neck which was in use until 1822. He received 80 acres of land near his mill from his father, and another 5 acres of meadow. Besides being a deputy to the court and selectman, he was a military lieutenant, probably in 1683, age about 53, when he became standard bearer of a squadron of troops from Beverly and Wenham. No combat duty was mentioned, or else the writer did not find it.

It is really too bad that the last name of John's wife, Sarah, has not been found. She was a spirited lady who fought for what she believed in. The town of Wenham annexed their home in North Beverly much against the family's wishes and those of most of their close neighbors. They protested by refusing to pay taxes to Wenham. Troopers from Wenham went to their home while her husband was away and seized pewter platters and other valuable items for taxes over the objection and resistance of Sarah, whom they threw down and hurt her. A neighbor and his son tripped them up and so saved her. A trooper, Thomas Hobbs, age 48, later testified, "She took me by the hair of the head and did strike me." A brother-in-law, Zachariah Herick, saw her the night of the fray and said she was much bruised, that they had struck her a blow to the head of which she much complained. The couple had 8 children.

Mary Dodge may have been the Marie who was baptized in England in 1635, though her reputed age at death in 1710 was given as 78 years. Her husband, Zachary Herrick, was the man present after the fray at his sister-in-law's house. The couple lived on a farm given to him by his father, at Birch Plain. He was a carpenter. He had some slight connection with the witchcraft delusion of 1692. The couple had 8 children.

DODGE FAMILY

Sarah Dodge married Deacon Peter Woodbury as his second wife and raised his two-year old son as well as the nine children they had together. Their home on the street called Dodge's Row, was still in possession of the Woodbury family up to this present century.

Very little has been reported about Samuel except that he appears to have been a prosperous farmer. They had 9 children.

Edward Dodge is described as having had a kindly disposition. He served on various committees, was at times constable, tax collector, highway surveyor, selectman and so on. His wife, Mary Haskell, was related to "Coker William's" wife. 8 children.

Joseph married Sarah Eaton of Reading, undoubtedly at least a distant relative of his brother, Richard's wife, our ancestor Mary (Eaton) Dodge. Joseph and Edward jointly inherited their father's homestead which they divided amicably, in writing. His son, Dr. Joseph Dodge, inherited the house part which is still in the possession of his descendants. The couple had 10 children.

Some references for sections on William and Richard Dodge[1] are:

Town Records of Salem, Vol I

New England Historic and Genealogical Register XV:254-5,
XLIV:297-8, XLVI:383-91

Vital Records (separately) of Wenham, Beverly, Reading MA

Essex Probate Court Records II:230-3, III:198-9
Quarterly " " I:96, IV:404-6, 452

Pope's Pioneers p.141 - Charles H. Pope, Gen Pub Co. 1900, repr 1991
(plus other pages for non-Dodge connecting lines)

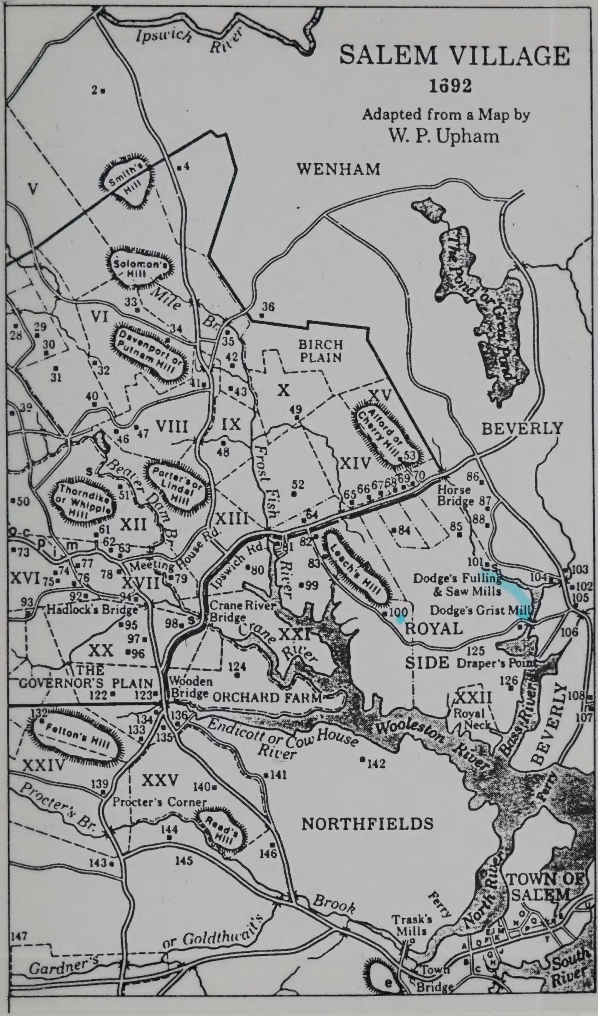
Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines - Mary Walton Ferris

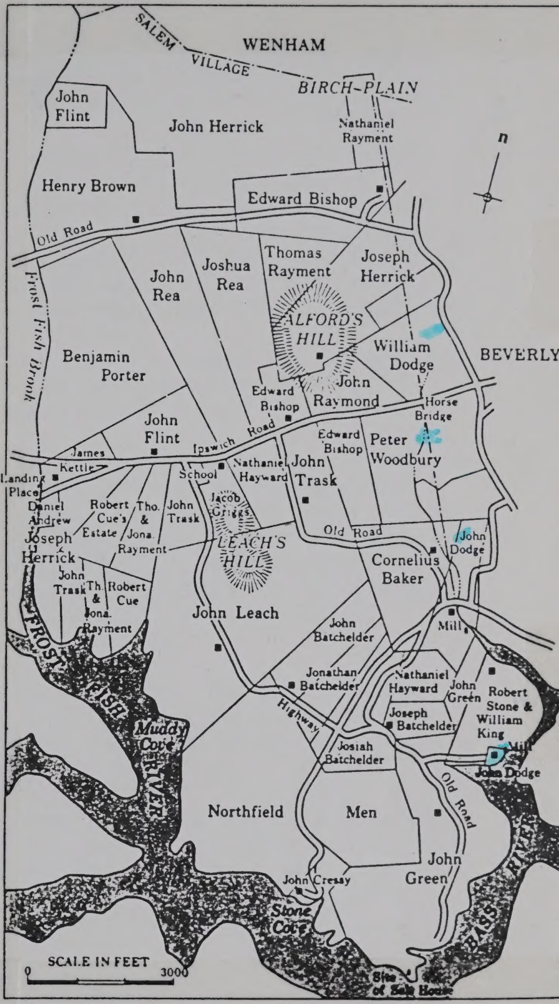
History of Salem Vol II:38-45, etc. - Sidney Perley

New England Marriages Prior to 1700 - Clarence Almon Torrey, GPC 1985

Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620-1700 - Frank R. Holmes

Search for the Passengers of the Mary & John 1630, Vol. 18-West Country Ancestries pages 43-5, etc. - Mary & John Clearing House, Toledo, Ohio, 1992


SALEM VILLAGE
1692
Adapted from a Map by
W. P. Upham
Ipswich River
WENHAM
BIRCH PLAIN
BEVERLY
Smith's Hill
Solomon's Hill
Mile Br.
Davenport or Putnam Hill
Porter's or Lindal Hill
Thorndike or Whipple Hill
Beaver Dam Br.
Alford or Cherry Hill
Leach's Hill
The Pond or Great Pond
Frost Fish River
Ipswich Rd.
Meeting House Rd.
Horse Bridge
Dodge's Fulling & Saw Mills
Dodge's Grist Mill
ROYAL SIDE
Draper's Point
Crane River Bridge
Crane River
Hadlock's Bridge
THE GOVERNOR'S PLAIN
Wooden Bridge
ORCHARD FARM
Endicott or Cow House River
Wooleston River
Royal Neck
Bass River
Felton's Hill
Procter's Br.
Procter's Corner
Reed's Hill
NORTHFIELDS
Brook
or Goldthwait's
Gardner's
Trask's Mills
North River
Ferry
TOWN OF SALEM
Town Bridge
South River
V
VI
VIII
IX
X
XII
XIII
XIV
XV
XVI
XVII
XX
XXI
XXII
XXIV
XXV
2
4
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
39
40
41
42
43
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100
101
102
103
104
105
106
107
108
122
123
124
125
126
132
133
134
135
136
139
140
141
142
143
144
145
146
147


SALEM VILLAGE
WENHAM
BIRCH-PLAIN
John Flint
John Herrick
Nathaniel Rayment
n
Henry Brown
Edward Bishop
Old Road
Frost Fish Brook
John Rea
Joshua Rea
Thomas Rayment
Joseph Herrick
ALFORD'S HILL
William Dodge
BEVERLY
Benjamin Porter
Edward Bishop
John Raymond
Horse Bridge
John Flint
Ipswich Road
Edward Bishop
Peter Woodbury
James Kettle
School
Nathaniel Hayward
John Trask
Landing Place
Daniel Andrew
Robert Cue's Estate
Tho. & Jona. Rayment
John Trask
Jacob Griggs
Joseph Herrick
LEACH'S HILL
Old Road
John Dodge
Cornelius Baker
John Trask
Th. & Jona. Rayment
Robert Cue
John Leach
FROST FISH RIVER
Mill
John Batchelder
Jonathan Batchelder
Nathaniel Hayward
John Green
Robert Stone & William King
Joseph Batchelder
Highway
Muddy Cove
Josiah Batchelder
Mill
John Dodge
Old Road
Northfield
Men
John Green
John Cressy
Stone Cove
BASS RIVER
SCALE IN FEET
0
3000
Site of Salt House

*Adapted from maps by Sidney Perley.

The right map is a closeup of the one at left. Both show where some of the second generation Dodges lived. #87=Deacon Peter Woodberry. #101=Capt. John Dodge. #102=Herrick Family. #106= Haskells. #127=Parkers. Zachary Herrick's farm was at Birch Plain. Richard II lived just across the line in Wenham near Zachary.

We had many ancestors living in Salem (Rea, Flint, Leach to name a few) who will be told about in other parts of this book.

Richard Dodge^{2} (Richard^{1}) was born in Beverly, Massachusetts Bay Colony, in 1642 or 3, to Richard and Edith Dodge, the immigrants. On 23 Feb 1667/8 in Wenham, he married Mary Eaton, born 8 April 1643 in Watertown, daughter of William and Martha (Jenkins) Eaton. Some of the records spell her first name "Marah." but it is spelled "Mary" on her tombstone. (See the photocopy.)

Some genealogies that you will see in print if you look for them, say that Mary was the daughter of Governor Theophilus Eaton of Connecticut. Writer does not know what caused all the confusion, but have devoted a lot of time to checking it out. Not only do the governor's descendants make no such claim, but they go into detail about whom their Mary Eaton married and (1) it certainly was not a Dodge (2) the lady was much the wrong age for our Richard.

Writer intends to write an Eaton-Jenkins Family story to accompany this Dodge Family story, and will go into the details there. She had a very interesting and nice family background.

Richard was a farmer and lived in the south part of Wenham. Records say, "The old Wenham line was by Longham brook North of Longham Bridge by Richard Dodge's." He also owned a large farm in Ipswich which he later gave to his son, Richard^{3}, plus land near Chebacco Lake in Ipswich. Richard also owned a cider mill and press and make careful provision for its use when he deeded it to his sons, to make sure they had equal access to it, so it is very likely they were at that time all in the same vicinity.

Instead of waiting until he and Mary passed away, he divided the property among their children, giving his "negro man," Mingo, to the oldest son. He died 13 April 1705 at Wenham. Mary survived him and died 28 November 1716.

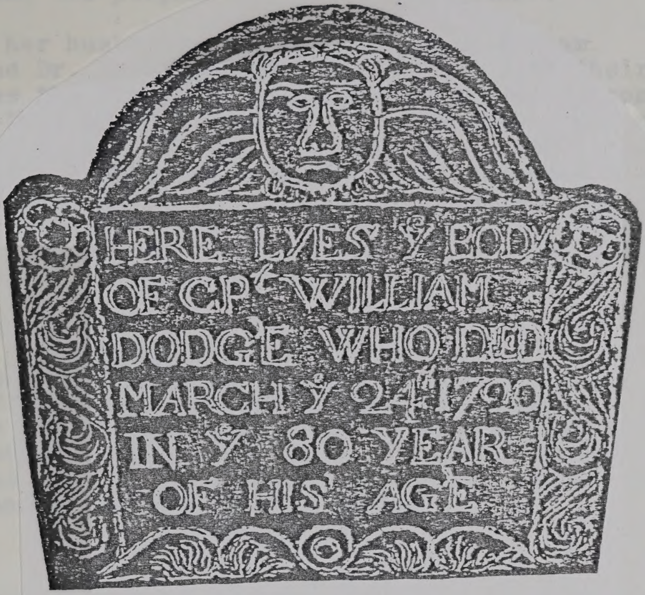
It is unfortunate that so little has been recorded about Richard II considering that so much has been written about the immigrant first generation, but that is the way it was with most New England families. It would seem that this Richard was a careful, painstaking farmer like his father, who loved and provided well for his family.

Children of Richard II and Mary (Eaton) Dodge:

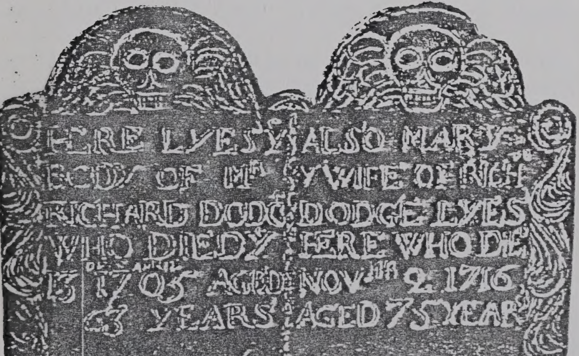
+Richard^{3}	12 Jul 1670-	7 Jul 1739	m. 16 Nov 1694	Martha Low
Mary	30 Mar 1672-	17	1705	Charles Gott
Martha	7 Jun 1674-	1736	31 May 1705	Dr John Davidson
Daniel	26 Apr 1677-	30 Apr 1740	26 Jun 1706	Joanna Burnham
William	1678-	20 Oct 1765	27 Jul 1699	Prudence Fairfield (1)
			aft.1737	Abigail Giddings (2)

DODGE FAMILY

Below are photostatic copies of three gravestones. The top stone is that of Captain William Dodge, son of William the Immigrant. Beneath are the stones of our ancestors, Richard II and Mary (Eaton) Dodge.


HERE LYES Ye BODY
OF CPt WILLIAM
DODGE WHO DIED
MARCH Ye 24th 1720
IN Ye 80 YEAR
OF HIS AGE

BEVERLY.


HERE LYES Ye
BODY OF Mr
RICHARD DODG
WHO DIED Ye
15 OF APRIL 1705 AGED
83 YEARS
ALSO MARY
Ye WIFE OF RICH
DODGE LYES
HERE WHO DIE
NOVbr 2 1716
AGED 75 YEAR

NORTH BEVERLY.

DODGE FAMILY

Since we will follow Richard III, a word or two about the others:

On 31 May 1705 Richard, Daniel, William, and Mary (who had not yet married Mr. Gott) joined in a deed of 4½ acres of marsh land in Chebacco-Ipswich to John and Martha Davidson to carry out what they alleged was the purpose of their late father.

Mary and her husband and family lived in Wenham.
Martha and Dr. Davidson lived in Ipswich with their family.
Daniel was the first of the Dodges to graduate from Harvard College in 1700--that school to which his grandfather had made such a large donation. He taught school at first in Beverly and by 1715 was schoolmaster in Reading. He received land from his father.
He and Joanna (Burnham) Dodge had 6 children. (We haven't gotten to that yet, but our Richard IV's wife was a Tuttle and her mother a Burnham, so we will be covering the Burnham Family as one of our Dodge ancestral lines.)

Brother William Dodge (named, of course, for his uncle) spent a long and prosperous life in Wenham where he acquired a large amount of land which he distributed among his many sons. Interesting from the point of view of our direct line of Dodges is that his son, Isaac was one of the first to start moving West. He moved to Boxwood and then to Sutton. Our Richard IV later moved there, surrounded by that prosperous and elegant branch of the family. William and Prudence had 10 children.

Sources:
Two bad examples showing wrong ancestry of Mary Eaton Dodge:
    Colonial Dames of America Ancestral Records & Portraits, p.201
    Current (1992) Ancestral File printout--Latter Day Saints
    (Writer is confident they will soon change that.)
A correct example is 13 Nov. 1916 issue of Boston Transcript
    Item #5686
Pope's Pioneers of Massachusetts - Charles H. Pope
    See alphabetically under Dodge, Eaton, Herrick, Haskell, Woodbery, etc.
Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England -
    James Savage
Ships Passenger List of the Hercules, which sailed 11 May 1637
History and Biography of the Eaton Families - Nellie Z.R.
    Molyneaux (1911)
New England Register 37:378 and 76:54 are primarily about the
    ancestry of Martha (Jenkins) Eaton, Mary Dodge's mother.

Richard Dodge^3 (Richard^2 Richard^1) was born in Wenham, Essex County, Massachusetts, on 12 July 1670, to Richard and Mary (Eaton) Dodge. On 16 November 1694, he married Martha Low born 10 Mar 1669 daughter of Deacon Thomas and Martha (Boreman) Low in Ipswich. Data about the B^{o}reman and Low Families will also be provided separately. Deacon and Mrs. Low had another daughter, Joanna, who married Richard's cousin, Antipas^3(Samuel^2 Richard^1) Dodge.

Richard was a prosperous farmer who received a very good start in life from his father who deeded him on 1 Dec. 1703, more than a year before his death, "the house, barn and outhousing in Ipswich which said Richard dwells in; also the farm on which it stands, viz., 100 acres which I bought of Mr. Hincksman, excepting just twenty acres to be cut off from the western end of said land by a line dividing said land and from White's land; also six or seven acres of low marsh that has been in his occupation for divers years, being part of what I purchased of James Burnham of Ipswich; also so much as is bounded on east side by widow Fellows' marsh, south by creek, west by Lieut. Ingall's, and north by my brother, Samuel Dodge's, marsh. Also one third part of upper marsh I bought of Mr. Wade; also one third part of one acre I bought of Mr. Wise; also the privilege of grinding apples at my mill, not injuring my sons, Daniel and William, of making their cider; also the right of passage through my cow pasture; also my negro man, Mingo."

Maybe we should not be so surprised about Mingo, considering that Salem, so close by, was already a center of commerce with its very profitable sailing ships--rum to Africa for slaves for the West Indies paid for by molasses which they had made into rum in Salem or Newport to pay for more slaves. Such was the state of civilization that the whole world thought that was okay, including, obviously, the Dodges. I'd better leave this subject, just hope they were gentle with Mingo!

Another indicator of the times was that Richard and Martha's young adulthood was during the period of witchcraft hysteria that swept through their area. It does not appear that they or any of their children were involved in that sorry mess though, as we shall see, their grandson Richard V married Lois Towne whose family had been one of the greatest sufferers of all. Writer does not know how much credence to place in it, but an interesting book I own postulates that people from southwest England, which the Dodges were, were more inclined to scoff at the idea of witches whereas people from the Norfolk area (as were the Townes and some of their accusers) with their Viking ancestry were much impressed with the spirit world, their ancestors having seen a troll under every bridge. Martha (Low) Dodge's ancestors came from the south coast of England and from the Banbury area.

"Albion's Seed--Four British Folkways in America" by David H. Fischer Oxford Univ. Press (1989)

Son Barnabas married in 1728 and Paul in 1732. Two years later the youngest son Richard became serious about a young lady named Sarah Tuttle. The parents decided it was time to set their sons up with farms of their own. So on 3 July 1734 Richard III deeded each of the two oldest a third each of a large farm he had purchased of John Quarles. He waited until 2 October 1734 after Richard IV had married in August to give him his portion.

Then in 1737, two years before his own death and when most likely the mother, Martha, was seriously ill, more property went to the three sons by deed of division. In 1740, evidently on administration of his estate after his death (and Barnabas having died two months after his father) more property was divided between Paul and Richard IV.

Richard the father died 7 August 1739, age 69. Evidently Martha died first, for though the date on her stone is illegible, it says she was 68 years and 9 months. Knowing her birthdate, it would have been late in 1737. Both of them are buried in the cemetery on Dodge's Row.

Children of Richard III and Martha (Low) Dodge:

Martha	29 May 1696-05 Oct 1721	m	Rev. John Conant
Nathaniel	08 Oct 1698-died young		
Lucy	31 May 1700-no record	23 Jan 1716/7	Daniel Conant
Nathaniel	01 Dec 1701-died young		
Margaret	02 Sep 1702-no record		
Barnabas	1706-11 Oct 1739	27 Sep 1728	Martha Perkins
Paul	1708- 3 Jan 1773	(1)19 Nov 1732	Jerusha Dodge
		(2)25 Feb 1735	Faith Jewett
+Richard	11 Nov 1710-17 Oct 1776	16 Aug 1734	Sarah Tuttle

Since we follow Richard^4 here are some notes on some of his brothers and sisters. One will notice that as we go along the amount known gets more and more sparse.

Martha married Rev. John Conant, son of John and Bethia Conant, born 7 July 1686. Lucy married his brother, Daniel. Since they were not our ancestors, no attempt to research the Conant family has been made. It is thought that the second Nathaniel also died young but no further record was found on him or Margaret.

The part about Barnabas is sort of sad. He had a pretty good start in life with a generous gift of land from his parents. He was doing well financially before he died at the relatively young age of 33, leaving behind a widow Martha (Perkins) Dodge, toddler Martha, Jr., and baby Lucy yet unborn. His estate came to L1444, 3s. The widow was named administratrix and guardian of the two infant daughters.

Four little daughters and one baby son had already died, three of them in 1736 alone. One can only speculate about what caused so much tragedy to this young family in those years when people knew nothing about germs. In 1740/1 Martha married a widower, Barnabas's first cousin Jacob^4(William^3 Richard^2 Richard^1) Dodge. They had two children, the first named Barnabas in honor of the man who died and Tabitha. Both of those children lived, with Tabitha marrying a Nathaniel Fairfield with whom she settled in New Hampshire, and Barnabas marrying a Lydia Woodberry in Beverly, Massachusetts and staying in the area.

The tragedy was not over, for Martha (Perkins)(Dodge) Dodge herself died about 1751. The two youngest stayed with their father, who married an Elizabeth Crowell in 1752 with whom he had several more children. Our ancestor, Richard Dodge IV was then made guardian of Martha, 14 and Lucy, 12. Whether they stayed with their stepfather or went to live with Uncle Richard is not clear, probably the latter. Both girls married at the early ages of 18 and almost 17. (By the way, the distinguished old Perkins family is one of our ancestral lines through Lois (Towne) Dodge, wife of Richard V, so you will find a Perkins family story in the collection.

Paul married first Jerusha Dodge who died soon thereafter. Her parentage was not given. The only other Jerusha Dodge that young was Jerusha^4 Elisha^3 Joseph^2 Richard^1 Dodge born 24 May 1711 whom they say "probably died young." One wonders whether, instead, it "probably could have been" this Jerusha. She seems not to have left any living children. Paul married second Faith Jewett of Rowley. Besides the legacy from his father, they received another from her father, Maximillian. He was involved in many real estate transactions, also sawmills and gristmills. He died in 1773 and is buried in Hamilton cemetery. Faith survived him and was living with her son, Paul Jr., in New Castle ME in 1784. 8 children.

Dr. Dodge wrote that, "The families of Paul and his brother Richard are of more than usual interest, not only for their mental and physical energy, but for the many descendants who have deserved and attained considerable distinction." I'm not sure whom he was referring to but will take him at his word.

There are many fine references on the ancestors of Martha (Low) Dodge, whose parents were Deacon Thomas Low and Martha (Boreman) Low. Those references will be cited in the sections on those families, but the two best which I have found are:

For Boreman (later descendants changed the name to Boardman) an excellent book, "Boardman Genealogy 1525-1895" by Charlotte Goldthwaite (1895).

For Low, "Ancestry of Phebe Tilton" (1947) is very readable. Another book, "Ancestors of the John Lowe Family Circle" by Ellen M. Merriam (1901) is nice but out of date because so much has been discovered since then.

Richard Dodge^4 (Richard^3 Richard^2 Richard^1) was born 11 Nov 1710* in Hamlet Parish of Ipswich (now Hamilton, Essex County) MA to Richard III and Martha (Low) Dodge. About 16 August 1734* published date he married Sarah Tuttle born 5 August 1716 in Ipswich to Charles and Mary (Burnham) Tuttle. As reported before, the couple was given a good start with land from his father.

After brother Barnabas died, Richard acquired his share, evidently through purchase from the widow, Martha, and later became guardian to the couple's two little girls, Martha, Jr., and Lucy, the widow apparently having died - though in the meantime she had married Richard and Barnabas' cousin Jacob Dodge, and had two other children who stayed with their father.

About eight years later, Richard sold his land to this same cousin, Jacob Dodge, for L906. (This, incidentally, shows fluctuation in the value of money, for the land had once sold for much more.) On the date he sold to Jacob, he bought from Jacob's brother, Isaac of Sutton, 100 acres of land in Sutton, paying him L213. (If you are following this, Isaac and Jacob were both Richard's first cousins.) Three days later he bought 200 acres more for L300, lying partly in Sutton and partly across the town line in Uxbridge.

There is not room enough here to go into the history of the Sutton/Uxbridge area, except to say that there had been settlers much earlier who had been driven out or massacred by the Indians, and the land had reverted to nature. The French and Indian Wars were still going on when they moved there in 1759. They were fortunate their area in southern Worcester County near the still contested Connecticut border was not attacked. Much fierce fighting was taking place in the Berkshire Hills only slightly west. Some people in families they later intermarried with were soldiers in that war.

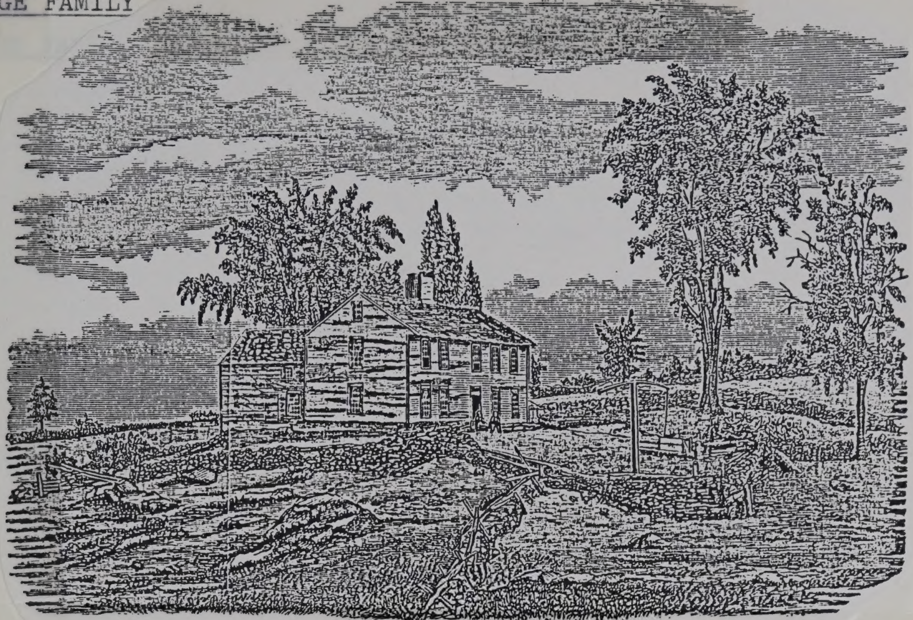
It is a bit ironic, if that is the right word, to hear that the "Dodges were a warlike breed of men, starting with Sir Peter Dodge, who won a barony for his heroic deeds fighting for a Norman king," for, to tell the truth, our Dodges, so far as I can tell, mostly stuck to their farms whereas the families they married into were replete with heros from all of the wars in defense of our country. Perhaps I've overlooked someone; if so would like to know whom.

The family started sort of a new Dodge Family settlement in Sutton. Cousin Isaac was there. Cousin Jacob's oldest son, Richard Hubbard Dodge and his pretty wife established an elegant residence there and were social elites who did a lot of entertaining.

---

* Conflicting dates have appeared in print for both Richard's birthdate and the date of the marriage to Sarah Tuttle. The dates given here cannot be very far off--at the very most two years in each instance.

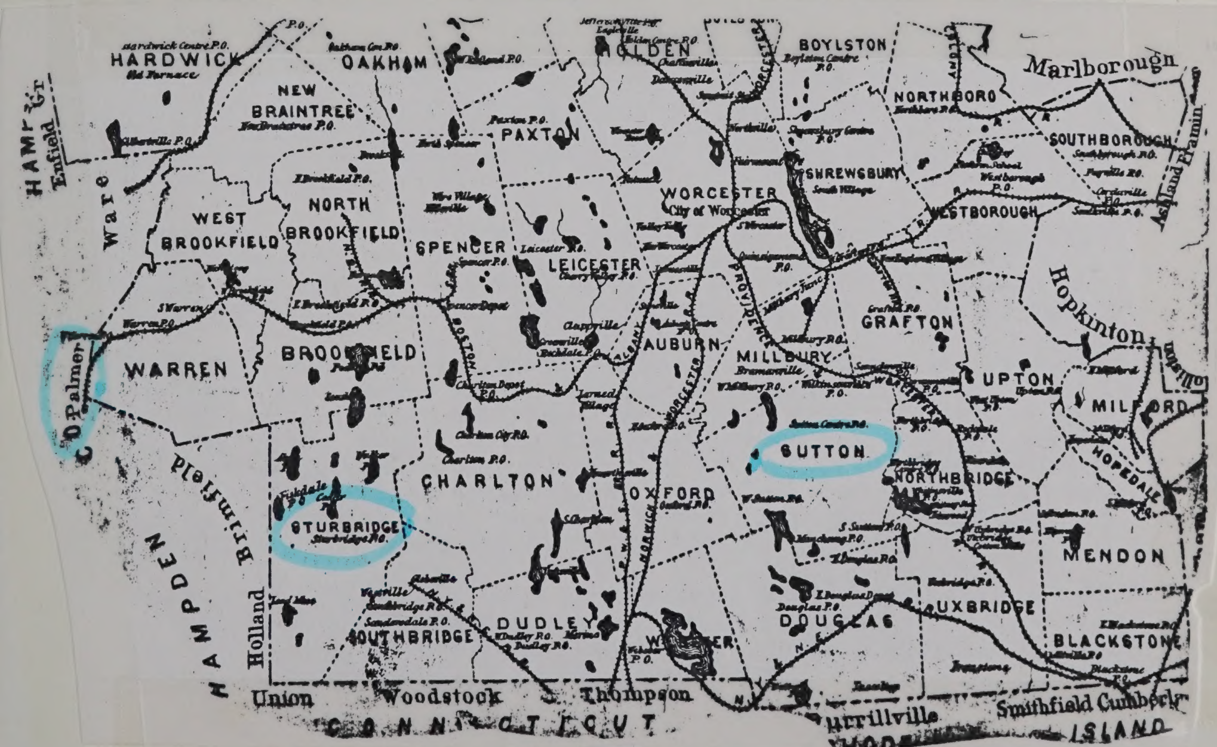
DODGE FAMILY



The Dodge Homestead in Sutton, Mass., erected previous to 1750. Owned by Benjamin J. Dodge

TOP--The illustrated house belonged to Richard IV's cousin.

BOTTOM--Map of the southern half of Worcester County. Richard IV settled in Sutton. Dwight was born in Sturbridge. Later Dodges kept returning to Palmer (Hampden Co.) at left side of map.


HARDWICK
OAKHAM
HOLDEN
BOYLSTON
Marlborough
NEW BRAINTREE
PAXTON
NORTHBORO
SOUTHBOROUGH
SHREWSBURY
WORCESTER
City of Worcester
WEST BROOKFIELD
NORTH BROOKFIELD
SPENCER
LEICESTER
WESTBOROUGH
Hopkinton
GRAFTON
AUBURN
MILLBURY
UPTON
MILFORD
BROOKFIELD
WARREN
Palmer
Ware
Enfield
HAMP
CHARLTON
OXFORD
SUTTON
NORTHBRIDGE
HOPEDALE
STURBRIDGE
MENDON
HAMPDEN
Brimfield
Holland
SOUTHBRIDGE
DUDLEY
WEBSTER
DOUGLAS
UXBRIDGE
BLACKSTONE
Union
Woodstock
Thompson
Burrillville
Smithfield
Cumberland
CONNECTICUT
ISLAND

DODGE FAMILY

There are so many real estate transactions recorded in Worcester County that it is hard to keep track of them. The writer has decided just to copy verbatim what Dr. Dodge wrote in the genealogy. He cited Worcester deeds Vol 41:222, 42:118 and 90:332 but obviously a lot more sources must be involved:

In March 1782 he deeded to his son Rufus, carpenter and yeoman of Uxbridge, 50 acres of the above 200. In 1765 he sold to William Batchelor of Upton, cooper, another 50 acres of the same tract, with buildings. He sold to his son-in-law Reuben Town, farmer of Sutton in 1767, 1772 and 1775, three pieces of land amounting to 69 acres. The signature of his wife, Sarah, appears last on the deed of February 1767 and his own appears last in March, 1775.

Richard Dodge   Sarah Dodge

Before 11 April 1777 Richard and his son-in-law Town were both dead, for we find as follows: "We, Rufus Dodge and James Dodge of Gageborough, Berkshire County; Nathanial Dodge of Brookfield; Asa Dodge, Sarah Town widow, Enos and Mary Buxton, all of Sutton; Thomas Dodge of Dudley, Worcester county - all of Massachusetts - heirs to the estate of our Honored father, Richard Dodge, late of Sutton, deceased, for L200 sell to Richard Dodge, husbandman of Sutton 'eight-ninths of all the lands and buildings' of said Richard, deceased, in Sutton, and contains 60 acres more or less, bounded east on road, south on John Wallis, west partly on said Wallis and partly on John Burden, north on Joseph Ellyott, Jr. and partly on John Henry Shiddle to the road first names, except about ten acres of west side of said farm, reserved for Asa Dodge one of the said heirs."

The names of the grantors are given in the covenant of warranty as follows: Rufus, Nathaniel, Asa, James and Thomas Dodge, Sarah Town and Enos and Mary Buxton, Jr. The acknowledgment by Sarah Town on 2 Dec,1782 calls her then the wife of Samuel Wallis.

Don't you love the nice handwriting of both Richard and Sarah? Remember that people wrote with quills back in those days. It is obvious both of them must have been pretty well educated in a period in time when a great many people were half-illiterate. Of course there will be a section on Sarah's Tuttle Family and many other ancestral connections. This lady had remote ancestors going back, it is said, to a Sir Robert Lawrence who went to the Crusades with Richard the Lion-Hearted!

Sutton vital records reveal that Richard died there 7 October 1776 of "nervous fever, age about 67." Sarah survived him a long time. She died at the home of (daughter) Mary and Enos Buxton, Jr. on 7 February 1796, "age about 88, of old age."

Children of Richard IV and Sarah (Tuttle) Dodge:

Rufus	b 14 Mar 1736	m 28 Oct 1756	Elizabeth Dodge
Richard	21 May 1738		died young
Nathaniel	9 Dec 1740	26 Jan 1763	Sarah Dodge
Asa	ca 1743	9 Feb 1779	Lydia Buxton
James	ca 1745	?	?
Sarah	ca 1847	7 Jul 1767	(1) Reuben Towne
		by 1782	(2) Samuel Wallis
Mary	ca 1749	3 Jun 1775	Enos Buxton
+Richard V	25 Apr 1752	19 Jul 1770	Lois Towne
Thomas	ca 1759	23 Feb 1779	(1) Abigail Putney
		11 Aug 1802	(1) Abigail Hooper
		5 Apr 1807	(3) Sarah Worth

A cursory glance at this chart will show how the records suffered as the family expanded to the west. It is thought that most of the children were born in the Hamlet Parish area (now Hamilton) of Essex County, Massachusetts. If someday this writer runs into vital statistics showing more exact birth or other dates, they will be inserted or a postscript added. There could also be unrecorded births of other children, especially between Richard and Thomas. We may assume that the first little Richard died after James was born and before our ancestor, Richard V. They would have kept naming a child that until one lived, having kept that name in the family for so long. Historians assumed Thomas was born in Sutton but gave no reason. You will notice the trend toward very young marriages, a change from the custom on the East Coast.

As radical as the idea of moving west to Sutton in Worcester County may have seemed to their parents, when the children in this family matured New England was already starting to run out of farmland for its abundance of young men who wanted to start their own farms. Our Dodges had always loved the soil. Where to go? It was difficult if not impossible to buy land in New York and anyway the adjacent part east of the Hudson was hilly, too. One could rent, but most of the land had been granted to only a few "patroons" who would not sell. West of there the land was held and dominated by the savage and angry Iroquois Indians.

Until after the Revolutionary War, the only places really left for expansion were the hilly Berkshire areas of northwestern Massachusetts and New Hampshire/Vermont. (Vermont was not then a state but an area hotly contested between New York and New Hampshire--but developed mostly under grants issued by the governor of the latter state.)

The family of Richard and Sarah underwent a dispersal as the adult children matured, with some staying in the area and others going to the places just mentioned. We lost track of some of them. Since we follow Richard V, here is a little of what we know about the others.

As you read this, keep in mind that these children were born into a Colonial family though their attitudes may have broadened. The idea of uniting the colonies into states had not yet occurred to anyone, and they would have rejected it as fantastic and undesirable. These Dodges would have been staunch Congregationalists who looked askance at the attitudes of the Anglicans in the southern states. Things changed by the ends of their lives, however. They eventually became citizens of the United States.

As far as writer knows, none of the children fought in the Revolutionary War. If any military records are uncovered, that information will be incorporated later on. See footnote, end of Chapter.

Rufus Dodge, the oldest son, married Elizabeth Dodge. The books do not say who she was, but I believe she was Elizabeth Dodge^5 (Francis^4 Jonathan^3 John^2 William^1) and thus only distantly related to Rufus through his great-great-great grandfather John Dodge in England. Elizabeth was born 3 March 1736 and lived in Brookfield a few miles west of Sutton. All we know further about the couple is that as of 1777 they were living on the frontier in Gageborough, Berkshire County MA.

Nathaniel Dodge was a farmer. He married Sarah Dodge, sister of Rufus' wife Elizabeth. These sisters had a brother Francis who moved to Berkshire County, also a brother Daniel who served in the French and Indian war when he was very young, and another sister Hepzibah. Nathaniel, by the right of his wife, inherited part of her father's estate and also bought out the portions of some of the others. (Temple's History of North Brookfield has her listed with the wrong father.) The couple had 10 children but at least 4 of them died young.

Asa Dodge may have been married to Elizabeth Knapp of Northbridge (published 30 April 1777) but if so she soon died because on 9 Feb 1779 he married Lydia Buxton of Sutton-possibly the sister of Mary's husband, Enos Buxton. When the division of his father's estate occurred in 1777, he was living in Sutton and chose to retain his 1/8 portion. Ten days after his marriage to Lydia this couple as well as her brother David Buxton of Brandon, Vermont, sold their property in Sutton. They all moved to Brandon, which is on the western side of the Green Mountains. Later they purchased land in Weybridge, VT which they sold when he became an invalid and they went to live with their son, Asa, Jr., and his family. They had one other son, John, who married but had no children.

We know very little about James Dodge. It seems as though he married and went to Gageborough to live near his brother Rufus.

Sarah Dodge, named for her mother, married first Reuben Towne of Sutton, kinsman of our ancestress Lois Towne who married her brother Richard. Reuben was living in 1777 but died before December 1782 when she was wife of Samuel Wallis (who probably had been the couple's next-door neighbor). They lived in Sutton.

Mary Dodge, the other sister, married Enos Buxton and they lived on a farm in Sutton with their children. Enos was brother of the other Buxtons mentioned on the previous page. When Richard IV died, it was Mary and Enos who took her widowed mother into their home and cared for her, until Sarah died twenty years later, at the age of 88. So it seems the other siblings owed a debt of gratitude to Enos and Mary Buxton, for being good to their mother.

Thomas Dodge, the youngest, was probably born in Sutton about 1759. He married first Abigail Putney of Dudley. They had five children in the Dudley-Sturbridge-Charlton area (all near Sutton). Then they moved to Norwich, Connecticut, where they had three more. After that they migrated to distant Barre, Vermont, where she died of childbirth in January 1802. (It is a chilling thought to think of her dying in the Vermont wilderness in January, probably away from adequate medical care though, of course, that might be an exaggeration.) The baby, Eleazer, survived until age 20 when, though young, he already had his own brisk boot and shoe business in Montpelier. By the time the mother, Abigail, died two little daughters had already died. Little Rufus, born in Norwich, died in 1804--two years later. The others seem to have done well.

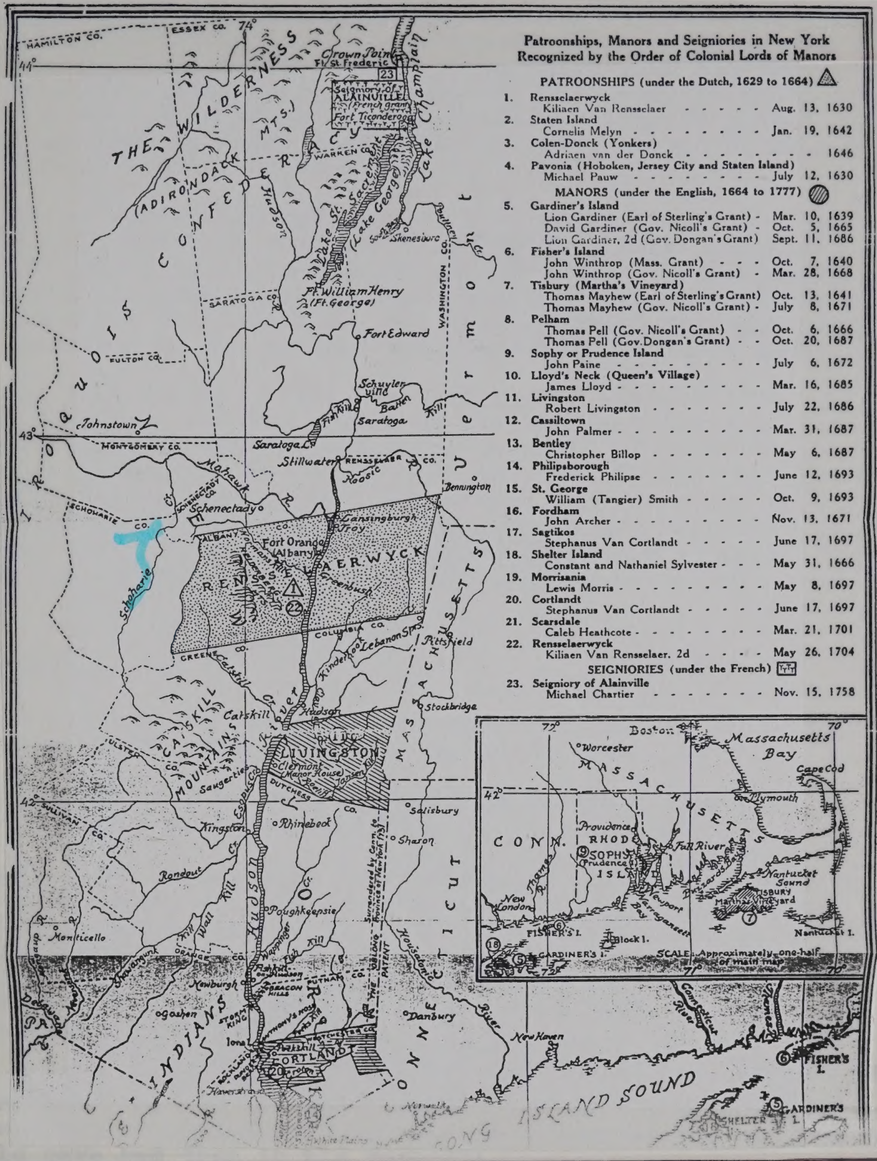
Thomas married second Abigail Harper of Barre, who had come there from Brookfield, MA, and had one child, Asa; and she also died of childbirth. They didn't say whether the baby lived. He married third Sarah Worth of Middlesex (what state?) and had four children. He died age 68 at his farm on the road from Barre to Montpelier about a mile below what became Barre Station. The widow lived to be 92.

Sources for the segment on Richard IV and Sarah (Tuttle) Dodge include the following:

Sutton Vital Records to the Year 1850
History of Sutton, Worcester County, Massachusetts (1878)
History of Worcester County, Massachusetts (1879) Two volumes, for background on the townships. (The first 2 mention Dodges)

There are many Tuttle Family information sources. The one reaching far enough down in time to list our Sarah and saying she married Richard is "Tuttle & Tuthill Lines in America" by Alva M. Tuttle (1968) That book is more of a compendium than a family story. Other sources will be cited in the Tuttle Family section.

Footnote:
It seems some have confused Capt. Richard Dodge of Wenham (1732-1802) who fought in the Lexington Alarm & the Revolution with our Richard IV or V. That would be easy to do. He was Richard^{5} (Richard^{4} William^{3} Richard^{2} Richard^{1}). Our line is all Richards, to that point. Any of our line could join the DAR, etc., through Captain Samuel Ellis, grandfather of Keziah (Ellis) Dodge, wife of Levi & mother of Dwight.


HAMILTON CO.
ESSEX CO.
74°
44°
THE WILDERNESS
ADIRONDACK MTS.
IROQUOIS CONFEDERACY
Crown Point
Ft. St. Frederic
23
Seigniory of ALAINVILLE (French grant)
Fort Ticonderoga
Lake Champlain
WARREN CO.
Lake George (Lake St. Sacrement)
Hudson R.
Skenesboro
Ft. William Henry (Ft. George)
SARATOGA CO.
Fort Edward
WASHINGTON CO.
Vermont
FULTON CO.
Schuylerville
Batten Kill
Fish Kill
Saratoga
Johnstown
43°
MONTGOMERY CO.
Saratoga L.
Stillwater
RENSSELAER CO.
Hoosic
Bennington
Mohawk R.
SCHENECTADY CO.
SCHOHARIE CO.
Schenectady
Lansingburgh
Troy
ALBANY CO.
Fort Orange (Albany)
RENSSELAERWYCK
Greenbush
1
22
COLUMBIA CO.
Lebanon Sps.
Pittsfield
Kinderhook
GREENE CO.
Schoharie
Catskill Cr.
Catskill
Hudson
Stockbridge
Massachusetts
CATSKILL MOUNTAINS
ULSTER CO.
LIVINGSTON
Clermont (Manor House)
Saugerties
DUTCHESS CO.
Salisbury
42°
SULLIVAN CO.
Kingston
Rhinebeck
Sharon
Connecticut
Rondout
Wall Kill
Surrendered by Conn. to Province of New York 1731
THE OBLONG PATENT
Poughkeepsie
Wappinger
Fish Kill
Monticello
Shawangunk
ORANGE CO.
Newburgh
BEACON HILLS
PUTNAM CO.
Goshen
Danbury
INDIANS
STORM KING
Iona
CORTLANDT
20
Haverstraw
New Haven
Norwalk
White Plains
LONG ISLAND SOUND
Delaware R.
Housatonic River
Connecticut River
Thames R.
FISHER'S I.
6
GARDINER'S I.
5
SHELTER I.
Boston
Massachusetts Bay
72°
70°
Worcester
MASSACHUSETTS
Cape Cod
Plymouth
CONN.
Providence
RHODE ISLAND
9
SOPHY (Prudence I.)
Fall River
Narragansett Bay
Newport
Buzzards Bay
Nantucket Sound
TISBURY
Martha's Vineyard
7
Nantucket I.
New London
Block I.
18
SCALE: Approximately one-half of main map

Patroonships, Manors and Seigniories in New York Recognized by the Order of Colonial Lords of Manors

PATROONSHIPS (under the Dutch, 1629 to 1664) △

1.	**Rensselaerwyck**	
	Kiliaen Van Rensselaer - - - - -	Aug. 13, 1630
2.	**Staten Island**	
	Cornelis Melyn - - - - - - - - -	Jan. 19, 1642
3.	**Colen-Donck (Yonkers)**	
	Adriaen van der Donck - - - - - - - - -	1646
4.	**Pavonia (Hoboken, Jersey City and Staten Island)**	
	Michael Pauw - - - - - - - - -	July 12, 1630

MANORS (under the English, 1664 to 1777) ▨

5.	**Gardiner's Island**	
	Lion Gardiner (Earl of Sterling's Grant) -	Mar. 10, 1639
	David Gardiner (Gov. Nicoll's Grant) -	Oct. 5, 1665
	Lion Gardiner, 2d (Gov. Dongan's Grant)	Sept. 11, 1686
6.	**Fisher's Island**	
	John Winthrop (Mass. Grant) - - -	Oct. 7, 1640
	John Winthrop (Gov. Nicoll's Grant) -	Mar. 28, 1668
7.	**Tisbury (Martha's Vineyard)**	
	Thomas Mayhew (Earl of Sterling's Grant)	Oct. 13, 1641
	Thomas Mayhew (Gov. Nicoll's Grant) -	July 8, 1671
8.	**Pelham**	
	Thomas Pell (Gov. Nicoll's Grant) - -	Oct. 6, 1666
	Thomas Pell (Gov. Dongan's Grant) - -	Oct. 20, 1687
9.	**Sophy or Prudence Island**	
	John Paine - - - - - - - - - - -	July 6, 1672
10.	**Lloyd's Neck (Queen's Village)**	
	James Lloyd - - - - - - - - - -	Mar. 16, 1685
11.	**Livingston**	
	Robert Livingston - - - - - - -	July 22, 1686
12.	**Cassiltown**	
	John Palmer - - - - - - - - - -	Mar. 31, 1687
13.	**Bentley**	
	Christopher Billop - - - - - - -	May 6, 1687
14.	**Philipsborough**	
	Frederick Philipse - - - - - - -	June 12, 1693
15.	**St. George**	
	William (Tangier) Smith - - - - -	Oct. 9, 1693
16.	**Fordham**	
	John Archer - - - - - - - - - -	Nov. 13, 1671
17.	**Sagtikos**	
	Stephanus Van Cortlandt - - - - -	June 17, 1697
18.	**Shelter Island**	
	Constant and Nathaniel Sylvester - - -	May 31, 1666
19.	**Morrisania**	
	Lewis Morris - - - - - - - - - -	May 8, 1697
20.	**Cortlandt**	
	Stephanus Van Cortlandt - - - - -	June 17, 1697
21.	**Scarsdale**	
	Caleb Heathcote - - - - - - - -	Mar. 21, 1701
22.	**Rensselaerwyck**	
	Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, 2d - - - -	May 26, 1704

SEIGNIORIES (under the French) ⊞

23.	**Seigniory of Alainville**	
	Michael Chartier - - - - - - - -	Nov. 15, 1758

Map shows only some earliest NY patents but may help you see why early Dodges had to go north rather than west to buy land. Patroons were happy to rent on terms which made tenants serflike, but would not sell. Lands to the west of them was held by fierce and angry Iroquois Indians. Palatine Germans settled on the Schoharie River south of the Mohawk. When the British occupied Rhode Island during the Revolution, many Rhode Islanders moved to Schoharie, the scene of fierce fighting but not occupation. That is indirectly the reason Lydia (Pearce) Dodge came to be born there.

Richard Dodge^5 (Richard^4 Richard^3 Richard^2 Richard^1) was born 25 April 1752, according to his gravestone*, in the locality which became Hamilton, MA, and was a young child when his family moved to Sutton. At the very young age of 18 he married another 18-year old, Lois Towne born 30 September 1752 in Sutton to John and Mercy (Towne) Towne. As the name suggests, John and Mercy were distant cousins.

The Towne Family had been the very worst sufferers in the infamous witchcraft hysteria that swept through the Salem area in 1692. Two of Lois's great aunts were executed and a third barely escaped by means of a phony confession after spending a long time in jail. The long and involved story will not be addressed here, but will be discussed in the section telling about the noble Towne Family.

As you will recall, after his father died in late 1776, this young Richard bought out the shares of all his brothers and sisters except Asa, who was not yet ready to sell. In 1787 he and Lois purchased 89 acres in nearby Charlton, and brought up most of their children there. The 1790 census for Worcester County, MA, shows Richard with wife and one daughter, two sons over 16 and three sons under 16. That would suggest Ananiah, age 20, may have been away working and that little John did not live.

---

*Footnote:

The following two examples show how difficult it is to find birth-marriage-death dates for this period in time.

The January 1883 issue of the New England Register (Vol 37 p88) has an item reading as follows:

"DODGE - Can anyone give the birthplace, ancestry and parentage of 'Richard Dodge, Jr' who married July 19, 1770, Lois Towne, born in Sutton Mass., September 30, 1752? On a gravestone a few miles from this office I find - 'Richard Dodge died Dec. 25, 1833 aged 81 yrs. & 8 mos.' Next to this stone is another upon which is 'Lois Towne, wife of Richard Dodge, died Sept. 9, 1812, aged 59 yrs. 11 mos. & 9 d's.'"

Alonzo Allen
Town Clerk's Office, Croyden NH

This shows that vital records simply weren't always registered in those days or otherwise this man, in charge of the records there, would have had them in his records!

The other example is that the extremely thorough "Tuttle-Tuthill Lines" cited on a previous page lists the same first marriage dates for all of Richard IV and Sarah Tuttle Dodge's children, and the same three birthdates we have here. No marriage at all is listed for Richard V. Seemingly Alva Tuttle assumed he died young but found no death listed. The parents' marriage date was given as 27 November 1734 in Ipswich.

DODGE FAMILY

By the time Richard V was in his middle 40's he might have been content to stay put, but his older sons must have been anxious to move to New Hampshire, especially Stephen. Perhaps he and Lois were also, though even the trip there was arduous not counting the back-breaking toil involved in taming wilderness land for farming. But they had many sons all wanting farms of their own. Farmland was by then scarce in Massachusetts, and prohibitively expensive, so they decided to go. Like so many New England families, they joined the great outward migration. We read the following:

"It is shown by the record of deeds in Cheshire County, NH, that Richard and Stephen Dodge of Charlton, Mass. (probably father and son), bought 24 Aug. 1796 of Robert Duncan, gentleman, of New Grantham, NH for 250 dollars, lot 32, first division of New Grantham, being 100 acres, the right of Theodore Atkinson.

"August 28, 1802, Richard and Stephen Dodge of New Grantham sold for 90 dollars to Richard Dodge, Jr., of New G. one half of lot 32 as above, and on the same date Richard Dodge, Jr. for 8 dollars gave a life lease to Richard Dodge for twenty acres, which appears to have been reconveyed to Richard Dodge, Jr., on the 5th February, 1820 for 150 dollars. On the last occasion the town was called Grantham."

From the fortunate letter of Alonzo Allen, Croydon Town Clerk. recorded on the previous page, we have found out that the mother, Lois (Towne) Dodge, passed away on 9 Sept 1812, age not quite 60. Life on the frontier was probably hard on her. A grandson (Ellis Dodge) reported that later Richard V married another lady, and that he was buried "between his two wives." If so, Mr. Allen must have missed that. No one seems to have found out who the lady was. It sounds as though Richard, age 68 in 1820, sold the land back to Richard VI for $150, finding himself too old to manage his own farm. He lived another 13 years, passing away on Christmas Day 1833.

I was delighted to discover a printed copy of the "Second United States Census - 1800 - New Hampshire - Heads of Families, Cheshire County" showing New Grantham. It shows:

Dodge, Richard - man & woman over 45, 2 sons under 10, one son between 10 & 16, one son over 16 and one daughter over 16. I take these to be Richard and Lois with Joshua 5, Amasa 8, Parly 12, Lois Jr. 17 and Simon 19.

Also reflected are Ananiah Dodge 30, Wife Elizabeth 28, William 5, and Cheney 1.

Levi (our ancestor) 28, Keziah 20, Charlotte 4, Dwight 2 (our ancestor) and tiny baby Jedediah are also shown.

Stephen and Richard VI, then young men, were probably on that date living in a nearby township.

DODGE FAMILY

SECOND UNITED STATES CENSUS — 1800 — NEW HAMPSHIRE — HEADS of FAMILIES

CHESHIRE COUNTY

NAMES of HEADS of FAMILIES	FREE WHITE MALES					FREE WHITE FEMALES					
	Under 10 years of age	Of 10 & under 16	Of 16 & under 26 including heads of families	Of 26 & under 45 including heads of families	Of 45 & upwards including heads of families	Under 10 years of age	Of 10 & under 16	Of 16 & under 26 including heads of families	Of 26 & under 45 including heads of families	Of 45 & upwards including heads of families	All other free persons except Indians not taxed
NEW GRANTHAM											
Alexander, Samuel	3	1		1		1			1		
Bachelder, Amos	3			1			1		1		
Baker, Thomas		1		1		2			1		
Ballow (?), Jeremiah	1	1	1		1			1		1	
Bachelder, Jonathan	1	1		1		2			1		
Bean, Samuel		2	1			1	1	2			
Bixbee, Amasa				1					1		
Brown, Jonathan		1	1		1	2	2	1		1	
Brown, Jonathan Jr.	2			1		1			1		
Brown, John	1			1		1			1		
Burbank, Ebenezer	1			1					1		
Burr, Ebenezer	2	1	1		1	1	1	1		1	
Burr, Seymour			1		3			1			
Busswell, Ezra	2			1		2	1		1		
Calf, Nathaniel	2			1		2		1	1		
Carr, Parker			2		1	3	1	1		1	
Clement, David			1		1			1	1		1
Clement, David Jr.	1		2	1		3	1		1		
Clement, Jonas	1		1	1		3	1	1	1		
Clement, Jacob	1			1		3			1		
Cotton, Lemuel	2			1					1		
Co(illegible), Joel	3			1	1				1	1	
Crocker, John	1			1					2		
Davis, Jeremiah		1	2		2			1	2	1	
Delano, Moses	1			1		3	1		1		
Dodge, Richard	2	1	1		1			1		1	
Dodge, Ananiah	2			1		1			1		
✔ Dodge, Levi	2			1		1		1			
Dunbar, Ezekiel			1		1		1	1		1	
Dunbar, John		1	2		1		1			1	
Dunbar, Ansel			1					1			
Duncan, Robert	2	1		1	1	1	1	2	1		
Dutton, Silas			1		1			1		1	
Dutton, Silas Jr.				1				1			
Dutton, Oliver	3			1				1	1		
Eastman, William				1		1		1		1	
Eastman, Henry	3			1		3			1		
Eastman, Stephen				1				1			
Emerson, Moses			1			2		1			1
Fraser, Moses			1		1		1			1	
Gale, Francis	1	2		1		3			1		
Gage, Stephen	1			1		3			1		
Gile, Richard	1			1		1		1			
Gill, True				1					1		
Gleason, Elijah	2	1	2		1		1	2		1	
Gove, John	2			1			1	1	1		
Gould, Samuel			1	1					1		
Griffiths, William	2				1	1	1		1		
Hall, Hezekiah	1				1		1	1		1	
Hall, Nathaniel	1		1					1			
Hardy, Tristam	1			1		2			1		
Hardy, Eldad			1			1	1			1	
Herriman, Leonard	1		1	1				1			
Hopkins, Ruth		1					1	1		1	
Hopkins, Gardner		1		1		1		1			
Howard, Henry	2	1		1		2			1		
Hunter, William	1	1			1	2	1			1	
Fifield, David	3			1		4			1	1	
Huntington, William		3	1	1		1			1	1	
Huntoon, Caleb	1				2		3			1	
Huntoon, Charles		1			1	4	2	1	1		
Jenne, James			1		1	1	1			1	
Jenne, Isaac		1	1		1	1	1	2		1	
Jenne, Thomas	1			1				1			
Jennings, Stephen		1			1		1			1	
Jennings, Sylvester	1			1		2		1			
Johnson, Abner	3	2	1	1		3			1		
Johnson, Benjamin	1		1	1		2	1		1		
Judkins, Stephen				1		2		1			
Kenyon, Alexander	2	1		1		2	1	2	1		
King, Peter	1	2	1		1	1				1	
Lamberton, Obed.	1	2			1	2	1			1	
Lamberton, Obed. Jun.				1				1			
Leavitt, Nathaniel					1					1	
Leavitt, Nathaniel Jun.	2			1		3	2		1		
Leavitt, Dudley	3		1	1		2		1			
Leavitt, John	1			1		1			1		
Leavitt, Jeremiah	2	1		1		2			1		
Lewis, Lyman	1		1					1			
NEW GRATHAM (cont.)											
Little, James		1		1		1		1			
Little, Ebenezer			1					1			
Malavery, Abraham			1	1					1		
Marsh, Jesse	2			1		1			1		
Massey, Willard	3	1		1		1		1	1		
Merrill, Obadiah	3		1	1		2	1		1	1	
Merrill, John	2	1	1	1			1	1			
McFarland, James				1						1	
Morse, John				1		1		1			
Moulton, William	1			1		2			1		
Newell, Isaac	1			1		1		1			
Newton, Francis	1	1			1	1		1		1	
Newton, Francis Junr			1			2		1			
Parker, Stephen		1			1				1	1	
Peck, Joseph	2	1		1		1	1		1		
Phillips, Jacob	2			1		1			1		
Pierce, John					1			1		2	
Pierce, Daniel	1	1		1		3			1		
Pierce, Job	2			1		3	1		1		
Pierce, William	2			1				1			
Pilsbury, Benjamin			1		1					1	
Prentice, John	3		1	1	1	1		1		1	
Quimby, John	1			1		3			1		
Read, Paul				1		1		1			
Sawyer, Elias	1	1		1		4	1		1		
Scott, Charles	1		2	1		2		2	3	1	
Shartliff, Lathrop	2	1	1	1	1		1	2		1	
Skinner, Joseph					1					1	
Skinner, Joseph, Jr	2	1		1		2	1		1		
Smith, Richard	2	2		1		2			1		
Smith, James	1	1		1		2			1		
Spaulding, Amos	1	1	2	1	1	1	1	2		1	
Spaulding, Daniel				1		1		1			
Stone, Daniel				1		2		1			
Storey, Cyrus	1			1		1			1		
Storey, Isaac				1		2			1		
Stowell, Isaac					1	1			1	1	
Stowell, Ebenezer	3	2	2	1			1		1		
Thompson, Ralph	1	1			1		1			1	
Thrasher, Jacob	2	1	1	1		3	1	1	1		
Underhill, John				1		1			1		
Woodman, Benjamin	2	2		1		2		1	1		
NEWPORT											
Atwood, Moses	1			1					1		
Atwood, Daniel	2			1		2			2		
Atwood, John					1	1	1			1	
Atwood, Caleb		1	2		1			1		1	
Atwood, Stephen	1		2			1		1			
Allen, Gideon		1	1	1	1			1		1	
Buel, Aaron	1			1		3			1		
Buel, Gurden		1	1		1		1	1		1	
Buel, John		1		1	1					1	
Brown, John			1					1			
Brown, Baxter			1			1			1		
Bowman, Abethar	2	2	1	1		2	1		1	1	
Bliss, Henry	1			1		2	2	1	1		
Bimis, Daniel	3	1	1		1	2	1		1		
Buel, Joseph			1		1			3	1	1	
Buel, John				1		1		1			
Buel, Joseph Jr.	3	1		1		3			1		
Bascon, Joseph	2			1		1		2			
Bascon, Reuben	3	1	1	1		2	1		1		
Brown, Jona.	1	1		1		1	1	1	1		
Brown, Elijah	2	1	1	1		3	1	1	1		
Brown, John	1			1		2			1		
Carpenter, Elkanah				1					1		
Church, Saml.		2	3		1		1	3		1	
Cutter, John	2		2	1		2		1	1		
Cumstock, Jona.		2	2	1	1	1	1	1		1	
Curren, Timothy			1					1	1		
Chapin, Phinehas	2	1		1		1	2		1		
Chapin, Daniel	3	1	1	1		2			2		
Corbin, James	2		1	2		3		1	1	1	
Chamberlin, Ralph	1		1			1	1	1			
Cutten, Zebelan	3	2			1	2		1	1		
McCollister, Wm.	1		1			1		1			

Hannah Dodge, m. 2d, [illegible] William & Susan [illegible]

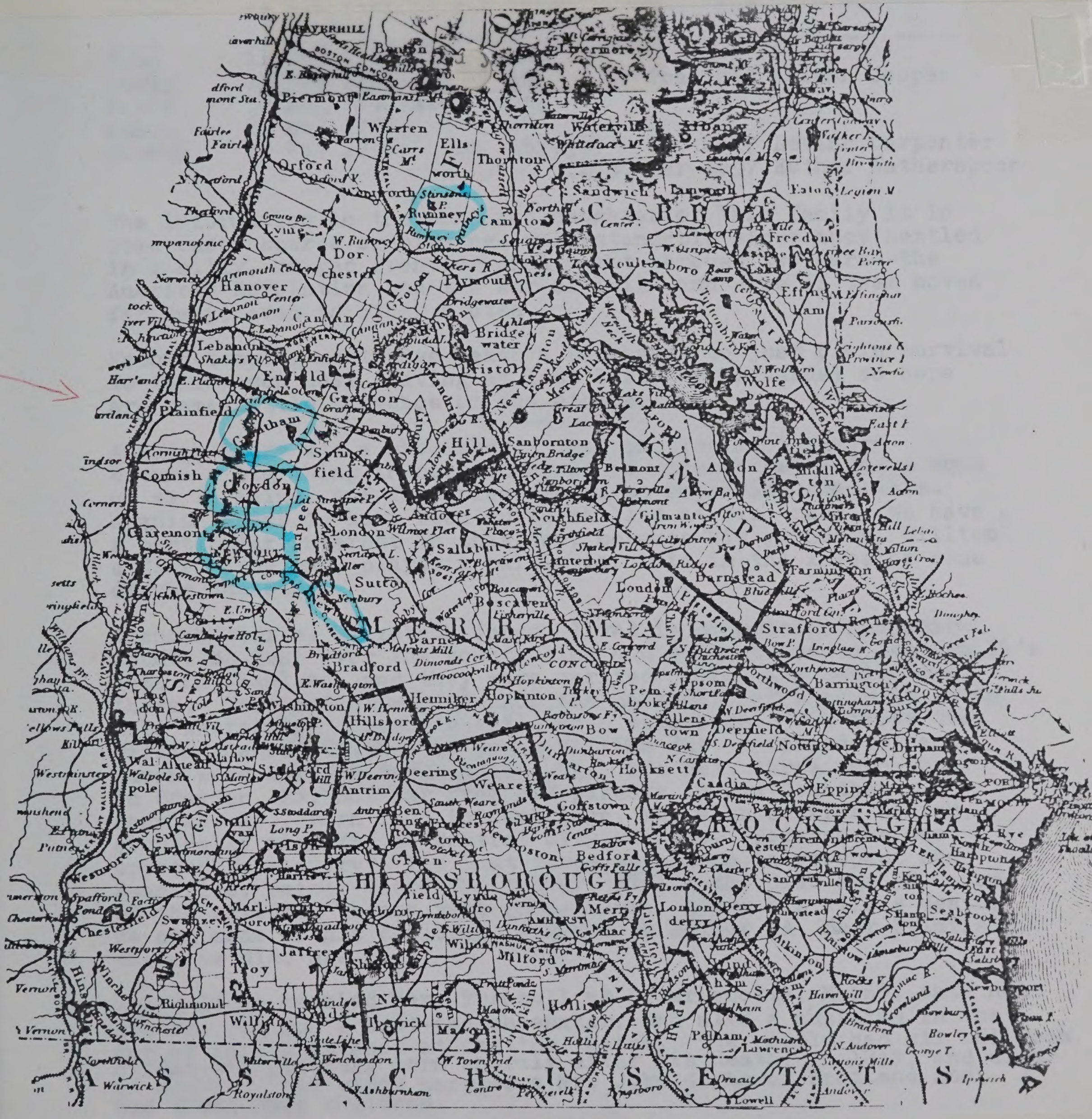
Richard Dodge m. [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] Dodge [illegible]
[illegible] Dodge [illegible]

DODGE FAMILY

Below is copy of a modern map showing the southern part of New Hampshire. When our Dodges lived there, New Grantham (now called Grantham) and Croydon, where they first settled, were part of Cheshire County. Dwight's younger sister, Charlotte, and brother Ellis, whose stories are told, lived for some time at Rumney.



DODGE FAMILY

Children of Richard V and Lois (Towne) Dodge:

Ananiah	23 Nov 1770-26 Dec 1846	m 29 Aug 1792	Elizabeth Janes
+Levi	23 Jun 1772- 8 Dec 1835	15 Mar 1796	Keziah Ellis
Stephen	24 Oct 1774-	10 Nov 1799	Mary Dunbar
Richard 6	2 Mar 1779-11 May 1872	29 Nov 1802	Levina Ellis
Simon	22 Feb 1781-23 Sep 1817	?ca 1805	Mary Turnbull
Lois	24 Aug 1783-13 Sep 1872	?	?did she marry?
John	11 Dec 1785-died young		
Parly	24 Mar 1788- 18	?ca 1810	Helena Cooper
Patty	10 Aug 1790-died young		
Amasa	15 Oct 1792- 18		
Joshua	23 Nov 1795 ca 1874	(1) 1817	Levina Carpenter
		(2)30 Mar 1837	Esther Wetherspoon

The information on the sons and daughter of this family is in some cases sparse or missing--understandable since they settled in a hilly, rugged frontier area, went through two wars--the American Revolution and the War of 1812--and some of them moved far away, even to other states.

Record-keeping must have taken a back seat to just plain survival. We follow son Levi (having at last left the Richards) so here are some little sketches on the others.

Ananiah Dodge was a shoemaker. That particular industry became a big thing in certain areas of Massachusetts and a town or so in Maine, and factories sprung up employing thousands. Ananiah seems to have been quite skilled at his trade. We have a particular interest in this son, because his grandson, William^{8} a fine young man, played a particular role in the lives of some of our ancestors.

Ananiah's wife, Elizabeth Janes, lived in Brimfield, Hampshire County MA just over the county line and quite close to the family's home in Charlton, and they were married while the family was there. The easiest way to show the movements of this unit is to tell where the couple's children were born. The first two, William Janes^{7} (father of young William just referred to) and Susan were born in North Adams, MA. The next three were born in Croyden, NH, not far from his parents in New Grantham. Ananiah, Jr., born 1805 in Cambridge, MA, a shoemaking center, eventually migrated to Neutral City, Kansas. (Because he was opposed to slavery?) The last three were born in Prospect and Swanville, Maine, where the mother, Elizabeth, died age 58. Some of the children became very prosperous. After his wife's death, he and some of his children returned to Palmer MA, near Brimfield, where he died age 76.

Simon Dodge married Mary Turnbull at Damariscotta, Maine, date not stated. He was a boot-and-shoemaker, and also a musician in the War of 1812 stationed at Castine, Maine. The couple had six children. Huldah was probably born shortly after his death, in 1817, and died at age 14. His widow married a Mr. John Gibbs of Scotland and had three more children.

Stephen Dodge was born, it is said, in Royalston which is strangely far north. Perhaps they meant Boyl ston which is closer. He migrated with the family to New Grantham and married Mary Dunbar there, who had been born at Bridgewater MA. They had 11 children but not all lived. The last two, Susan and Mary Jane, were born at Sand Lake, Rensselaer County, New York--the first of our near line to live in New York. That is in the Albany/Troy area, where several of them later lived. Stephen served in the War of 1812.

Richard Dodge VI was a farmer. The Dodge genealogy gives his birth and death date--he lived to the ripe old age of 93--and mentions him buying and selling land from and to his father and that is all. But in researching the Ellis Family because our ancestor, his brother Levi, married Keziah Ellis, I found in the Sturbridge MA vital records, not only his brother's marriage but his as well, for he married Keziah's sister, Levina. They were specific enough to say, on page 192 under Ellis, "Levina & Richard Dodge, Jr of New Grantham (int adds Vt) Nov 29, 1802." Not only is it nice to know that, but it adds to our understanding of the family as you will see later on. It is frustrating not to know whether he and Levina had little Richard VII, for it seems logical they would have. It would seem they prospered there in New Grantham.

Lois Dodge, we are told, was born in 1783 and died 13 Sept.1872, at the age of 89. Whether she stayed single or married and raised a family was not told.

Parly Dodge, born in Sutton, married Helena Cooper of Croyden NH who was "descended from the Leland family." They had three children, the oldest of whom was deputy sheriff and auctioneer. The youngest was a teacher in Boston.

Nothing but birthdates were given for John and Patty. By the censuses we can tell they died very young, probably as babies.

Joshua Dodge, the youngest, was a year or two old when they moved to New Hampshire and likely that was the only kind of life he knew. He became a farmer. It was told of him that he was "of more than medium size with great strength and vigor, characteristic of his immediate relatives."

The reason that was underlined was in case it describes his brother Levi, our ancestor, and his son Dwight who migrated to Missouri. It might. They were both blacksmiths. Joshua married twice and had eight children.

References:

Sturbridge Vital Records to 1850
Notes and Memoranda Relating to Persons of the Name of Towne - by William B. Towne, first published in the New England Register beginning in October 1866 (Vol XX:367)
There are many Towne sources. Almost every book about the Salem Witchcraft Trials mentions Rebecca (Towne) Nurse.

Levi Dodge^6 (Richard^5 Richard^4 Richard^3 Richard^2 Richard^1) was born 22 June 1772 in Sutton, Worcester Co., MA to Richard V and Lois (Towne) Dodge. On 15 Mar 1796 in Sturbridge MA, age 23, he married 16-year old Keziah Ellis born 15 February 1780 to Jedediah and Martha (Freeman) Ellis.

Of course, histories on the Ellis and Freeman Families will be included as part of this set. Keziah's grandfathers were war veterans. Samuel Ellis was a Captain in the Revolutionary War and Samuel Freeman was a Lieutenant in the French and Indian War.

Levi and Keziah soon had two little babies in Sturbridge, Charlotte the oldest then Dwight, our ancestor. In 1799 they took those little ones with them to New Hampshire. As their youngest son, Ellis, born 26 years after they moved there, told it, his grandfather Richard (and probably Stephen though he did not say so) moved to New Grantham in 1798 and the rest of the sons and daughters followed him the next year. One would imagine the mother, Lois, also stayed behind for some of the children, such as Joshua, age 2½, were quite young at the time. Anyway, he said "they moved with ox teams about 125 miles through the wilderness to an unbroken tract where everything was to be done. Levi built a home on his father's land, near his father, and remained on the same farm until his death."

We are lucky that Ellis told all this to the historian, or else we probably would know almost nothing about the lives of Keziah and Levi. However, he may have related the information in a way hard to understand, or Dr. Dodge may have misinterpreted some of what was told to him. Also, since all this happened 26 years before Ellis was born, he was relying on what people had told him when he was little. I think some of it was misconstrued, for it was told that he said "Keziah's two unmarried sisters, Olive and Dorothy Ellis, went along" to live with them. The way it was told, it seemed that the sisters were young ladies.

I don't doubt those girls did go, though their presence is not reflected on the 1800 New Hampshire census. No wonder, because in studying Sturbridge vital records I found that Dorothy Ellis was born 18 December 1792 and Olive 2 December 1794. In the summer of 1799 they would have been 6½ and 4½. They did not go at that time. In November 1802 their older sister, Levina, married their already-brother-in-law, Richard Dodge VI, of New Grantham. No reason to go yet.

But some terrible sickness must have struck their family, perhaps an epidemic, because on 9 May 1804 their mother, Martha age 47, died. A month later on 14 June 1804, their father Jedediah Ellis, age 53, also succumbed. So Olive age 9½ and Dorothy age 11½ obviously went to live with their sisters in New Hampshire because they were orphans! Little sister Lucreatia, born 28 Feb 1798, who was then 6 years old probably stayed with other relatives in the area and married Reuben Lealand of Grafton in 1817. Maybe he

was related to Parly Dodge's wife of the previous generation? We won't go into who Keziah Ellis Dodge's other siblings were, just mentioned these because of the little girls who went to live with the Dodges in New Hampshire.

Levi and Keziah and all the others probably thought it was a great opportunity to acquire new homesteads in New Hampshire, not realizing that the type of agriculture they were used to did not work so well on rocky, timber-covered hills in a cooler climate. At any rate they went and settled on land belonging to his father. No doubt they wore themselves out clearing raw land, hauling stones, and trying to eke out a living for their family there. She must have missed her parents at first and mourned their early death. Bearing 12 children probably weakened her.

Levi was a blacksmith, and probably also a farmer. He died 8 Dec. 1835 at Croyden, Cheshire County (now Sullivan) NH, two years after his father. Keziah was left with no income and the children were not entirely grown. She probably had medical and funeral expenses to pay. They did not own the farm they were living on. There is no doubt the years had taken their toll on her health. She certainly could not carry on her husband's blacksmith business. More of the story will unfold as this progresses. She finally went back to Palmer, near Sturbridge, where she had relatives, and died there 4 February 1845, age 65.

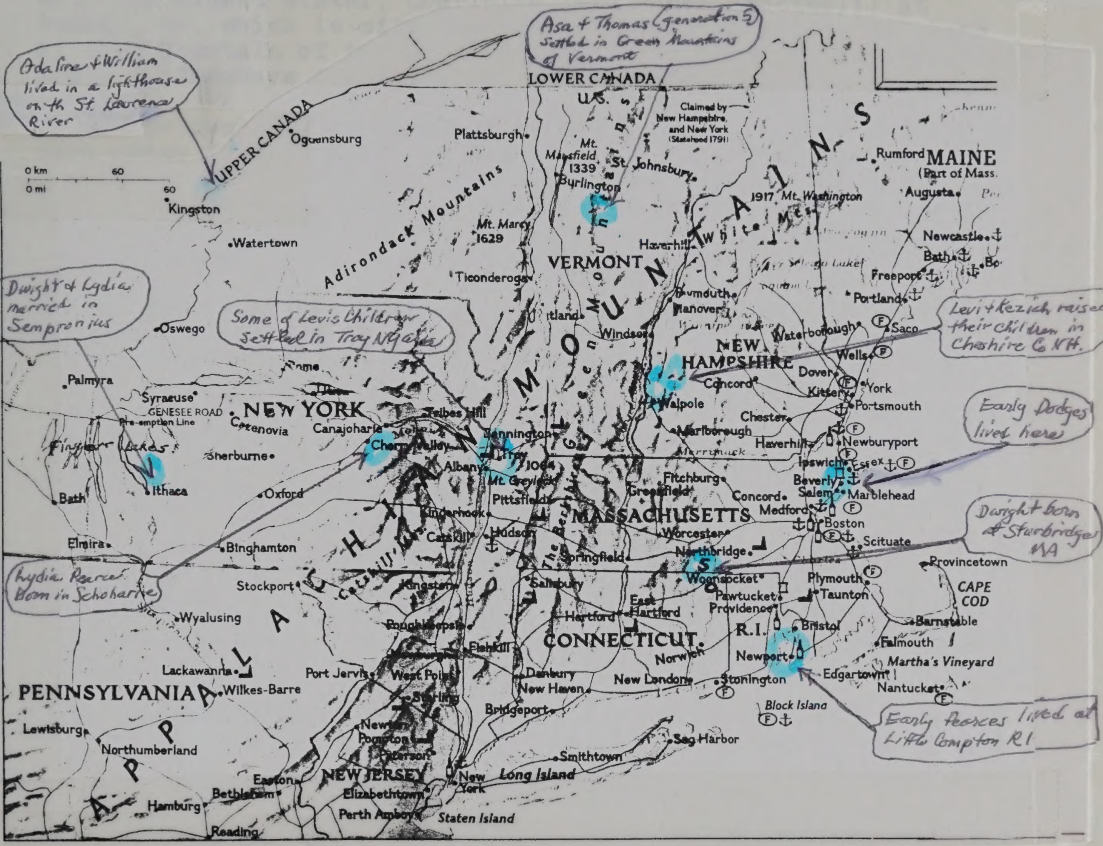
Children of Levi and Keziah (Ellis) Dodge:

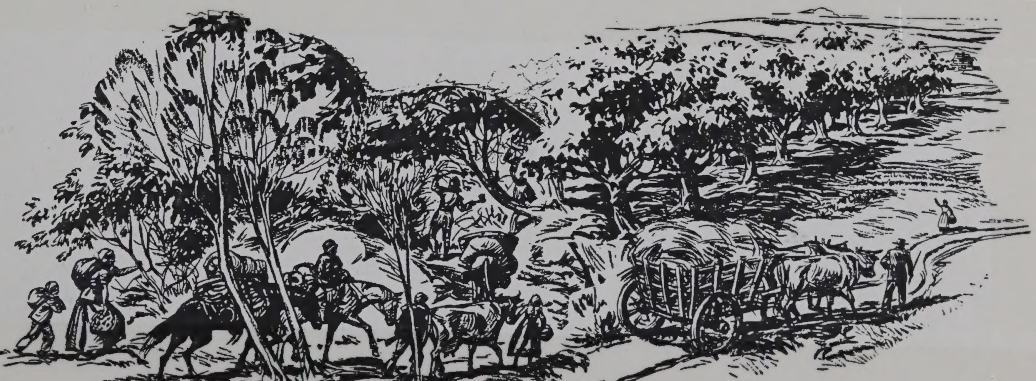
Charlotte	9 Jun 1796- 8 Dec 1866	m	18	John Stockwell
+Dwight	28 May 1798-23 Aug 1869	(1)	21 Dec 1817	Susanna Monroe
		(2)	9 Dec 1830	Lydia W. Pearce
Jedediah	7 Mar 1800-20 Aug 1825		ca 1822	Martha Blanchard
Levi Jr.	17 Mar 1802- 1862		ca 1824	Olive Blanchard
Keziah Jr.	27 Aug 1804-22 Mar 1875	(1)	18	Nathan Holbrook
		(2)	18	Cyrus Olds
John	17 Jan 1807-26 Feb 1807			infant
Freeman	17 Feb 1809-15 Jan 1886		24 Oct 1830	Candace Stockwell
Simon	6 Jul 1811- 8 Sep 1811			infant
Silas	21 Feb 1814- 1 Oct 1818			age 4
Samuel Orison	19 Apr 1818- 7 Oct 1839			age 21
Adaline	2 Apr 1820-living 1898		23 Nov 1840	William Dodge
Ellis	7 May 1825-living 1898	(1)	30 May 1846	Ellen Jane Cook
		(2)	11 Sep 1862	Edna Louise Wager

Since we follow Dwight Dodge, the next step, of course, is to give short sketches of what we know of the lives of the others. In this one case, however, we will break with tradition and tell about the youngest son, Ellis, first, then start with the oldest, Charlotte, on down. The reason for this unusual procedure is that he was the one who gave all the information to the historian, and events in his life shed so much light on the activities of the others that the story will be clearer this way.

DODGE FAMILY

Map charting some early Dodge & Pearce family migrations.


Adaline & William lived in a lighthouse on the St. Lawrence River
Asa & Thomas (generation 5) Settled in Green Mountains of Vermont
Dwight & Lydia married in Sempronius
Some of Levi's Children Settled in Troy NY area
Levi & Keziah raised their children in Cheshire Co NH.
Early Dodges lived here
Dwight born at Sturbridge MA
Lydia Pearce Born in Schoharie
Early Pearces lived at Little Compton RI
LOWER CANADA
UPPER CANADA
U.S.
Claimed by New Hampshire, and New York (Statehood 1791)
NEW YORK
VERMONT
NEW HAMPSHIRE
MAINE (Part of Mass.
MASSACHUSETTS
CONNECTICUT
R.I.
NEW JERSEY
PENNSYLVANIA
APPALACHIAN MOUNTAINS
Adirondack Mountains
White Mts.
Green Mountains
Catskills
CAPE COD
Long Island
Staten Island
Block Island
Martha's Vineyard
Finger Lakes
GENESEE ROAD
Pre-emption Line
0 km 60
0 mi 60



Ellis Dodge said the family moved 125 miles to New Hampshire by ox cart.

Ellis Dodge, the youngest, born 7 May 1825 in Croydon, NH, reported that the death of his father in December 1835 when he was ten years old, left him without any means of support; and he had to go live with his oldest sister, Charlotte (Mrs. John Stockwell) at Rumney, NH, which is situated near a stream on the south slope of Carr Mountain of the White Mountains, a part of the Appalachian Chain. (Nowadays there are ski resorts in the area.)

Before he could go, though, he needed a pair of shoes and had to earn money to buy them. By October 1836 he had a pair of shoes and 50¢ in his pocket for expenses. (50¢ in those days would be what a number of $ would be today!) He started out for Rumney on foot. The lunch his mother, Keziah, had provided "and his scanty clothes" were in a pack on his shoulder.

He had walked about 25 miles the first day without serious difficulty but the seriousness of his predicament began to dawn upon him the next morning while eating his breakfast by the roadside. He pushed on as well as he could; and in the middle of the afternoon a lady, noticing him as he passed, called to him to stop and made numerous friendly inquiries, after which she offered him a bowl of bread and milk. That gave him strength (and probably also encouragement) and enabled him to complete his 50-mile journey about 7:00 p.m.

After living with his sister and brother-in-law for three years, Ellis engaged with a neighboring farmer to work for a year for $25 and clothing. What happened to his mother in the meantime has not been explained. Somehow she managed to get back to Palmer MA, taking his youngest sister, Adeline, 5 years older than he, along.

About December 1840 Adeline, having just married her distant cousin, William Dodge, in Palmer, was visiting Rumney on their wedding trip. They decided to take Ellis home with them so that he could learn the carpenter trade from William.

Ellis stayed with them for a while, learning the trade, and then went to Troy, New York, to work as a carpenter. (Though he did not say so, it seems as though there were Stockwell families in Troy who were relatives of Adaline's husband and his brother Freeman Dodge's wife.) So he probably had someone to stay with at first. On 30 May 1846 he married Miss Cook, who later died. On 1 Nov 1849 he commenced working for a railroad line as car builder, after a year becoming a master car builder. Then he transferred to another train line at Albany; then to the Troy & Boston Railroad, getting promotions. By November 1855 he was living in Brooklyn working as master car builder for the Brooklyn Street Railway Co.. He married Miss Wager in 1862. There were no children from either marriage. In 1869 he returned to Troy. This talented man took out four patents on inventions very useful to railroads of his day. Like so many Dodges, he finally returned to Palmer where he was still living in 1898, drawing royalties.

Charlotte Dodge, oldest of 12 children, was born 9 June 1796 in Sturbridge to a 16-year old mother. When she was only three, her parents took her and her little brother with them 125 miles through the wilderness by ox team to a hilly farm they were trying to carve out of the upper Connecticut River Valley frontier. She grew up there and married John Stockwell in Croydon, NH. John was probably related to her brother Freeman's wife, Candace.

The couple went to live at Rumney, NH. Modern maps show Rumney situated near a stream on the south slope of a mountain in the White Mountain range. They raised three children we know of, and took in and cared for her young brother Ellis when her father died and her mother could not care for him. Possibly two of their daughters were Laura Davis and Martha Davis?? Like so many in the clan, this family wound up in Palmer. She died 8 Dec 1866, age 70.

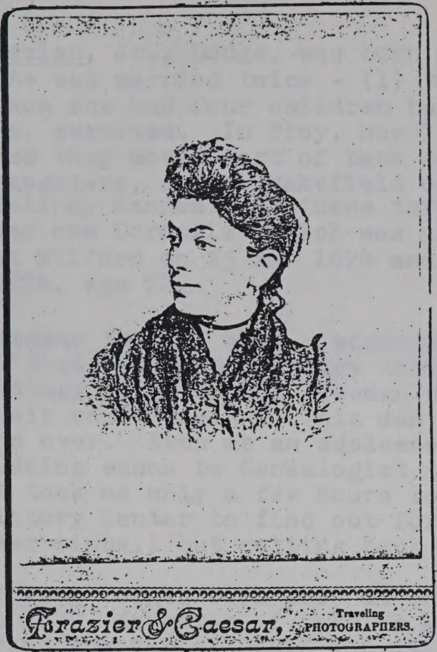
Jedediah Dodge, named for his Grandfather Ellis, married Martha Blanchard. They lived in Croydon where they had two children, Martha and Martin. He died 20 Aug 1825, age 25, when his son was three months old.

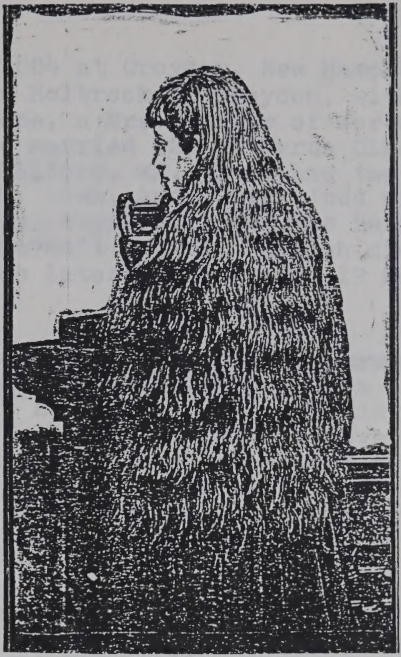
Levi Dodge, Jr., born 17 Mar 1802, married Olive Blanchard of Croydon, probably sister of Jedediah's wife. They lived at Grantham, Chelsea, then Randolph. He died in 1862. Four sons:
Elias who lived in Lowell MA
Elbridge who migrated to Wisconsin
Austin who migrated to Missouri
Henry who migrated "out west."
This is going to be out of chronological order, but we are very interested about that third son, Austin, born Jan 1831 in NH, because he came West to join his Uncle Dwight and his cousins in 1869. Dr. Dodge says he brought his widowed mother, Olive (Blanchard) Dodge with him, though this writer did not see her name on the 1870 census. He brought his wife, Mary Letitia (Lillie?) Dodge born 1842 in NY State, and a tiny daughter, Nellie N. Dodge born 31 Oct 1867, who died that fall, less than two years old. One can't help but wonder if the hard journey had anything to do with that.

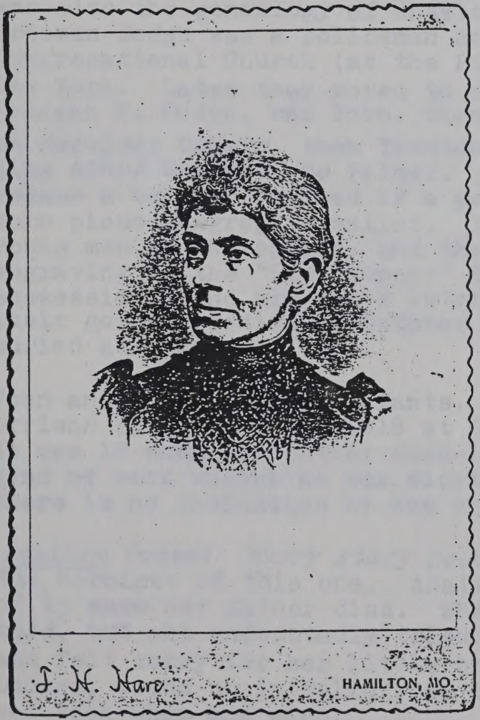
Austin was a blacksmith and Letitia was a milliner. They lived in town in Hamilton, Missouri. They had another little girl, Effie, but he did not live to see her grow up, for he died soon--on 4 Apr 1875, and is buried in the oldest Hamilton cemetery beside the first little daughter.

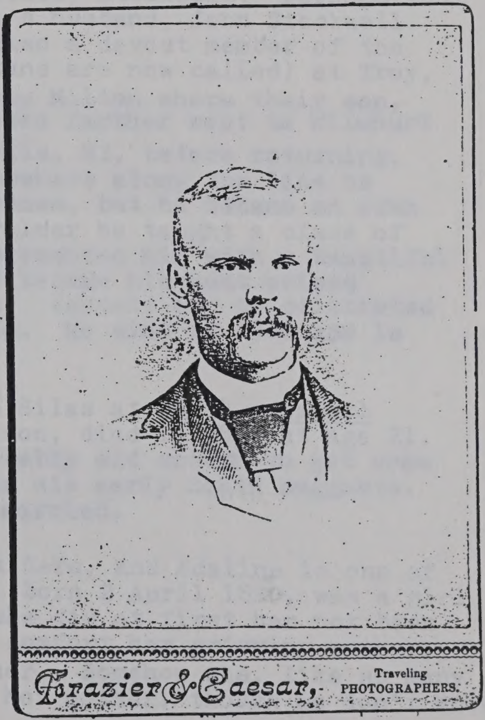
On 20 Jan 1876 the widow, Mary Letitia Dodge, married Dr. Ray D. Dwight. I do not know whether they had any children, but little Effie grew up to be a winsome lass with long, beautiful hair. Letitia must have enjoyed making pretty hats for her. Effie married a personable young man named George Fine, and probably moved to Muskogee, Oklahoma with him. (according to George Dodge's notes--though somebody misinformed George that Austin was the son of Keziah Dodge, Jr., whose sketch follows next.)

DODGE FAMILY


Frazier & Caesar, Traveling PHOTOGRAPHERS.




J. H. Hare
HAMILTON, MO.


Frazier & Caesar, Traveling PHOTOGRAPHERS.

TOP - Effie (Dodge) Fine, daughter of Austin Dodge, an early-day settler. Austin was nephew of Rev. Dwight Dodge. BOTTOM - Letitia Dodge, Effie's mother, who later married Dr. R. D. Dwight; and Effie's husband, George Fine

Keziah, Jr., Dodge, was born 27 Aug 1804 at Croydon, New Hampshire. She was married twice - (1) to Nathan Holbrook of Croydon, with whom she had four children but only one, a Mrs. Palmer of Worcester, MA, survived. In Troy, New York, she married (2) to Cyrus Olds and they moved sort of back east to Milford, MA. They had two daughters, a Mrs. Wakefield of Keokuk, Iowa, and a Mrs. Judd of Salina, Kansas. Of these three ladies, supposedly one was Rosilla and one Cordelia--which was which I haven't a clue. Keziah died at Milford on 25 Mar 1874 and Mr. Olds later in the year, 19 Nov 1874, age 71.

Freeman Dodge. What a wonderful name! The Dodges were so proud of their Freeman ancestry that half a continent away nearly a century after Samuel Freeman died, the Dodges were still naming their sons Freeman. This man is but a sample, it occurred over and over. Even as an adolescent I suspected that was so and every budding wanna be Genealogist needs a success for encouragement. It took me only a few hours looking at microfiche at a Family History Center to find out for sure it was so, and I've been hooked ever since.) but getting back to earth--

Freeman Dodge, born 1809 at Croydon, married Candace Stockwell in 1830, daughter of Charles and Caroline (Bellows) Stockwell and granddaughter of David and Abial (Giles) Stockwell. Perhaps that was also the genealogy of Charlotte's husband, John Stockwell. Freeman Dodge was a policeman and also a devout member of the Congregational Church (as the Puritans are now called) at Troy, New York. Later they moved to nearby Milton where their son, Freeman M. Dodge, was born, then moved farther west to Wilmhurt in Herkimer County, then Trenton Falls, NY, before returning, like other Dodges, to Palmer. Somewhere along the line he became a butcher instead of a policeman, but he became an even more pious Congregationalist. In Palmer he taught a class of young men at the church, and they presented him with a beautiful engraving of the "Last Supper" that became his most prized possession , and his son's later on. Candace and he celebrated their golden wedding 24 October 1880. He died in 1886 and is buried at Palmer.

John and Simon died as infants, and Silas at age 4. Samuel Orrison Dodge, born in 1818 at Croydon, died in 1839 at age 21. He was 17 when his father died--probably old enough to get some kind of work unless he was sickly as his early death suggests. There is no indication he was ever married.

Adaline Dodge! *Every story needs* a hero, and Adaline is one of the heroines of this one. Adaline, born 2 April 1820, was a girl of 15 when her father died. What she did at first has not been told, but she undoubtedly tried to comfort her grieving mother, and felt sorry for her little brother. Somehow she, like so many Dodges, wound up in Palmer, as did her mother, though we don't know who took whom and when.

What we do know is that Adaline had a big heart and that the young man she married just couldn't have been nicer. Her husband, William Dodge^{8} (William James^{7} Ananiah^{6} Richard^{5}) was cousin of Adaline Dodge^{7} (Levi^{6} Richard ^{5}) in that her grandfather was his great grandfather. A little sketch about his grandfather, Ananiah, appears on page 51. Our William was the second oldest of the 14 children of Ananiah's son William Janes^{7}, a tanner and shoemaker. William must have learned cooperation very early, and his father must have made many shoes to support a family like that.

Though William was born in Maine, he was working as a carpenter in Palmer when he and Adaline met and married. This 22-year old young man took the 15-year old boy from New Hampshire to his own home and taught him to be a good carpenter who succeeded very well. He must have realized Ellis was bright and hard working. Perhaps he thought he could assist him in his own business. More likely he had a kind heart and loved his wife so wanted to make her happy.

Besides being a carpenter, he was a tax collector and census taker. They probably moved to Troy, New York, with Ellis, for William served in the Civil War from 1862-64 as a Captain in the New York Volunteers. After the war he and Adaline were keepers of a lighthouse on Sister Island on the St. Lawrence River. They had four children. Baby Charlotte died age 2. Flavius and William Orrison lived near them in New York. Ellen Jane lived near, too, but across the river on the Canadian side.

Footnote: You will understand this better as the story progresses, but William and Adeline kept in touch with their Missouri relatives. Perhaps duties at the lighthouse left them with ample time for correspondence. It appears William did much of the writing. Our cousin George was privileged to see, or was told of, some of the letters. His notes mention two of them. One was from William O. Dodge, Sister Island Light Station, on St. Lawrence River (return address) dated 15 April 1880 to John Dodge and his wife. In it he mentioned two of Charlotte's daughters and (George's) Aunt Keziah's daughters Rosilla and Cordelia, also his brother, Flavius. (The writing or reporting was bad--William had no brother Flavius. He did have sister Flavilla and son Flavius.)

The other letter, dated 9 July 1880, appears to have been sent to Susanna McCollum, daughter of Dwight's son Silas. William mentioned Charlotte's daughters Laura Davis and Martha Davis, also Letitia Lillie (apparently in Missouri, and probably Austin's wife-pages 57-8.) He also gave his regards to nephews John and Silas.

DODGE FAMILY

References:

Virkus Compendium of American Genealogy Series Vol 7 Page 142
  This is a series of abbreviated genealogical tables.
  The first column goes from Immigrant John Ellis (Ellice) to John Ellis brother of our Captain Samuel Ellis (Keziah's grandfather).
  The second column goes from Immigrant Samuel Freeman to Lt. Samuel Freeman (her other grandfather), and also reveals her Mayflower ancestry.
Vital Records to the Year 1850 of (separately) Sturbridge, Charlton, Southbridge, Palmer, Newton, Needham, Medfield, Medway and others
Massachusetts Soldiers & Sailors in the War of the Revolution (under E's) Page 315, third entry from top-Capt. Samuel Ellis of Sturbridge
Massachusetts Officers in the French & Indian Wars 1748-1763 by Voye Entry #2080 is Lt. Samuel Freeman of Sturbridge
Freeman Genealogy - by Frederick Freeman (1875)
  Volume I - Memorial of Edmund Freeman of Sandwich and His Descendants
  Volume II - Memorial of Samuel Freeman of Watertown and His Descendants
  Keziah was descended from both of these men.
First Census of the United States--Worcester County, MA
Early Connecticut Marriages Prior to 1800 - Frederick W. Bailey
History of Worcester County, Massachusetts, Vol II - Section on Sturbridge especially, and of Sutton, Charlton, etc incidentally. (1879 and other editions)
History of Sturbridge and Southbridge
New England Register Vol 65:155 - Interpretation of Woodward's and Saffery's Map of 1642, or the Earliest Bay Path - by Levi Badger Chase, esq. of Sturbridge, Mass. (this is not must reading since it covers such an early date, but gives good background on the locale and its effect on those who settled there, including our people who were pioneers)

No printed Ellis genealogy reaches far enough down in time to help us much, so the Ellis Family segment will be the result of years of hard work capped off by the accidental discovery of an unpublished paper by a descendant of Keziah (Ellis) Dodge's granduncle. Checking that paper for accuracy helped prove our own line.

Dwight Dodge^{7} (Levi^{6} Richard^{5} Richard^{4} Richard^{3} Richard^{2} Richard^{1}) the second of twelve children, was born 28 May 1798 in Sturbridge* to Levi and Keziah (Ellis) Dodge when his mother was 18. Next year, when he was a year old, his parents took him and his three-year old sister along with the family group 125 miles by ox cart "through the wilderness to an unbroken tract where everything was to be done." The usual route, and that which they probably took, was a road over what had been an ancient Indian path to Springfield MA, and thence up a trail paralleling the Connecticut River to Western New Hampshire, stopping before they had quite reached the White Mountains.

Not that they were the first in Cheshire County. There had been some people there for many years, including Dodges not closely related to them, but until the land crunch few had stayed. The land was more suited to sheep raising, or to the dairying industry now prevalent in that area, than the general farming-grain raising they had in mind. It was too far and too difficult to transport goods to market. The land Dwight's grandfather purchased was full of timber to be cleared and unbroken to the plow. Some of the acreage may have been on what there was of a Connecticut River flood plain, but most was hilly, rocky, and the growing season short.

Not much was said about their family life there. Views of the nearby mountains may have been breathtakingly beautiful but that does not put food into hungry young mouths. Levi was probably a very good blacksmith. He taught the trade to Dwight, who used it to good advantage. Levi did not own his farm--his father did. As the preceding pages have shown, most of the sons and daughters--and all of them appear to have been bright and capable--settled someplace else, in Maine, Massachusetts, Troy NY, or even in a lighthouse on an island in the St. Lawrence River. They became shoemakers, carpenters and so on. Freeman the policeman-turned-butcher who started out in Troy, NY, wound up as a religion teacher in Palmer. You can tell this family was religiously-inclined.

Our ancestor, Dwight, a blacksmith like his father, was extremely religious, too, and became a minister of the Gospel, most likely during his early twenties.

The family Bible says he married on 21 Dec 1817, Susanna Monroe, born 10 August 1799 in Croyden, Cheshire County, New Hampshire. The 1800 census shows a Mr. & Mrs. Nathaniel Monroe. Maybe they were her parents. One might take it for granted that they married in New Hampshire, but the usually detailed Bible is silent about that one place. Dr. J. T. Dodge reported Dwight "married in Sempronius, New York, a lady from Croyden, New Hampshire."

---

*The Dodge Family Bible says "Dwight Dodge was born in Stirbridge State of Massachusett County of Wossester May the 28th 1798."

Though I have never run across that, it has been said that one book reported he was born in New York.

Perhaps these youngsters, ages 18 and 19, each came west separately seeking opportunity and were delighted to meet again. Several Dodge families were already in the area. No one has said whether they were distant cousins or if Dwight made contact with them. The prosperous Finger Lakes region was already settled, this being in the military district set aside for land grants for Revolutionary War veterans.

The "History of Cayuga County" says that the Indians who had previously occupied the Finger Lakes region had been "civilized" for centuries to the point where they lived in longhouse villages, not teepees, and planted fine fields of squash, corn, and vegetables, that they were not such fierce warriors as the tribes who roamed the eastern part of the state. The land was already cleared when the white settlers got there.

It was easy to get to that place from New Hampshire. A picture on the next page shows boats on the Mohawk River in 1810. They came seven years later when transportation was even better. Originally the only really difficult part of the journey was caused by swift currents at the juncture of the Mohawk and the Hudson, necessitating a very long portage. To reach the Hudson from New Hampshire, most travelers took a pretty good road going east-west across far southern Vermont, widened from an old Indian trail that had been used for centuries. Highway 9 now approximates that route. The reason to think they went that way is that most everybody did.

So, perhaps Dwight and Susanna met again in Sempronius, fell in love, and got married--but ancestor sleuths have to be nosy people, otherwise we would never learn anything. It looks to me as though Dwight and the neighbor girl eloped. Adding to that suspicion is the fact that eight months later their oldest child, Silas Dwight, was born in Sempronius, but when the next child, Lucy, came they were back in Newport, New Hampshire. That suggests probably her parents were there and she wanted to be near them when the baby came, especially if the first birth was slightly premature. The family does show up on the 1820 New Hampshire census. They were back in New York soon after. Little Levi Freeman Dodge was born in Sempronius but died in 1822, aged one year and three days.

About this period in time, exact date unknown, Dwight became a minister of the Gospel. He soon had a sizeable congregation. Susannah's health seems to have been delicate, but they had two more children, John Freeman in 1824 and then Lydia Susanna on 13 July 1830. Three weeks and two days later Susannah died - on 5 August 1830, age 31. She probably died of puerperal fever or a body damaged in previous child bearing. People still did not know about germs in those days. Even if they had they might not have been able to save her life.

While Susanna was so ill Lydia, a devoted friend from Dwight's congregation came into the home to nurse her and care for the children, especially the baby. In later years, Lydia often spoke sadly about how sick Susanna had been during her last illness, that actually she was ailing even before the baby came. The hot weather made her fever even worse. She was bedridden, very weak and suffered greatly during those last weeks.

Everyone was at least relieved that the little daughter lived but she did require extra care, and had to adjust to cow's milk. The heat was difficult for her, too. Naturally Lydia fell in love with the little baby who was so dependent on her. The baby's parents named the baby "Lydia" for her and "Susanna" for her own mother. There was always a very close bond between the two Lydias.

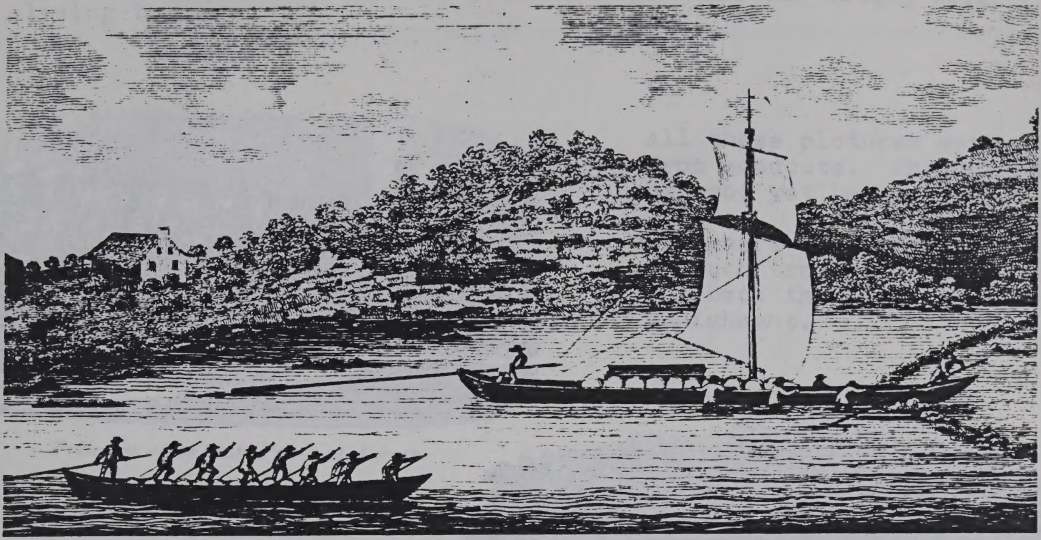
In those days Dwight was a very busy man, almost too busy, being minister, farmer, and blacksmith. Back in those days ministers were expected to have more than one way to earn a living, the only exceptions being in some very rich congregations in large cities. He must have been quite impressed with Lydia's character and devotion, for he soon asked for her hand in marriage and she accepted.

On 9 December 1830 (Reverend) Dwight Dodge married Lydia Woodman Pearce, born 6 October 1802 in Schoharie, Schoharie County, New York, to James and Phebe (Wood) Pearce who had only recently arrived in that area from Little Compton, Rhode Island.

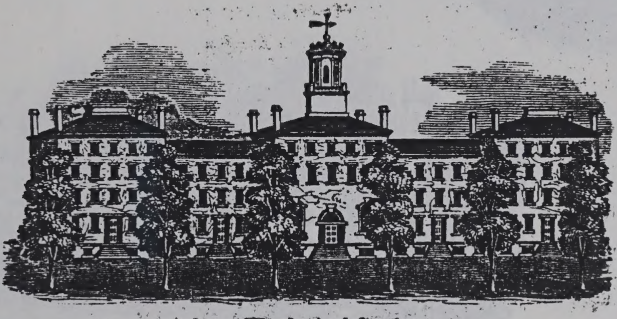
Locating Lydia's family in New York records was a little complicated at first until we caught on that when they changed states records changed the spelling of the name from "Pearce" to "Pierce." It had something to do with politics--I'm still fuzzy about the details. The Dodge Bible says Pearce, but my mother used to point indignantly at the word and say, "It should be Pierce. I'm positive of that!" There are two rather comprehensive genealogies of the Pearces but by the time they get down to her details are sparse. One said she was born in 1802 and married a Dodge, nothing about leaving Rhode Island. The other does say she was living in Kingston, Mo. They definitely give her ancestry back to the early 1600's.

The 1810 Schoharie NY census, page 034 shows James Pearce, man & wife over 45, boy -10, boy & 2 girls 10-16, 2 boys & girl 16-20, young lady 26-45 which fits our family except Lydia was 8, not 10.

James Pearce died 22 July 1820. By 1830 Lydia & her mother Phebe were living with her older brother Giles and his family in Sempronius page 311 of the census; her brother George & family on page 337; and Dwight Dodge & family page 309. Several families of both surnames were there. I am not sure when they moved to Cayuga County but they must have been there several years, for they had become enthusiastic members of Dwight's congregation before 1830.



A View of the Boats and Manner of Navigating on the Mohawk River, 1810



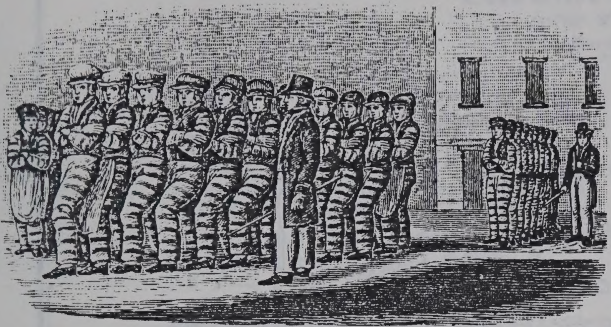
Auburn Theological Seminary.

The *Auburn Theological Seminary* was established by the synod of Geneva in 1819, and by the act of incorporation, in 1820, was placed under commissioners, chosen by the synods of Genesee, Geneva, and Oneida. There are four professors in the institution. Over 300 clergymen have been educated since its establishment. In 1839, the number of students was 71. The principal building is of stone, presenting a front of 200 feet. The library exhibits a valuable collection of choice theological works, and contains upwards of 5,000 vols. No charge is made for the use of the library, rooms, or furniture. The *Methodist Episcopal* society was organized in 1821; their house, on Chapel-street, was erected soon after, and has been since sold to the Catholics; their present stone chapel, on North-street, was erected in 1833. The *Baptist* society was organized in 1825, and built a church on South-street, (since sold to the Universalists,) in 1829; their church on Genesee-street was erected in 1834. The *Second Presbyterian* society was organized in 1829, and the foundation of their house laid.

ABOVE--Before the Canal. There was no such thing as the Erie Canal when Dwight or Lydia first lived in New York State but it was being used actively by the time they left.

LEFT--It may well be that Dwight never set foot in the seminary depicted here, but at least the family was familiar with it, for this is how it looked while they were living not so very many miles south of there. (written 1841)

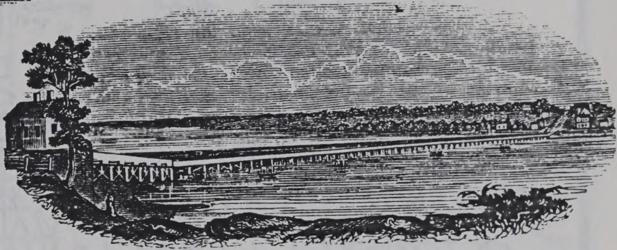
Engravings from "Historical Collections of the State of New York" - J.W. Barber et al, Tuttle, printed 1841 while our Dodges were living there.



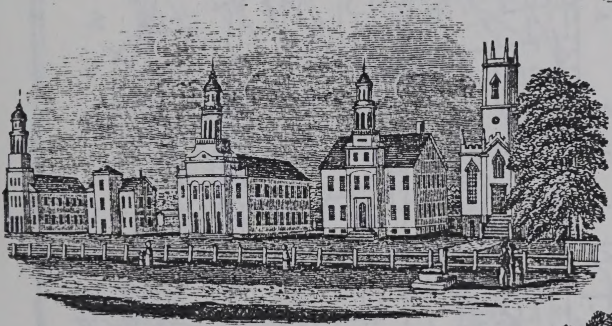
Prisoners at the State Prison at Auburn.

All these pictures were from woodcuts. Photography had not yet been invented.

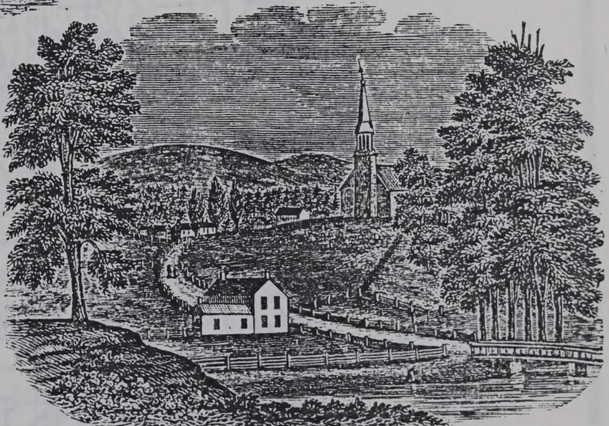
Prisoners would cry foul at such treatment nowadays but back then jail was for punishment.



Cayuga Bridge.



Public buildings in Homer.

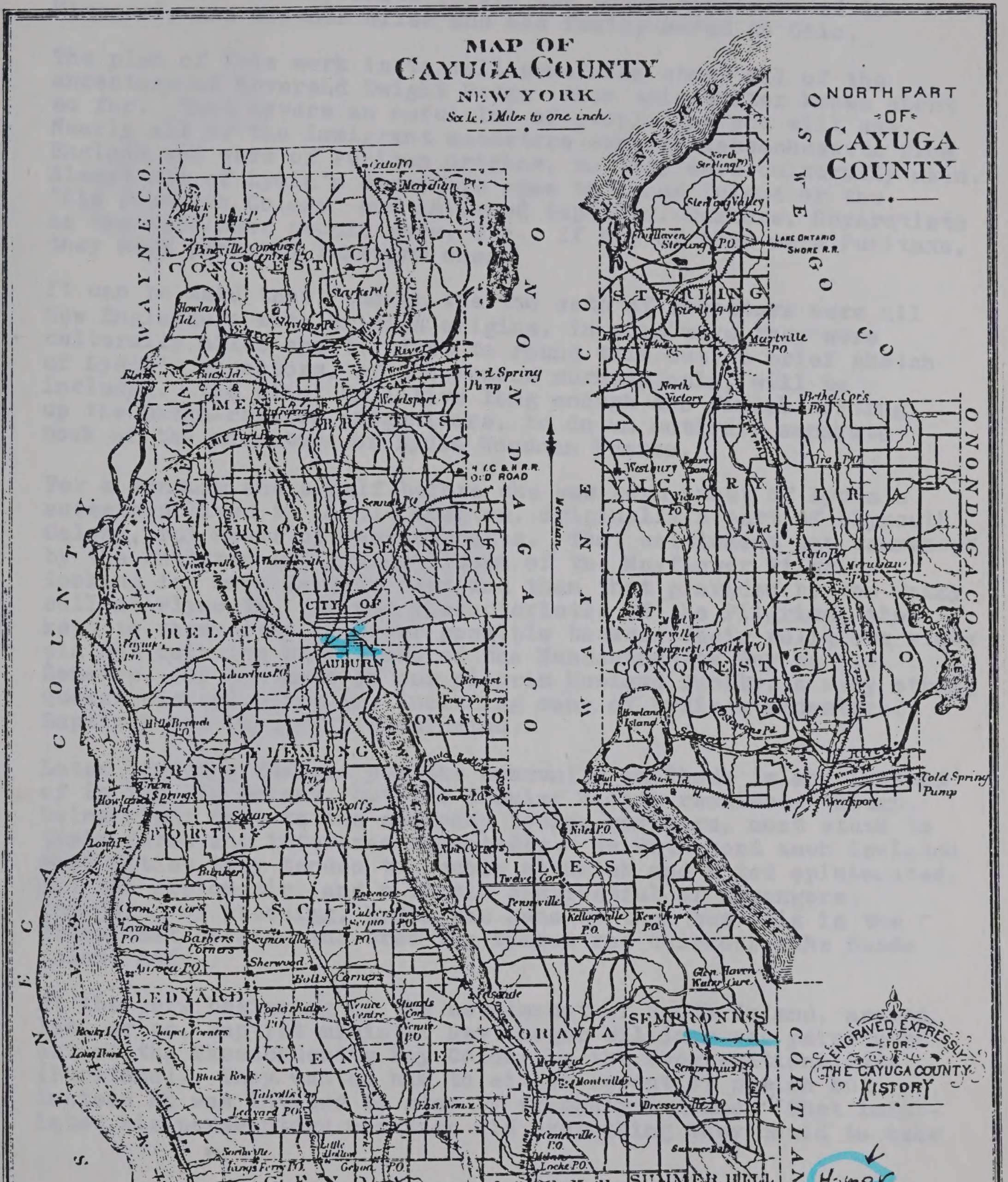


Ancient stone church in Schoharie.

Though the buildings and bridges may not be modern by today's standards, they were lovely, don't you agree? They were more advanced than the more primitive surroundings of early settlers in their part of Missouri.

DODGE FAMILY

Rev. Dwight and Lydia Dodge raised their family here. Homer, in Cortland Co., would be just beyond the SE border on the map.


MAP OF
CAYUGA COUNTY
NEW YORK
Scale, 5 Miles to one inch.
NORTH PART OF CAYUGA COUNTY
ENGRAVED EXPRESSLY FOR THE CAYUGA COUNTY HISTORY
WAYNE CO.
ONONDAGA CO.
OSWEGO CO.
SENECA COUNTY
TOMPKINS CO.
CORTLAND CO.
LAKE ONTARIO
LAKE ONTARIO SHORE R.R.
CONQUEST
CATO
MENTZ
BRUTUS
THROOP
SENNETT
AUBURN
CITY OF
AURELIUS
FLEMING
OWASCO
SPRINGPORT
NILES
SCIPIO
LEDYARD
MORAVIA
SEMPRONIUS
VENICE
GENOA
LOCKE
SUMMER HILL
STERLING
VICTORY
IRA
OWASCO LAKE
SKANEATELES LAKE
CAYUGA LAKE
Homer

Just so you know, Phebe (Wood) Pearce, Lydia's mother, died 25 June 1842 in Sempronius before the Dodge family moved to Missouri, and brother Giles and his family moved to Ohio.

The plan of this work is to tell something about all of the ancestors of Reverend Dwight Dodge whom this writer knows about so far. That covers an awful lot of people, as you will see. Nearly all of the immigrant ancestors came to Massachusetts from England and were of Puritan origins, so they were culturally akin. Almost all of Lydia's ancestors came to Rhode Island or the "Old Plymouth Colony" and included Baptists, Quakers, Separatists as the Mayflower people were, etc. If any of them were Puritans, they were probably lukewarm ones.

It can be said that, though the two sets of ancestors were all New Englanders with British origins, in some ways they were culturally miles apart. Just to round this out, a brief sketch of Lydia's ancestors, of the Pearce surname only, will be included. The plan, if I live long enough and finish writing up the Dodge-related progenitors, to do an entirely separate book of the ancestors of Lydia Woodman Pearce.

For a century and a half before she was born, most of Lydia's ancestors lived in Little Compton, originally a part of Plymouth Colony, but never of Massachusetts. That settlement was commenced by the children and grandchildren of the Mayflower Pilgrims looking for more fertile farmland than that provided by the rocky soil at Plymouth. As was characteristic of the Pilgrims, they kept to themselves whenever possible because their religious views did not coincide with those of the Massachusetts Bay people. Somehow, for instance in our pilgrim Howland family, a very strong Quaker element mixed in, including many of Lydia's ancestors. Baptists and Quakers predominated.

Later boundary changes put the community in Rhode Island instead of in the Old Colony, but the insular habits remained--though being right next to the sea many became mariners, most stuck to their farms and interbred repeatedly. As with most such isolated communities they tended to become clannish and a tad opinionated, not too diplomatic, and a little distrustful of strangers. (Speaking of breeding, Lydia was gone by then but this is the place that created and bred the famous red chickens--the Rhode Island Reds.)

At the very beginning of the settlement of Rhode Island, around 1640 or so, Baptist minister Rev. Roger Williams was persecuted out of the Massachusetts Bay Colony by the Congregationalists (Puritans). They wanted him to either repent or perish but instead he was invited to stay by friendly Indians. That infuriated his persecutors who then did everything they could to take

over Rhode Island and rule it their way. They could not because Rev. Williams was bright enough to secure a royal charter. But you do see from this why all Rhode Islanders, not just Little Compton, should be distrustful of strangers, especially Congregationalists. It just so happened, of course, that was exactly what the Dodges had been almost up to Dwight's generation. After the Revolutionary War the age of revivalism swept the country. Levi Dodge's children - some of them - were among those converted to other forms of Protestantism, in Dwight's case with such enthusiasm that he became a minister. But Puritanism was the force that brought the Dodges to these shores in the first place.

All the foregoing, of course, is over-simplification, told just to demonstrate the differences in the Dodge and Pearce family backgrounds. It gets yet more dramatic when one remembers that Lydia, herself, was born in Schoharie, New York, a 3rd-generation Palatine German community. They clung to the German language so long that some of them were still speaking it when she was a child. It seems the Pearces moved there around the turn of the century, but other Rhode Islanders went there when the British occupied their part of the state as part of a naval blockage during the Revolution. Schoharie was the scene of some very bloody battles. They appreciated all the help they could get. The Pearces were among the Rhode Islanders attracted to the place as their first New York home.

The story of why the Palatines happened to be there is a long story in itself. In the early 1700's the Palatines started to flood other parts of Europe, such as England, to flee intolerable conditions at home. The British decided to take advantage of some of them, transporting them to New York forests in a scheme to get them to manufacture naval stores--turpentine, pitch, timbers and so on for the use of the British navy, at a cheap price. They started out enthusiastically--only problem, the people hired to supervise didn't know how to do the work! The plan fizzled and the poor Germans were abandoned without provisions, in the winter in the woods among wild Indians, to shift for themselves.

Many of them did starve to death. The story of their struggles makes interesting reading for anyone who wants to look it up.* Their troubles would break your heart, but through frugality and stubbornness some of them managed to survive and build a neat, thriving community over time, many of them in Schoharie.
It is not surprising they were sometimes blunt in their dealings with others, saying exactly what was on their minds.

Lydia, of course, was not German, but her early formative years were among those people's grandchildren. Don't you imagine she picked up many of their ways, such as matter-of-factness rather than tact?

---

*One such reference is "Westward Expansion" pp. 97-8 by Ray A. Billington et al (5th Ed. 1982 - McMillan)

DODGE FAMILY

Dwight and Lydia Dodge were my great-great grandparents, and I grew up hearing about them. Their youngest daughter, Emma Adelia, was my great grandmother whom I remember from early childhood. My grandmother, Mary Lydia, used to take us children to Sunday School to the very same Christian Church congregation he began in Kingston. Sometimes after the services elderly people used to come up to us and tell what a fine person Reverend Dodge was. It made us proud. They also mentioned Emma's late husband, Dr. Dunn, who they said was especially nice, too.

This first story about Dwight Dodge when he was a boy was repeated to us many times when we were little. I always wished that somehow those same circumstances would happen to me, so that I could pull the same neat trick he did.

It seems that when Dwight was a boy he was walking past an apple orchard in New Hampshire. He observed some especially beautiful, delicious looking apples, and he was already hungry. As boys will sometimes do, he helped himself to one. Upon observing that, the farmer who owned the orchard got mad. He wanted no more of thieving boys, so he sicced his dog on him. Young Dwight, seeing the dog advancing, pointed still farther on and said, "Go, boy! Go, boy!" and the dog kept going on past him. The farmer, provoked as he was, could not keep himself from grinning. He scolded the boy, but commended him for his "Yankee wit."

Dwight grew up to be a congenial and caring person, but at the same time he must have been a "work-a-holic" and perfectionist. The following story illustrates that. Skipping ahead some thirty-odd years, the Reverend Dwight Dodge went through a very stressful period. He was probably trying to do too much, keeping up his blacksmith business and farm while at the same time caring for a sizeable church congregation. The strain of always being on call for his people, visiting the sick, counseling or consoling the troubled, preaching at funerals and coming up with new material for weekly sermons started to get to him. He was beginning to get "burned out" as they say nowadays.

At that time little Emma Adelia was five. Silas, the oldest, was newly married and had gone to live in Missouri. Some of the Hulls (Silas' in-laws) had either joined them or were getting ready to. They were painting a glowing picture of the undeveloped northwest Missouri countryside and all the opportunity waiting there. Son John, already a young man, was chafing at the bit to get started, wanted his parents to go along, but would go anyway if they did or not. Martin and Lucy (Dodge) Streeter were toying with the idea but had not yet decided. Most of the children were eager for new adventure.

Dwight was hesitant. Probably Lydia was, too. They were settled and well liked in a beautiful area in New York State. They were secure financially, and he felt his congregation needed him or he would not have been so active trying to meet their needs. He was in his late 40's, slightly past the age when limitless energy pushes one on to new fromtiers. Though it was true his grandfather, Richard V, had done it at the same age, unlike Richard he felt stressed out. He sort of doubted he had the stamina to undertake a trip like that, to say nothing of the physical demands he knew were necessary to get started in an undeveloped rural area.

About that time Reverend Dodge got so depressed and wound up that he started mumbling in his sleep. Lydia did not know what to make of it. She also was tired. She had a big family to care for, and duties as a preacher's wife made extra demands on her time, too. Her life was not necessarily a picnic. If Dwight could not sleep and mumbled, she could not get any rest, either.

When the mumblings turned into actual sermons, it was just too much for her. Talking about it did no good. Finally she confided in friends who, of course, were members of his church. They did not know how to help. What's more, they thought surely she must be exaggerating. Mumbling, yes--but preaching sermons in one's sleep was just too strange. By then Lydia was in a state of confusion so she let some people observe. Sure enough, he started preaching--but upon awakening and finding out what had happened behind his back, he felt he had been betrayed.

Dwight never preached in his sleep again--but he did decide to move to Missouri.

One might say that the story about the boy, the apples, and the dog sound suspiciously like George Washington and the cherry tree, or like something a minister such as Reverend Dodge would say during a sermon to hold the attention of his congregation. However, his descendants did believe it, so maybe the boy did exactly what they say. Dwight must have been witty to attract the following he had.

The second story must be true, for it accidentally reveals more about their personalities than they intended to tell. From it you can see that Lydia and Dwight, though they loved each other, did not understand one another. Was Dwight too touchy? Was Lydia too outspoken? She certainly meant no harm but he was hurt, and she did not understand why. In fact, she never did "get it," for the story was repeated to later generations, and we all got a chuckle out of the idea of preaching in one's sleep.

Despite all of the above, Dwight and Lydia did have a happy marriage. But there was another, very serious problem. Silas, the oldest, was not quite 12 when his mother died and seems never to have recovered

from the shock. The boy's heart must have broken to see his mother suffer so and die a lingering death. It seems as though, as the oldest born to a teenage mother, he had been the one she depended on to be the big boy who helped her, especially if she sometimes felt weak. If so, he must have felt crushed he could not help her get well, or that someone else had to take over when she got so very critically ill. Whatever the situation, he kept his feelings bottled up inside until it was too late to ever change. When she died, the poor little fellow never, ever, let go of his dead mother, even though he lived to old age himself. No one on earth could take her place, He regarded anyone who tried to be a terrible person.

Can't you just imagine the situation in that home during Susannah's last illness? There must have been fervent family prayers that she would recover, even when things looked bleak. Can't you just see Lydia trying to quiet the scared and fretful children so that her patient could rest? Perhaps the tiny baby had trouble digesting the animal milk formula she was given, and cried a lot, upsetting the entire household. The infant's fretful wails would have been hard to bear at such a time. How could the household not have been disrupted? Lydia must have done a marvellous job nursing her beloved friend, trying to care for the friend's family the best she could, like a sacred trust, out of love. The fact that Susannah named the baby Lydia, as she did, proves that the two were very close in affection.

The ancient Puritans had an abhorence of the single life, quoting the Bible when God said, "It is not good that man should be alone" whereupon He created Eve. The Congregational Church would not permit single adults to live alone, ordering them to "attach yourself to some family." If the situation continued, a committee would search out a family and order the person to live there.

It is true that after the 1692 witchcraft hysteria the Church lost much credibility in the eyes of many--particularly, one may be sure, in the eyes of the ancestors of Dwight's grandmother, Lois (Towne) Dodge. The Towne family were the greatest sufferers of all during that dreadful time--still, the Dodges were good members of the church up to the time Dwight was inspired by evangelists to switch to a different sect. Remember that his brother Freeman during this same time was teaching a Congregational religion class to young men. Dwight was steeped from early childhood in Puritanical traditions, regardless of what he called himself. Those attitudes were passed on down to his descendants.

The modern tradition of a year's "mourning time" after the loss of a spouse had not yet come into vogue. Nobody ever thought of such a thing back then. Quite the contrary, though all of them were sad. including Lydia, the children needed a mother and he needed a wife. Within four months they were married. Everyone seems to have thought it was a great idea except for poor little Silas.

DODGE FAMILY

When Silas first came west to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1844 and his parents in 1846, they settled in what was then called Blythe Township, named for an old pioneer, Riley Blythe, who had hunted and trapped along the branches of Shoal Creek long before. At first the county seat had been at a Mormon settlement called "Far West," and continued to be there until after 1843.

The culture of the Mormons and that of the other settlers clashed to a point which inevitably led to bloodshed. Early history of the Mormons is remindful in a way of the first Puritans of early New England back in the 1630's or so. Just like the Puritans, the Mormons were absolutely convinced theirs was the only way to salvation. They proselytized vigorously and they insisted on governing any area they were situated in, especially if they were a majority.

The Mormon movement started in New York State among people with Yankee background, though others had joined by the 1840's. The bulk of early Missouri settlers were of very different culture, such as the original French or else southerners who had come there through Kentucky, Tennessee, and contiguous states. Those people were distrustful of Yankees to start with. The new religion they considered false, distasteful, even evil. Both sides became bellicose whereupon the Mormons were beset by angry mobs even before the Missouri governor finally called out the troops to drive them out. The manner in which they accomplished the task left something a great deal better to be desired. The refugees finally retraced their steps eastward to the Mississippi River where they established a settlement in Hancock County, Illinois, called Nauvoo. As with most forced evacuations, a few stragglers stayed behind. Son John Freeman Dodge married the daughter of one such family, though most Mormons were gone when the Dodges came.

Far West was in the western part of the county. As the whole area filled up, the population center started to shift eastward so that it was felt necessary to move the county seat to a more central location. The Missouri legislature selected a committee to find a site and lay the groundwork. Several men were chosen, but it is said that the actual work was accomplished by only three of them, Robert D. Ray of Carroll County, Milford Donaho of Daviess County, and George W. Dunn of Ray County. (It just so happens that the latter of the three, Judge George Washington Dunn of Richmond, MO, later became brother-in-law of the youngest Dodge daughter Emma, our ancestor, when she married his brother. More of that later.)

The men preferred a site for the county seat slightly south of that eventually chosen, near Log Creek, but the owner refused to yield the land. After much deliberation, they finally chose the present site where the town square now stands, and Kingston was incorporated as county seat by a special act of the state legislature later. They named it for Governor King.

Migration stories are invariably fascinating. Traditions passed down by Silas and Emma's descendants appear to conflict but can perhaps be reconciled. Silas came a couple of years before the others. His descendant, George Dodge, reported in the interesting Dodge Family notebook that Silas and his wife came by ox team "via the Ohio, the Mississippi and the Missouri Rivers," and that by the time they arrived at their destination they had "barely enough money left to send a message to the folks back east." He goes on to say that later during the Gold Rush to California Silas (and John) joined in. The inference was that they struck it rich and the return trip was "by way of Cape Horn, getting off the boat at Lexington."

It may be that when the larger family group moved West they could afford a more comfortable trip. They may have brought oxen. They did pack some of their belongings into small wooden trunks of the type one could use as a small bench during the trip and in the home later on. The writer has seen some of them, passed on to descendants and made of 20-inch or wider boards sawed from trees in New York State.

That trip was made during the heyday of steamships. Writer's sister, Mrs. Billie Gene Pringle, remembers Grandma telling her about some of the problems Emma and Lydia had related to her about steamship travel. Thus it would appear that at least part of the journey was by this mode. When we see the Delta Queen nowadays it looks pretty, but to the long distance travelers of an earlier day there were minor irritations caused, for instance, by the steam and by the soot from the smokestacks. They did make pretty good time, though, especially going with the current and were more comfortable than oxcarts or wagons. It is very logical that they did disembark at Lexington, Missouri.

Something can be surmised about the personalities of this family group when one hears the second problem Grandma related to Billie. The family was very concerned about appearing well groomed and presentable when they came into towns along the way. It appears that keeping clothing washed and clean was not too great a challenge, but because they had no opportunity to do any ironing they were worried about wrinkles. They solved this by folding their clothes very carefully in just a certain way which they then placed under cushions which they sat on to smoothe our the wrinkles. They were very fastidious people and, being part of a minister's family, felt they were subject to public scrutiny.

Writer would be grateful to anyone who could fill in any more details on this subject, or any other Dodge Family lore--or even that of their neighbors who probably shared the same or similar conditions.

Old Blythe Township was eventually divided into Hamilton, Kingston and Grant Townships. Dwight and Lydia and the younger children were already living in the western Kingston area by the time it was incorporated. John lived west of them at the part of Far West which became Mirable. Silas then or a little later lived near what became Hamilton, or a little south of there. When the family first came to the area it was primitive compared with the beautiful buildings and the sophistication of the New York Finger Lakes area. The New York schools had been excellent. John credited much of his later success to the superior schooling he had received there, whereas the schools in Caldwell County were just getting started.

The first school house, "a nice brick building," was built in Blythe in 1846, the year the family came. It was located south of what later became the public square, and probably that was where the younger children attended school.

It is hard for me to imagine that, because of all the brush and woodlots that abound nowadays, but I have heard it claimed that there were almost no trees between Hamilton and Kingston in the very early days, except those along the stream beds and a gigantic old tree that became a landmark. Though fertile enough, the prairie was too dry to produce forests like those in New York.

The Dodge family tales say that in the early days the area was rather sparsely populated and people, feeling rather isolated on their farms, were always delighted to have company to break the monotony, and very hospitable. Often it took a long time to get to the home of a relative or friend or, in Dwight's case, a church connection or former member of the congregation. Because of that, the visitor was generally invited to stay the night. The first homes were often log cabins, replaced by siding when and if it could be afforded. The houses were sparsely furnished and had fewer walls than later on, because it was easier to keep warm in the winter that way and allowed more circulation in the summer. In place of walls, they often hung curtains or blankets from the ceiling, especially to provide more privacy for sleeping. When visiting, one was not supposed to look behind such a curtain.

Quoting page 263 of Caldwell County History, under "Churches of Kingston"--

"Christian Church--December 24, 1865, this church was organized with the following members: Dwight Dodge, Lemuel Dunn, J. D. Cox, J. P. McKinnie, H. B. Nelson, Walker Miller, Susannah P. Thompson, Rowanna McKinnie, Emma A. Dunn, Lydia W. Dodge and Harriet Northrup. The church building, a frame, was purchased from the Southern Methodists in 1869, at a cost of $1,200. ...The present membership is 49."

DODGE FAMILY

Of course, Reverend Dwight Dodge was the pastor of this group. Almost all of those charter members were family members or related by marriage, as the reader will see later on. Though Dwight died only four years later, the year they bought the church building, the membership did continue to grow. When this writer was a little girl, Grandma used to take us kids to Sunday School there, in a buggy pulled by a nice brown horse named Bessie. Once in a while we used Dolly, a white and gray horse just a tad larger, but usually it was Bessie.

It was never a large congregation, but it wasn't very small, either. I was too youthful to be overly concerned with details, but do remember that toward the last that I attended they had to hire a minister to drive in from another community, for the preaching part of the services. Before that we children attended Sunday School classes and learned all the Bible stories and that we should be good. The old hymns the congregation sang were beautiful. We had a white clapboard building with a steeple and stained glass windows. A lot of people wore talcum powder with a nice fragrance, and sometimes elderly members who remembered Emma's husband, my Great Grandfather Lemuel Dunn, Jr., whom they called "Doctor Dunn" even though he was an attorney and probate judge as well, would tell us how nice he was, and they spoke of Reverend Dwight Dodge as though he were a saint. They were proud to have known them, so you know how that made us feel to be descended from those men.

Some other tales about the family will be included in sections about Emma and the others. The illustration on the following page is a copy of Rev. Dwight Dodge's obituary, as printed in a local paper. I wonder who wrote it, for, frankly, I find parts of it to be confusing for several reasons:

It calls him a native of New Hampshire. It is true he lived there from toddler through teens, though he was born in Sturbridge. It says he spent the prime of early manhood in "Courtland" (sic) County NY. How can that be since he married in Sempronius, Cayuga County, before he was 20 and nearly all his children were born either there or in adjacent towns, the one exception being that Lucy was born in New Hampshire, probably because Susannah was scared or not feeling well. It says he was a minister for 40 years but we know it was longer than that because the Pearces were members of his congregation for a few years before Susannah died, in 1830.

Adding to all the confusion, Dr. Dodge's genealogy called him a Baptist minister. Did he shift sects in Missouri to fit the needs of the people there? Christians and Baptists have very similar beliefs. The Pearces, being from Rhode Island, were likely to have been Baptists. Did he have a congregation in Homer in Courtland

DODGE FAMILY

The following obituary was taken from a newspaper printed August 1869 in Caldwell County, Missouri (facsimilie, wording the same)

DIED

Dodge: At his residence in Kingston, Caldwell Co. Mo. on the 23rd day of August, 1869-- Rev. Dwight Dodge, in the 72nd year of his age.

A father in Israel has been called away.

His earthly career has ended. The trials, conflicts, sufferings of this life are over and he has entered upon that higher and better state of existence to which he had long looked forward with joyful anticipation.

The deceased was a native of New Hampshire, but he spent the prime of his early manhood in Courtland Co., New York. He emigrated to Missouri in the year 1846. He has left a numerous offspring, children and grandchildren, the principal part of which are living in the county of his decease.

Early in life he entered upon the service of God and became a member of the Christian church, and from that time, until his death, extending over a period of more than half a century he was an humble and consistent follower of the Lord Jesus Christ; and for nearly forty years, as a preacher of the Gospel, he pointed sinners to the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sins of the world. His faith was a shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day.

Long will the memory of father Dodge be cherished, not alone by the numerous relatives, but by a wide circle of friends in the state of his adoption, as well as by those who knew him in earlier life in the state from which he emigrated. He leaves a void in the family circle and in the community. But he has left the example of a Christian life; and as we think of his life and of his death, it is our greatest consolation that he is one of those of which it may be truly said: "blessed are the dead that die in the Lord."

His Christian friends will meet him again on the other side of the Jordan. He will be one of that great multitude that no man can number; that shall stand before The Throne clothed in white robes and with psalms in their hands, of whom it shall be said:

"These are they that have come up through great tribulation, and have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb."

and

"There is a land where the lost shall be gained
  Be returned to our bosoms and torn from us never
Where death has no power, and true bliss will reign
  In the hearts of the sanctified spirits forever."